



# Law Of The Devil



Chapters 201 - 250

# Law of the Devil

**Chapters 201 - 250**

**Author: Dancing**

**Translate: [Bcat00](#)**

**Epub: [Henkanepubs](#)**

# Table of Contents

[Law of the Devil](#)

[Chapter 200 "Usual Practices"](#)

[Chapter 201 "Acting"](#)

[Chapter 202 "Preferential Clause"](#)

[Chapter 203 "Marquise Of Lister's Request" \(Part 1\)](#)

[Chapter 203 "Marquise Of Lister's Request" \(Part 2\)](#)

[Chapter 204 "Secret City"](#)

[Chapter 205 "Stunning" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 205 Of "Stunning" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 206 "A Young Maiden's Heart" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 206 "A Young Maiden's Heart" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 207 "The So-Called" Traditional" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 207 "The So-Called Tradition" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 208 "Rather Jump Off A Bridge Than To Dance" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 208 "Rather Jump Off A Bridge Than To Dance" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 209 "Afraid Of Change!" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 209 "Afraid Of Change!" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 210 "Fuck!" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 210 "Fuck!" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 211 "Slap" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 211 "Slap" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 212 "Blood Skull Flag" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 212 "Blood Skull Flag" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 213 "The World!" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 213 "The World!" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 214 "Good News And Bad News"](#)

[Chapter 215 "History" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 215 "History" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 216 "Disregard!" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 216 "Disregard!" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 217 "A Pretentious Prick" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 217 "A Pretentious Prick" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 218 "Take A Guess."](#)

[Chapter 219 "Provocation"](#)

[Chapter 220 "Bottom Line" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 220 "Bottom Line" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 221 "The Length Of A Arrow's Throw!" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 221 "The Length Of A Arrow's Throw!" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 222 "Alpha's Heart" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 222 "Alpha's Heart" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 223 "Knights Of The White Feather" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 223 "Knights Of The White Feather" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 224 "First Victory" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 224 "First Victory" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 225 "Target, Anglia City"](#)

[Chapter 226 "Fight!"](#)

[Chapter 227 "Breaking Into The Camp Alone!" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 227 "Breaking Into The Camp Alone!" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 228 "Surprise Attack"](#)

[Chapter 229 "Semel's Real Body" \(Part 1\)](#)

[Chapter 229 "Semel's Real Body" \(Part 2\)](#)

[Chapter 230 "Anglia City's Secret!" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 230 "Anglia City's Secret!" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 231 "Reinforcements" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 231 "Reinforcements" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 232 "Start!!"](#)

[Chapter 233 "Kill!"](#)

[Chapter 234 "Victory And Alpha's Decision!"](#)

[Chapter 235 "Sigh Of The Frost Moon"](#)

[Chapter 236 "The Weasel Makes A Visit"](#)

[Chapter 237 "Win-Win"](#)

[Chapter 238 Part 1](#)

[Chapter 238 "Rugaard Of The Northwest" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 238 "Rugaard Of The Northwest" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 239 "Refuse A Toast Only To Be Forced A Forfeit Drink!" \(Part One\)](#)

[Chapter 239 "Refuse A Toast Only To Be Forced A Forfeit Drink!" \(Part Two\)](#)

[Chapter 240 "Piercing Assassination"](#)

[Chapter 241 "Reversal Of The Situation"](#)

[Chapter 242 "I'm Happy!"](#)

[Chapter 243 "Hunting"](#)

[Chapter 244 "The Grand Wizard that doesn't wear a white robe"](#)

[Chapter 245 "Bet!"](#)

[Chapter 246 "Curse of the snowy mountain"](#)

[Chapter 247 "Dark Magic"](#)

[Chapter 248 "It's him it's him it's him!" \(part one\)](#)

[Chapter 248 “It’s him it’s him it’s him!” \(part two\)](#)

[Chapter 249 “It’s shameful to waste”](#)

[Chapter 250 “Du Wei’s lifesaving technique”](#)

# Chapter 200 “Usual Practices”

Although we all know this already, but when this Duke refuses to meet guests and hides in his manor, it is for the best not to disturb him. After all, he is a magician and mages doesn't like to be disturbed when they are indulging themselves in magic.

What's more, even Marde – the one closest to Du Wei – vaguely feels the young master is becoming grumpier.

Indeed, Du Wei is upset!

The construction for the new city is going well and he never needed to worry about the administration side; nevertheless, his mood continues to worsen day by day because he is waiting for someone.

That Green-robed Gandalf promised to come find him after three months! Yet, half a year had already elapsed and not a shred of news was heard from him.

Seeing autumn is already over and winter is here, Du Wei is starting to think the old guy was playing him.

At this point, Du Wei thinks his strength has come to a bottleneck. Considering his current level of power and control, he can confidently say that he is at the sixth rank in magic. With a wide range of magical spells in his arsenal, Du Wei's strength is not to be taken lightly.

If he were to be re-assessed right now, Du Wei is certain he can achieve a sixth rank badge from the union without any underhanded moves.

And now, if it was purely a competition of magical strength, Gargamel is no longer a match for Du Wei.

However, Du Wei has found that this is all that he can do. After all, secretly learning the spells donated by the mages in the academy can only get him so far. He needed a real mentor, a mentor that can guide further along the path of magic. At the very least, this person needs to be an old fella that is versed in the theories behind magic.

Gargamel should have been the one to take up this post, but fate likes to mess with people because this mouse is only any expert in transformation magic. As for poor little Vivian, this girl with the qualification of an eighth level magician can't even speak properly without stuttering, so she is also out of the question.

In desperation, Du Wei focused more of his time in magic experiments. For example: he studied the mithril replacement formula gifted to him by Old Alley over and over again, but the only reward he got was a giant headache. In the end, it was Seth the big headed wand guy that ended making some progress. When Du Wei pulled out the 'flying broom' blue print, this big headed Seth was extremely interested. Using the same amount of time as Du Wei, Seth nearly succeeded in his experiment.

But after two test runs, poor Seth ended up breaking a leg.

Du Wei knows that the establishment of a new city is just the beginning. He needed to urgently strengthen his own power. Those without power in the Northwest cannot survive and others will eventually come to make trouble for him.

Du Wei's thinking is not wrong because the troublesome person has finally came.

Under normal circumstances, none would dare disturb Du Wei, especially when Du Wei's mood is terrible.

But on the noon of this day, Marde still went into Du Wei's study room and interrupted the young master's reading session – he was memorizing all of recipes gifted to him by Alley.

"young master." Marde blinked his eyes in anticipation.

Although Du Wei is already a Duke, but this old servant of his still calls him young master unlike everyone else that uses "lord".

"Young Master, there's someone here to see you."

Du Wei frowned as he looked up: "Did a problem arise in the immigration process? Did those guys raise another strange condition like last time?"



“It’s not that.”

Marde shakes his head: “The one that came is someone from the Northwestern army.”

Du Wei became stunned for a bit as he put the stuff down.

A member of the Northwestern Army?

He himself has already arrived in the Northwest for many months, but they have never actively sought him out and neither will he be making deals with these warlords.

So what is going on with today?

In the greeting hall, Du Wei met up with the member of the Northwestern Army.

The person is a middle-aged officer. From his appearances, this person should be a general.

Under the Empire’s military system, those in the position to command are already touching the senior military level. For an infantry regiment, the standard is 4,000 people while the cavalry regiment is 3,000 people.

Generally speaking, four regiments put together equal a whole division and the leader of a division is commanded by a General. Back in the coup at the capital, the commander of the second division is General Jean Claude.

Army ranks:

Lowest – Brigadier General

Second lowest – Major General

Third highest – Lieutenant General

Highest – General

The empire’s general ranking is divided into four types. For someone like Jean Claude, his ranking is only that of the first rank, brigadier general. Even so, this is already considered very high despite being at the bottom of the barrel.

Longbottom himself is also a general of a Calvary division consisting of 20,000 riders, but his status is worlds apart from Jean Claude’s. After all, the Northwest

is far away from civilized society, so it can never be compared to those in the capital where powerful figures resided. The official name for these generals like Longbottom is “Major Generals.”

Du Wei is not unfamiliar with these terms, especially when he found out the founding emperor is just like him from another world.

Further up is the head of the army that actually stands in the front line. For this group of generals, they are usually with the title of Lieutenant General. There are exceptions such as Du Wei’s father. Though Raymond have never actually commanded an entire army, but his experience in leading a expeditionary fleet makes him qualified to be called a Lieutenant General.

Going even further up is the top generals. Generally speaking, these people are not directly responsible for the commanding a army division or corp. Basically, they are the old veterans that did not wish to stay in the front lines. By hanging the title of General on their names, they will stay in the capital and become one of the commanding figures in the high command.

Such as Du Wei’s father, Earl Raymond became a General right after his time in commanding the expedition fleet as a Lieutenant General.

The highest of them all is naturally a Marshal, but this title is nothing but an empty shell.

However, the empire did not have a Marshal at the moment. This title is only reserved for those that achieve great military merits. Considering the fact that the continent is at peace right now, the likelihood of an event occurring that could warrant such an honor is unlikely.

And the war in the Northwest back then is only a local conflict. As for the battles out at sea in the Southeast, it is nothing but bullying so what merit is there to earn?

Though in history, there did appear some real Marshal’s like the ancestor of the Rowling Household.

While now, this Marshal position sought after by every army soldier is still up for grabs.

“Dear Duke.” This General of the Northwestern Army standing before Du Wei

politely introduced himself: “I am the commanding officer of the thirteenth division in the Northwestern Army, Totoro.”

First impression Du Wei had towards this self-proclaimed Totoro is not very good.

Even though he wore a military uniform with a sword equipped, but this guy's body didn't carry the temperament of a military officer. What's more, the uniform on this guy looked like it was about to rip apart at any time due to his sheer size.

It would be better to call him an obese rich man than to call him a military officer based off of the fat hanging off his face and the excessive paleness from his skin.

How can this person actually be a General?

But after Du Wei finished listening to the guy's introduction, he finally understood.

This so-called “Northwest Army's 13 Division” is not a regular army. He already had some intel on the opposition, so he knew the 13th division is merely a front for the logistic department in the Northwestern Army. Simply put, this Totoro in front of him is nothing but a logistic officer.

Du Wei immediately paid attention because he can vaguely guess what the guy's intentions are for coming.

“General Totoro, please sit.” Du Wei points towards a chair in the room.

What came next is series of roundabout words and through this, Du Wei is certain this Totoro is an old veteran at this stuff. The compliments included: Du Wei is a boy genius, the speed he built the city is beyond amazing, and his power as a magician is unparalleled.

Regarding his ass kissing, Du Wei would of course take it all in. After drinking a few cups of tea, Totoro finally got to the main point for his visit.

“You dukeship, other than bringing0 the greetings from our Army head, I am here today to ask you for some small help.”

Du Wei smiled: “General Totoro, please speak.”

The fat man ponders for a moment before smiling: “autumn has already passed, in accordance with the decree, when can our Northwestern Army come extract our military supplies?”

They are here for money.

Du Wei sneered a bit inside.

“Your dukeship, you should be aware that in accordance with the Decree, the Northwestern Army’s supplies are redeployed from the revenue of the local governments. In accordance with established practices, after each quarter’s revenue is reported, our Northwestern Army will accept our share.... Haha, you should know already that being a soldier is not easy. In order to protect the empire in the frontier, we also need to eat. I’m sure you would understand this since you are from a military family yourself.”

Du Wei quietly nodded: “Oh, then i like to know how much are you taking?”

The truth is Du Wei is very familiar with this decree by now, so his question is intentional.

“40%.” Totoro smiled as he puts up four fingers: “In accordance with long-standing practices, our Northwest army needs to extract 40% of the tax revenues.”

Du Wei picked his eyebrows: “40%? General Totoro, you are kidding me. The Interim order only states that the Northwestern army can only take 20%.”

Totoro smiled so hard that his fat was hanging: “My lord, you only came to the northwest so you didn’t know. Normally, 20% is the right amount, but when fall comes around, the Northwestern Army would take 40%, this is already a long time practice.”

After a pause, Totoro explained without waiting for Du Wei’s question: “Once fall is over is when the year comes to an end. As a reward for the soldiers effort each year, the military would give them a bonus as a way to raise their spirit. Therefore, the annual autumn budget is doubled.”

The truth is Du Wei is well aware of all this, he is simply playing dumb. After a moment in though, he showed a generous face: “

“In that case, I naturally cannot break the rules here. The boys are fighting for us at the border; so of course we can’t treat them badly. General Toroto, wait here while I have my deputies report the revenue to me.”

Bullshit, you want to give bonuses and want me to pay? Hell no!

Though Du Wei was sneering inside, he still sent for Philip.

In the meantime while they waited for Philip to arrive, Du Wei casually asked a few things about the Northwestern army.

It turns out that extracting military funds isn’t all that much money. If it was before, Totoro only needed to send someone over, but Du Wei is after all a Duke, so it was for the best he personally came. Even if this is the Northwest, a duke is still a duke, not someone he wants to offend if he can avoid it.

He thought this new lord would be an idiot like the previous two lords, but after hearing Du Wei’s quick acceptance, his nerve became relaxed.

Humph, after all, a teenager is only a kid, so what if he’s a duke? This is the Northwest, even if the emperor himself came, he would still need to give the Northwestern Army some face!

# Chapter 201 “Acting”

These days, Philip, the most promising student of Mr. Blue Ocean has earned a great deal of trust from him. In Du Wei’s view, Philip is not only young; he is also steady in his actions. More importantly, he is well aware of the situation in the Northwest and would never look down at himself for his young age.

If Philip wasn’t really so young and inexperienced, Du Wei really would have appointed him the governor of the Desa Province by now.

Even so, Du Wei didn’t care either way and handed Philip all the authority he would have gotten if he really was titled. Whether it is the new city constructing project or the financial management, Philip pretty much covers the entire picture.

Phillip is after all the student of the famed Mr. Blue Ocean. Once he received word of Du Wei’s summoning, he didn’t just dismiss the guy; instead, he questioned the person that relayed the message and found out it was someone from the Northwestern Army.

Knowing this information, Philip sneered.

Autumn just ended and the Northwestern Army is coming for money already? Fortunately, this scenario is well within Du Wei and Philip’s expectation, thus a plan was agreed upon long before the occasion. Once everything was in order, Philip finally headed off to see Du Wei.

Because Philip’s work place is in the Governor’s Manor, it didn’t take long for him to arrive at Du Wei’s study room. Opening the door, the first thing he saw after walking in is Du Wei having an idle conversation with Totoro. Not forgetting his manners, Philip quickly made a salute to Du Wei so that the Duke can make the introduction.

Regarding this newly arrived youngster, Totoro was also very polite without any intentions of making light of Philip. After all, in the months since Du Wei’s arrival, the Northwestern Army was always carefully observing their movements. This young man named Philip may only be Du Wei’s aide on the

surface, but in truth, they know this little guy was the one giving out all the orders till now. If anything, this Philip is already half a governor without actually being one.

“Phillip, the reason for General Totoro visit today is to collect the autumn funding. Hmm, this quarter’s revenue should have already been reported, right?” Du Wei smile was exceptionally kind.

“Yes your honor.” Philip immediately opened up one of the booklets he brought along and passed forward the ledger: “My lord, this is the fall revenue for the Desa Province.”

Du Wei pretended like he was actually looking over the booklet he got from Philip’s hand. Then with a look of disbelief, he said: “This.... Philip, the number must be wrong, right?”

Philip looked all serious: “My Lord, the number there is correct.”

Coughing a few times like he was embarrassed, Du Wei slowly pushed the ledger to the table in front of Totoro: “General Totoro, this is the autumn tax revenue of the Desa Province. Totaling 71,000 gold coins, 46,000 of which are from agriculture. According to the usual practices, 40% of this should be.”

Totoro’s face changed a shade: “How much?!”

“18,400 gold.” Philip repeated again with a deadpan face. Du Wei was forcing down his laugh so he was only smiling as he sighed: “Isn’t this figure a little too low? For the empire, the Northwestern Army is toiling away at the border so their merit is undeniable. Fine then, I’ll privately add in some more and make it an even number of 20,000 gold coins!”

Though Du Wei managed to pack in a generous appearance, but the nose of the one standing beside him was already crooked.

The thin air of hesitation from before

is nowhere to be seen as Totoro questioned in a low voice: “Your lordship, did I hear it wrong? You’re certain of this number?”

“Yes of course.” Philip is the first to reply, “The Governor office just finished checking the revenue we collected.”

Though Totoro's face was beet red, he still had the sense of suppressing his anger. Instead of continuing the question on Philip, this fat man turned to face Du Wei: "Duke! The Desa Province may be barren, but the population is still in the millions! To say the tax revenue is only 70,000, don't you think it's a bit ridiculous?"

Pausing for a second, his eyes showed a trace of anger: "This year's spring and summer quarter is already more than 200,000 gold coins in tax revenue. Now that we are in the autumn quarter where the harvest is the highest, it should be more than 300,000 according to previous year's calculation! For a whole province to only have 70,000 gold coins in tax revenue, don't you think this joke is going a little too far?"

"General Totoro!" Philip's suddenly got cold and serious: "Please watch your tongue! The one before you is a Duke of the empire!!"

Philip harshly said: "Presuming you know this, but we are building a new city. To build a city, the expenses are huge. Other than paying the craftsman for their work, there are also plenty of overhead costs! Also, in order to get the citizen to migrate to the new city, we took measures to exempt these individuals from taxes for a whole year; all of this was announced long before the city's completion. Desa Province's income isn't high to begin with. Now that there is all these spending's and tax cuts, it's not strange to see such low numbers."

Totoro's original intention today is to test Du Wei's attitude. After coming to the Northwest, this little duke never had any dealings with the Northwestern Army, so he really thought Du Wei would cooperate from his earlier words, yet it seems they are only toying with him.....

Thinking of this, Totoro can't help but be infuriated. He is a general of the Northwestern Army and the one in charge of the logistic department. Even that old fox Bohan needs to be polite and watchful in front of him, so how can he swallow such humiliation?

Duke? So what if he's a Duke? What is there to be afraid of when we're the Northwestern Army?

"Your Dukeship!" Totoro stood up: "I'm afraid your subordinate here isn't very clear on the interim decree. According to the Empire's decree, the



Northwestern Army has the right to intercept the agricultural tax revenue for military purposes! What's more, the military has first priority and the local government cannot use the fund until the military takes their share! And now, your aide is telling me he already spend all the revenue on the new city before we can even take our share? Is this what you mean?!"

Looking at this angry fat ass, Du Wei slowly answered: "General Totoro, please sit down, your anger won't help in remedying the situation. Let us discuss this to find a solution, what do you think?"

Totoro made a loud "humph" in reply.

Du Wei smiled as he faced Philip: "Philip, although the account calculations are correct, but we can't drag out the military funding! The income for this season is only numbers on a paper. Now then, tell me the income for this quarter before the expenses are added in."

Philip then pretended to be reluctant in his words: "If you follow the normal count, the earning should be about 250,000 Gold coins, less than the previous years. Your excellency did after all exempt a lot of people from paying their taxes for the migration project."

Only by hearing this did Totoro's anger subside a little. Though 250,000 is still a little low, but it's still way more than before! 40% of 250,000 is 100,000 gold coins.

"That's easy then." Du Wei immediately made a forthright expression: "According to the 250,000 income, 40% should be 100,000. Take this sum from the treasury."

Philip sighed, looking like he was ashamed in his whispering voice: "But my lord, the treasury doesn't have that much money."

"What!!!"

This single shout carried with it boundless anger disbelief!

The problem is with this is that the one releasing this anger is not Totoro, it was DU Wei!

Jumping off his chair, the young duke mercilessly stared at Philip without

restraint: “What did you say/!!”

His excessive action caused even the cup in front of him to fall to the ground. With an angry look, he questioned: “Sir Philip! Please explain to me at once why my Desa Province can’t even take out 100,000 gold coins from the treasury? Desa may be a barren land, but after so many years of saving, there should be more than enough to cover this sum!”

Du Wei blaming initiative actually caused Totoro to jump a little inside.

“Give me an explanation!” Du Wei’s anger looked like he was about to swallow someone: “Philip! Is this really my land? Is this really my Desa Province?! Or did you use your authority to embezzle the funds inside the coffer??? If you can’t explain this, I will immediately arrest you on charges of corruption!”

Phillips immediately showed a face of injustice as he argued back: “My Lord, I never embezzle a single copper!”

Then this Philip spoke like he was full of grievance: “Sir, you never cared about the finances the moment you stepped into the Northwest. You want to build a city, I tried to dissuade you, but you refused to listen. As such, I can only try my best to maintain everything for you, but I also have my difficulties!”

At this point, he seemed to be determined: “Do you remember when I first came in here I gave you a report?”

Du Wei seemed stunned for a moment, then impatiently replied: “I’m not interested in these things, its fine with you looking after them.”

Philip smiled bitterly: “My Lord, you are a magician, so of course you aren’t interested in this stuff. However, I have already explained everything in the report I gave you. It’s just that you didn’t look it over.”

Du Wei then acted like he just recalled something. With a frown, he asked: “The report, what happened?”

“My lord” Philip sighed: “When we took over the Desa Province, the coffer only retained 190,000 gold coins! After so many years, the revenue is only that much!”

“That’s impossible!!”

Once again, Totoro lost the chance to speak again because Du Wei jumped the gun again. With a shameful face, he stared at Philip: “A whole province and you are telling me the reserve only has that much??!”

“But this is all true my Lord. My report has all the details.” Philip face looked bitter: “You put all your energy into the great divine of magic research, so you ignored all this. Although I have repeatedly told you this, but you never noticed.”

Then, Phillips seemed cautious and hesitant in his words; “This number would of course make others question it. For a whole province, how can there be so little wealth in the reserve. But....”

“But what.” Du Wei quickly asked.

Coughing once, Philip bit his teeth: “But, prior to your arrival, the Desa Province was always under Governor Bohan.”

This sentence is already very obvious!

Even for Totoro, he had to secretly accept this argument after listening to this explanation.

It seems before Bohan surrendered the place to this Duke, he had scraped every inch of valuable from the land. This interpretation is very reasonable.

Like this, Du Wei and Philip both stared at each other, one with a face of anger and another with a face of injustice. After a long while of this standoff, Du Wei gritted his teeth as he spoke: What a good governor Bohan! Humph! No wonder his attitude was so weird towards me while I was at Mulan City. That crazy bastard left me an empty shell!”

Philip frowned with annoyance: “Your focus was always spent on your divine magic researches. I’ve told you several times already, but you never listened.”

# Chapter 202 “Preferential Clause”

“Let’s talk first” Du Wei comes down with interest.

From now on they won’t get a single copper?

“It’s what I came up with in recent days and it will certainly keep these warlords from poking around in our pockets! But..... Such an approach might thoroughly infuriate the Northwestern army. Our present strength is not enough, and if we have a falling out with them.....” Philip hesitated in his next words: “I suddenly came down with this idea when I saw how you demonstrated your great magical powers..... This idea can work around the damn provisional decree!” The young man’s eye gleamed with light as he chuckled: “However, this idea of mine is only a legal loophole.”

Legal loophole?

Du Wei’s eyes sparkled with admiration because he liked the style!

“My Lord, did you forget your other identity? You are a mage!”

Phillip’s lip curled into a sly smile.

Du Wei was slightly stunned because he suddenly recalled a decree that held no importance to him!

Roland Empire, the preferential treatment clause for mages!

Due to the enormous powers wielded by a magician and their limited numbers, these individuals would always receive the best treatment and respect no matter where they went.

To showcase this point, the Empire even set up a preferential clause in the empire’s law!

It was mentioned before, a great emperor of old privately said: Other than the emperor himself, none is above the law; the only exception is a magician!

Among the special treatments granted to a magician, the first one is that they are not legally bound by ordinary laws! Even when a mage performs a horrendous act, only the magic union can punish these people.

For example: the occasion where Du Wei was abducted by Gandalf. The military and magic union had a lot of word battles, but eventually, the issue was tossed aside and forgotten.

In addition, another special treatment is the exception of taxes!

The Empire's law expressly stated: all subjects of the Empire are to pay taxes; this is a citizen's duty! For someone like Du Wei that is familiar with the law book, he is surprised to find that even the noble class is forced to pay taxes. Regarding this strange occurrence, Du Wei felt a hint of civilized culture.

While the only exceptions are the Mages! The law code expressly points out that magicians are the empire's most valuable asset and has the privilege to not pay tax. No person shall impose tax on a magician; this includes the army and government!

Being a noble and someone that only recently became a magician, Du Wei's brain had almost forgotten this rule existed. If not for Philip's reminder just now, he may never have remembered it.

"The regretful part is your honor, you cannot enjoy this clause." Philip smiled with pity: "You may be a magician, but you are a nobleman first with the title of a Duke! The law expressly states that your Duke status takes precedence. That is to say, you are a noble lord first before a magician, meaning you still have to pay taxes. That's why even though Desa Province is your territory; you would still have to yield under that damn provisional decree."

Du Wei began to laugh: "Continue to speak your mind Philip."

"My Lord." Phillips laughs in return: "Besides you, there are also other mages around us like Miss Vivian and Solskjaer, they are both qualified mages!"

"You mean....."

Phillips immediately explained his approach in detail: "My lord, looking at it from the view of the imperial law, the Desa Province

as a whole is your private property. This point is protected under the empire's law, but because of your noble status, you cannot enjoy the benefits of a magician. In fact, if you look through history itself, there has never been a noble lord with a double identity of a magician, you are the only special case. My

approach to this is: If you trust Miss Vivian and Solskjaer, I can draw up a document declaring the transfer of some agricultural properties to the two. Of course, this transfer is a gift with no strings attached. This way around, the future revenue from these lands will no longer be taxed. When the Northwestern Army comes around to ask for money, you can just say they are owned by magicians and the revenue you received is minuscule.”

This really is an excellent solution!

Du Wei’s mind was immediately swayed by this loophole.

Towards Vivian and Solskjaer, he would of course trust them, this is especially true towards little Vivian..... Inwardly, Du Wei already considers Vivian his!

My personal inclination leans toward Miss Vivian.” Phillip’s laugh was a little odd because everyone already knew of Du Wei’s love affair with the little lady. Nevertheless, Philip still presented a point that can draw attention: “My idea is not flawless because once the property is transferred; the land then belongs to the beneficiary. If by then someone wants to go against you and send someone for assignation..... In other words, if the person holding the property dies and there are no heirs to succeed the property, then the land would naturally revert back to the empire. Miss Vivian is an eighth rank magician; I believe no one would be crazy enough to go after her head..... My lord, once you marry the lady, then the property can then be transferred back to your name in the future.”

The last sentence caused Du Wei to unintentionally leak out a small smile.

Marriage..... Hmm, the matter still needs to wait, after all, their age is still too young at the moment.

However, the little lass seems to growing up a lot lately, especially in the middle.....

Pressing down his dirty thoughts, Du Wei quickly made a coughing sound to get back on track: “This method may be an exploit on a loophole, but it’s too obvious. Those guys over at the Northwestern Army aren’t idiots. Even though they can’t nominally fault us for doing it, but this is akin to showing them our real intent.”

Philip slightly bowed: “My Lord, I am your aide, so I can only offer advice. In the end, the final decision still falls on you.”

Taking in a deep breath, Du Wei stood up and walked back and forth in the room. Only by making up his mind did he shake his head: “The idea is good but we simply don’t have the strength to have a falling out with the Northwestern Army. However, once we our foot is firmly rooted in this place, it won’t be too late to use this method.”

Du Wei then smiled bitterly: “Until we can stand up to the Northwestern Army, we must drag it out as long as possible when they come for money. If we can’t, then just pay them.” Speaking up to here, Du Wei couldn’t stop himself from swearing: “Fuck it, just consider it protection money.”

His words may sound pretty, but Du Wei understands full well how firmly rooted the Northwestern Army is.

Not going to cover it up with pretty words, but did that General Totoro really come here today to ask for money? For a vast army like the Northwestern Corp, their wealth should be vastly superior to Du Wei’s Desa Province, so why would they care about a single term’s revenue? If he had to guess their true intent, these people are here today to test Du Wei’s attitude!

If Du Wei acted submissively, then everything is good. If Du Wei’s was acting tough and refuses to cooperate, then what awaits Du Wei is the vengeance from the Northwestern Army! Don’t forget, both of the previous lords put up a strong front and suffered miserably at the hands of these warlords!

Right now he still doesn’t have the asset to put up a challenge. In the short term, the best way to go about it is to play a fool and bide for time.

Understanding this principle, Du Wei soon came up with an idea. Penning a thank you letter, he had someone rushed it to the Northwestern Army’s camp stationed at the border of the Nuling Province.

The letter was addressed to the head of the Army, General Rugaard. Using the tone of noblemen, he wrote some humble greeting words to start it off before saying a newcomer like him still needed the Northwestern Army’s helping hand if he wished to stay here. Aside from this, Du Wei also deliberately presented a request in the letter: he hoped the Northwestern Army would help him

pressure Governor Bohan in returning the stolen funds. Du Wei clearly stated he is not lacking money and that he only wanted to defend his dignity. Finally, the last part stated that if the Northwestern Army would help him, he would be willing to donate it all as a tribute to the troops stationed at the border.

Using this letter, Du Wei tried his best to portray himself as a clueless and rash lord. He doesn't expect a single letter is enough to blind the bosses in the Northwestern Army, but if it can deflect their focus away from him or a good while then his goal is achieved.

Once the letter was sent out, not a single news came back for a long time like it was completely ignored. As for that army head General Rugaard, he seems to have no interest in Du Wei. Although it is not unusual for the main head of a battle corp to distance themselves from the local officials, the fact that he never even met Du Wei has left many to speculate what was going on.

Can it be that he looked down on Du Wei and is intentionally putting on airs? Doesn't seem to be it.....

The winter season of the year 960 of the Roland Empire is finally here. The Northwest's winter is much colder than the south, but after stockpiling enough food for winter, the cold no longer seemed so terrifying.

And within several months, Longbottom used his old connections to purchase large amounts of cattle and winter wears from the local native prairie tribes. Like this, every soldier is able to stay warm in the winter this year.

Construction of the new capital city is mostly complete with many of the urban areas fully operational. Unlike before, there are always tens of thousands of citizens staying here and to achieve all this, Du Wei already expended 6 million gold coins. Even if there is a continuous flow of income from his business in the capital, Du Wei is starting to feel a bit of financial pressure.

After all, Desa Province still doesn't look like it can be self-sufficient in its current state. For now, he can only use his own private fund to do all this, but this is not a long term solution.

How to make money in this barren Province is the main problem Du Wei needs to solve. When it came to business, Du Wei would never invest in something that only takes without giving back!



Just as the New Year was about to arrive, a surprise guest came to visit.

Lister Household's warrior, Dadaneier led a massive cargo fleet with him and came to Anglia City.

To be able to reunite with this friend of his, Du Wei would of course happy. Running out to meet him, the two gave each other a warm greeting hug.

"God, Dadaneier, you finally came!" Du Wei laughed as he looked at this old friend: "I thought you forgotten about me!"

# Chapter 203 “Marquise Of Lister’s Request”

## (Part 1)

Facing Du Wei’s enthusiasm, Dardaneier is somewhat apologetic: “Du Wei..... Oh, should be Duke. Haha, how could I ever forget your kindness? I have long wanted to come see you; it’s just that her ladyship sent me out on a trip with the fleet, that’s why I was so late in coming. This time, I’ve brought along some new year’s gift from the marquise!”

Seeing the gifts sent over by the Lister family, even Du Wei had to gasp for a breath of cold air!

Compared to the last batch of gifts, this time around can be considered luxurious to the extreme!

Beyond the countless number of precious treasures, Marquise of Lister sent over something Du Wei lacked the most: Enough high quality equipment to outfit 5,000 soldiers and 1000 war horses. Lastly, there are 4,000 young slaves!

“Outside of these gifts, there is also me.” Dadaneier smiled at Du Wei: “My Lord, remember the words I said to you in the frozen forest? I vowed that for the rest of life, I will closely stay by your side! The marquise already agreed to my request. Now that I’m here, I won’t have to go back!”

Du Wei is surprised to no end because the number of staff he can rely on is simply too little. Though his skill isn’t the best, but Dadaneier’s origin is of the Lister household and a close associate of the marquise. More importantly, he had plenty of experience from his adventuring days and is truly faithful towards Du Wei!

“My Lord, I also brought along a letter from the Marquise.” Dadaneier then removed a sealed letter from his bosom and carefully handed it over: “Her ladyship asked me to convey to you. Once you finish the letter, even if you’re unable to decide, you can take your time to consider. However, no matter what your decision is, please be sure to give her a reply.”

Du Wei was stunned: “Oh, do you know what request the Marquise has for

me?”

Dardanelle shrugged his shoulders in reply: “This... I don’t know, her lady wrote everything in the letter.”

Du Wei did not bother asking for more; instead, he enthusiastically brought Dadaneier into the governor’s castle. That night, Du Wei he held a banquet and invited all of his subordinates to attend. From his point of view, Dadaneier’s loyalty is unquestionable because he did not leak Hussein’s secret even after all this time.

During the party, Du Wei publicly appointed Dadaneier as the commander in chief of the new city’s defense garrison. On top of this, he is also officially awarded him the title of being a guardian knight of the Tulip Household.

Knowing Dadaneier is a friend that once weathered true hardship alongside the Duke; everyone was very warm in their welcome.

It wasn’t until late into the night did the celebration come to a stop, but once it did, Du Wei had Marde arrange a room for Dadaneier in the governor’s manor. With everything settled, Du Wei returned to his own room and opened the Marquise letter.

Towards the current female head of the Lister family, Du Wei greatly admires her. As the richest family on the mainland, their wealth even rivals that Taklanshan weapons dealer. In addition, this lady also holds a nobility title, so she is definitely a force to be reckoned with. Though he managed to conveniently help the Lister Household in the frozen forest, but the other party already gave him loads of gifts when he returned to the Rowling Plains. Then there was also his business with the mercenary groups in the North. If not for the Lister family’s care, things wouldn’t have gone so smoothly..... Arguably, even if the Lister family owed him a favo

r, the other party should have already repaid him by now., yet now, they are sending such gifts again.....

Du Wei only briefly glanced at the gifts today and he could already estimate the worth at roughly more than a million gold coins. If the other is so kind then it’s not a simple favor. More than likely, it’s a request for him....

Sure enough, this letter is clearly personally penned by the Marquise. Delicate and modest, the style is fitting that of noble women.

The first part is just some congratulatory words of how he became a Duke and was awarded the Desa Province. Then what came next are a few New Year greetings and how Dadaneier is hence forth classified as Du Wei's subordinate.

The majority of the letter may contain only praising words, but everything was carefully phrased and planned out. Clearly, this marquise is a well-educated lady because of the lacking ass kissing feeling one would normally get from such letters, instead, he could only feel a sense of comfort after reading it.

Then at the end of the letter, the focused changed to that of how Du Wei is an acquaintance of Mr. Blue Ocean from the capital. One of the key points here is her expression of admiration towards this famous scholar and that she also has a younger brother and sister. Due to their young age, she is worried over their lack of discipline. That's why, she sent someone over to Mr. Blue Ocean's place with the hope of having him or one of his student be their teacher. Unfortunately, the other party outright rejected her request. The marquise explained that she did not dare force the famous scholar, but since Du Wei has so many of Mr. Blue Ocean's students under him, she is hoping he could put in a few words.....

Dear Du Wei, for the sake of both household's relationship, please lend a helping hand. The Lister Household will definitely return the kindness and so on.....

After Du Wei puts the letter down, he started to contemplate the idea for a while. The matter is neither big nor small, but such a request from the Marquise is really intriguing.

Scholar Blue Ocean's fame may be far and wide, but based on the Lister Household's status, it wouldn't be hard to invite some other famous scholar, so why? Even if they can't get Mr. Blue Ocean, they still want his student to do the job?

Du Wei may have 80 student of Blue Ocean, but even like this he is still lacking in man power, especially when it's been so busy recently. It can be said that every one of these scholar is carrying a wide range of duties, and now he is

supposed to send one of these guys to act as a tutor in the Lister Household? Du Wei really is somewhat reluctant to do it.

Although it's a bit difficult, but the Lister Household really have been good to him and even sent Dadaneier to his side. If he didn't return such a big favor, how can he possibly make it slide? Just as he was about to make a reply, Du Wei suddenly had a thought and called for Philip.

Philip still wasn't asleep yet because in recent days, he was always working till dawn over the migration matter.

After Du Wei sent for Philip, he simply asked if he knew about the occasion when the Lister Family asked Blue Ocean to be their teacher.

Philip thinks for a moment and said, "There is indeed such an occasion. However teacher thoroughly rejected the request that day. From rumors, the young master of the Lister family is really smart and his personally is also very good. All of us originally thought teacher would agree, but who would have thought teacher would reject it so thoroughly without any leeway left..... Of course, as his student, we did not dare ask about the details."

Philip may say it like this, but Du Wei saw through Philip and knew the guy was hiding something. This is after all a private matter so it's not his place to pry any further. Letting Philip go, Du Wei then called for Dadaneier to his room and explained the request from the marquise;

"Dadaneier, I also didn't want to make it difficult, but I can't call the shots in this matter either. From what I heard, the Marquise's younger brother is quite smart, so why did scholar Blue Ocean refuse the request? If it was just some general thing, then I can grant her ladyship's wish with a few words, but I fear there is some hidden story behind this. It may not be good for an outsider like me to speak. You know it too, most of the people supporting my place here is from Mr. Blue Ocean."

Dardanelle hesitated for a little before speaking: "My Lord, I didn't know the letter was such a request.... Hmm, I shouldn't be saying this before, but I'm no longer part of the Lister Household. Since you are my master now, I can't hide anything from you if you ask. From what I heard, her ladyship's father, the previous family head, is good friends with Mr. Blue Ocean when they were

young! But later.... It seems there was some friction between the two.....”

“Oh?” Du Wei was interested: “The Marquise’s father had such a relationship with Mr. Blue Ocean?”

Dadaneier thought for a moment: “Not many people know this, but from what I hear, the previous head of the family was very good with Mr. Blue Ocean. It wasn’t until later that they had a falling out due to their ideology. Mr. Blue Ocean spends most of his effort caring for the people while the Lister head only cares for his family business. Days gone by, Mr. Blue Ocean felt he was too profit orientated.....” Dadaneier smiled wryly at this point: “Everyone knows that the Lister Household only started to grow at the hands of the former head. Back then, there was indeed some shady business.... So.....”

# Chapter 203 “Marquise Of Lister’s Request”

## (Part 2)

Du Wei nodded because he is vaguely starting to grasp the whole story. Although he started off without much knowledge of the Lister family’s background, things have changed over time as he increased his interaction with the noble circle – this included the less glorious deeds of the previous head of the Lister household. For the development of the family, the previous head had his beautiful daughter marry a much older aristocrat, only to cling onto the other party’s prominent status. Only by doing this did the Lister Household prosper all the way till now. Also, from rumors..... The Lister Household had their hands in some prohibited things such as smuggling from the frozen forest, maritime trades, and even some illegal activities.

When he first learned of this, Du Wei actually wasn’t all that surprised. After all, whether it is this world or his previous, which wealthy family didn’t have something to hide? This isn’t all that unusual.

Besides, after the Marquise inherited the family wealth, their fame gradually reversed for the good after changing their method of doing things.

“From rumors, this is what caused the rift between Mr. Blue Ocean and the Lister head. Even in death, they will not cross each other’s path. However, the Lister head later visited Mr. Blue Ocean’s residence, but he was shut out behind closed doors.”

Du Wei knit his brows in frustration: “If you say it like this, how am I supposed to help if Mr. Blue Ocean is so firmly against it. I fear every student of Mr. Blue Ocean already knew of this and when I explained this to Philip just now, he seemed to be hiding something..... Since it’s a rule set by Mr. Blue Ocean himself, I dare not force them to break it..... Also, from the way Philip was trying to dodge the topic when I mentioned the letter, it’s obvious he is not willing to do it either.”

Aside from this, Du Wei also has another idea: from hearsay, the Marquise is

said to be a very clever person that does things extremely carefully. Since she already knew the details and still presented such a thorny problem..... Then I fear the meaning in this is not so simply.

Du Wei thought for a moment before sighing, “I’ll reply to the lady then. For this matter, I’ll do my best to be the middle man and spin it in her favor, but I can’t make the decision on this.”

After delivering his letter on horseback, Mrs. Lister’s reply was really fast. The letter expressly stated she understood his difficulties and dared not ask for too much. However, she presented another proposal to him and that is whether or not her younger siblings can stay at the Northwest with him at his house. This way, as time grows long, they might be able to learn something from observing these elites from Mr. Blue Ocean’s school. Maybe, just maybe, these apprentices might change their minds after getting to know her siblings better.

This letter of the Marquise was written very sincerely and she even mentioned how her father had a misunderstanding with Mr. Blue Ocean. After his father grew old, he mentioned this is his greatest lifelong regret. If they can solve this split between the two family, then it will greatly sooth his father’s grievance. This specific point did in fact eliminate some doubts in Du Wei. Considering the Lister Family’s wealth, what other famous scholar can’t they invite?

As it is understood that this matter is to heal the grievances between their elders, then it’s quite understandable that they are so persistent.

Send them then! It’s not like Du Wei’s governor castle can’t accommodate them. Let’s not menti

on two people; even if they send a hundred, it’s still not a problem.

On the spot, Du Wei sent back a formal reply to Mrs. Lister’s request.

Du Wei also didn’t conceal it from Phillip and his peers, after all, he only promised to be the middle man. Although he could technically force them, but he won’t based on his own principles.

After Philip learned of this, he didn’t object, instead, he only sighed like Du Wei made a mistake: “My Lord, this matter doesn’t seem so simply....”



Du Wei slightly frowned: “Your take on this?”

Phillips seems to be somewhat concerned. Noticing this, Du Wei only smiled as he poured the young scholar a cup of tea: “Philip, you know it too, my hope is that we can speak freely by my side. We’ve only just began our effort and only by uniting together will we be able to carve out a new picture in the Northwest. Regardless of the nature of the topic, you can tell me. Fear not and don’t concern yourself, I will not blame you.”

Philip also started to smile: “This matter, if carefully looked at, is your personal business and isn’t much related to us.”

“Oh?”

Philip faintly smiled as his eyes sparked a flash of light: “My Lord, in another two months, it should be your 15th birthday.”

Seeing how Du Wei still didn’t get it yet, Phillip slowly added in the last sentence: “Imperial decree, men of 15 years of age is officially considered an adult. At that time, you can get married. I heard The Marquise’s sister is only 16 years of age, highly intelligent and extremely beautiful. From rumors, it is said this girl is even more beautiful than the Marquise when she was young! Since she was 14 years ago, the number of nobilities proposing for marriage nearly broke the door of the Lister Family..... Your honor, she is sending such a prized sister to your side at this time.... As time gets longer.... Hey-hey!”

Du Wei’s jaw dropped and he couldn’t stop himself from being stunned.

Phillip continues: “My Lord, the type of marriage alliance is all too common in the noble circle. The Lister Family may be wealthy right now, but their head is after all a woman and a widow at that. Though she may be titled a Marquise, but her title is not hereditary. After she is gone, then what? Even if they are more wealthy at the time, they are still only a merchant family at that time. Without a strong backing, it’s certain people will come bulling through the door. For the family’s future, this sort of thing is normal!”

Du Wei couldn’t help narrow his eyes.

Seeing how Du Wei showed no signs of impatience, Philip decided to bring everything out: “Then there’s also your lordship. Scouring the entire empire, is

there a better match than you? At such a young age, you are already a duke and the regent holds in high esteem. When Prince Son takes the throne, it's certain you will become the leading figure within the elite circle! But more importantly, you are already coming to the marriageable age, yet you're still not engaged! Generally speaking, the children's of the nobility would set their marriage matters long before their coming of age ceremony... If they can tie themselves against a huge tree like you, then the Lister Family's future is secured for the coming decades!"

Philip words immediately woke Du Wei up..... Who would have thought he would become a perfect bachelor?!

Now that he thought about, Du Wei suddenly recalled how the nobles in the capital would always invite him to their home and intentionally bring their daughters up to him – this included minors. Back then, he never thought about it like this and would usually decline the invitation using the excuse of magic experimentation. It wasn't until he moved the magic academy did these invitations slowly decline.

Now that he thought about it, most of the nobles were probably hitting up on this idea!

Philip continues to smile: "My Lord, you will soon be going through the coming of age ceremony. The majority of the noble men's would marry not long after. Since it's such a rare chance and the Lister family is not a bad candidate, why not accept it? The Marquise has great influence in the noble circles so it will be a great boon to your career."

Du Wei suddenly sighed as he glanced at Philip: "Philip, you've only been here for half a year, yet your personality has changed quite a lot from when you were in the capital. If it was back then, you never would have thought of something like a marriage alliance."

Philip was stunned because he thought Du Wei was angry: "My Lord, I'm just being considerate for you."

"Enough, I don't blame you." Du Wei smiled: "It's just that the political rookie back then is now a veteran that can discuss such heavy deeds with me. Although I'm pleased with your progress and understands your loyalty to me....

But alas, power can really change someone.”

Not waiting for Philip to speak, Du Wei is already shaking his head: “I don’t intend to marry so early, but.... Hey-hey, even if I marry, I don’t want to associated with those marriage deals among the nobility circle. I believe you should be aware of what I want.”

Philip suddenly had a revelation and recalled how the Duke is on very good terms with Vivian. Thinking of this, Philip could not help but let out a long sigh.....

My lord, although you are a mage, but you are also a Duke. To be part of this community, there are a lot of times where one cannot call the shots.....

## Chapter 204 “Secret City”

As time goes by, two months have already gone by in a blink of an eye. Although the winter snow has already receded, the chilling wind still lingers in this barren landscape. Nonetheless, there are already evidence of spring in certain locations.

The Northwest may be a land of bitter cold, though a bit short, but the spring season can be considered the best here.

The immigration process of Loulan City has mostly been completed. At the moment, the number of occupancies in the city numbers around 100,000, this included almost of the population in Anglia City.

The New capital city is located next to the Loulan Lake. Equipped a rarely seen fertile landscape in the Northwest, plus a well maintained road set, the general area around this miracle city is starting to show some life.

As for the migration department, they would always be swamped with long lines of people from around the province. Even if these individuals did not really want to move, they would still come around just to have a look at this miracle city in the warm season!

(1 li = 500 meter)

Just 10 li outside the Loulan City, a new military barrack have already been constructed and Du Wei's first Tulip infantry division is formally completed. This 20,000 strong division is established around the 4,000 rebel soldiers as the backbone and a lot of new recruits. Later on, in order to solve the recruitment problem, Du Wei once again sent his people to Big Ear city and bribed that Biaideluo. Over the span of several months, more than 2,000 prisoners were sent over again. Though Biaideluo wasn't very good in the political circle, but in this Sin City, he holds absolute authority. With only a few strokes of his pen, he could easily say they died or illness or exhaustion along their journey. Eventually, such a whopping figure is a little too big, so Biaideluo outright reported a plague and anyone he sent to Du Wei is presumed dead from the plague.

The upper command could care less for a place like Big Ear city, much less when there's a plague running rampant. As he grew bolder, Biaideluo even had all the prisoners coming in for this spring sent over to Du Wei while they were still in transport.

Toward these prisoners, Du Wei promised they only needed to serve for three years before they are given their freedom. After the duration, he will even reward those with merit a piece of land that they can call their own! Since the Desa Province is sparsely populated anyways, it's not like the reward will effect anything.

Now, the number of soldiers in Du Wei's first Tulip division consisted of 4,000 rebel soldiers, 2,000 prisoners, and more than 10,000 recruits. If he really measured the quality of the troops, the ones that stood out the most other than the 4,000 elite regular troops are the 2,000 prisoners. During training sessions, more often than not, the capacity of these prisoners are much higher than the regular recruit!

Well, this is to be expected. When Du Wei spent his money to buy these prisoners, he only picked the youngest and strongest among them. He also did some background checks, but then again, there wasn't much to verify to begin with. To be stuck in such a place like Sin City, their background can't be all that big, or else their family would have already rescued them.

Just like Du Wei said, when these already desperate prisoners saw the ray of hope given to them, their willingness to endure hardship is much higher. In only a short period of time, quite a few of these individuals were already coming into shape. From Knight Robert's view, he believed their fighting capability is only slightly lowered than the regular soldiers in the Northern Corp.

In recent months, General Totoro of the Northwestern Army sent someone over twice for money. In the first time, Du Wei once again used the 'dragging' method to fool the other party. Then for the second time, the other side's attitude was much tougher. Du Wei thought it over and decided he still wasn't willing to have a falling out with the Northwestern Army just yet. On top of this, the annual spring drill was drawing near, so this was definitely not the time to make any mistake. In the end, he finally gave in and paid the sum. In his mind,

he considered the payment a fee to buy a safeguard.

Compared to the fully outfitted first infantry division, the cavalry division could use some work. After all, the training process of a cavalry is much more difficult. While the people of the Northwest is all weathered individuals, but Longbottom's selection criteria is exceptionally strict. So far, the number of cavalry troops in Du Wei's hand only numbered around 3,000 strong, half of which consisted of Longbottom's old unit and the remaining half of new recruits.

Even though Longbottom's level of abuse towards these new recruit could make anyone sigh with regret, but Longbottom assured Du Wei each of these cavalry knights can match up to any cavalry unit of the empire.

The truth is Longbottom originally recruited 5,000 people under him, but due to the harshness of his training, a lot of these people could not take it and left. Also, some were not meeting Longbottom's requirement and were eventually kicked out also. Then later on, Longbottom even brought with him the remaining recruits and went out on a mysterious tour. No one knows what they did, but after they returned, their numbers dwindled once again.

It wasn't until Du Wei asked him that he learned the truth. During that trip, Longbottom actually brought these people out for real life "combat"! According to Longbottom's claim, a soldier cannot be a real soldier if they never seen blood! The reason for this is because sometimes the bravest of souls during a training session would instead become a useless deadweight, and some normally weak bodied individuals could be the fiercest of fighters when placed in a battlefield.

For this reason, he had these people outfitted with light armor and a few days of provision to go out to face off against multiple groups of bandits hiding in the desert.

Sure enough, when they came back, the temperaments of these new recruits all had a significant difference. Gone is the air of inexperience and what came out of it the sense of bloodshed from their eyes!

Longbottom may be harsh when leading, but he is definitely kind to his subordinates. After returning to the city of miracles, Longbottom immediately

brought everyone to the brothel. In that single night, they managed to create so much trouble that Dadaneier had quite the headache in cleaning up the mess because he is after all the city defense chief. If not for Du Wei's instruction that as long as they didn't step out of bound too much, Dadaneier would have really tossed them all into jail cells.

Early in the morning hours, a carriage was carefully heading towards the governor castle at Loulan City. With more than 10 cavalry knights as escort, these individuals all looked vigilant as if they are ready for anything.

The passenger of this carriage is in fact Du Wei. When he received word last night, he immediately got ready and started to head for Loulan City.

In reality, Du Wei's residence had long been moved to the new capital. This immense castle imitating the Rowling family castle in the Rowling Plains will hence forth act as his home and work office. It's just that Du Wei had remained behind during this time in the already abandoned Anglia City.

After Anglia City was emptied of its residence, Du Wei not only didn't abandon it, he even had took some manpower and materials to repair the collapsed part of the wall.

Anglia City may not be eligible for a capital, but because of its remoteness and the fact that it is backed against the Kilimanjaro Mountain, Du Wei had other plans for it.

As early as a month ago, after the last of its residents moved out, Du Wei ordered the city to be sealed off before beginning a wide arrange of constructions!

Because in Du Wei's plan, this geographically isolated city would be the most ideal location for his backup production base!

Of course, the stuff produced here is not some ordinary weapon. There are no minerals in this barren landscape, so Du Wei cannot create conventional weapons. Nonetheless,..... Du Wei had a lot of things that he needed to manufacture! For example, things he's not willing to expose yet and some secret weapon!

Besides, what other place is more fitting to be a production plant than an

abandoned city?

No matter how tattered Anglia City was, it is still a city. Once the external wall is repaired and stationed with guards, no spy or undercover agent can expect to leave or get in!

And the people in the city have no need to leave because it is more than enough to be self-sufficient. With numerous living facilities like houses and well, Du Wei even set aside a large plot of land for farming! Using a closed off environment, this place will absolutely keep his secrets away from prying eyes!

For this abandoned city, Du Wei have completely handed over the management of the place to the two geniuses Solskjaer and the big headed Seth.

Afterwards, he bought about a thousand slaves from the Sin City and had them placed in this Anglia City – the group consisted of women, kids, and old gramps. Towards them, DU Wei promised that after give years of labor, he will grant them their freedom again! On top of this, they will even be given their own land!

As for these people, they suddenly went from being a slave to Du Wei's production plant worker.

What caused these workers to both fear and be surprised is that prisoner slaves usually die off from a couple of years in harsh labor. However, in this production plant, the work was far from what they had imagined!

They even had a very comfortable homes to live in (originally belonged to the moved residents, these homes were left with ample food supplies) Du Wei even gave the order that they not only get to take a break during noon; they can even go back and rest in the evening.

And the work is not too heavy, just a little odd... .. Putting up several workshops in the city, these prisoners were then started their mass production cycle under Solskjaer's guidance.....

These people would of course not know this, but the stuff they were producing was the fire element (gunpowder) created by Solskjaer.

And the work done by Seth's people was even more bizarre. In the large



stretches of land set aside for farming inside the city, Seth had his slaves graft all kinds of trees. For those with talent, he set these individuals aside and had them learn how to engrave!

In the production base, the rules aren't that strict. Dinner and break is guaranteed, but Du Wei did have one rule and that is none can leave the city!

During this period, there was only one guy that tried to secretly flee, but before he could even get to the gate, he was already snatched up by the guards. Learning of this, Du Wei ruthlessly had his soldiers break the guy's leg in front of everyone.

"I can give you hope... .. But I can also take your life at any time!" Du Wei announced this to everyone: "So within the next five years, you better keep this in mind!"

Early today, Du Wei had no choice but to leave his production base because he received news that the Lister siblings are about to arrive at Loulan City.

In view of the good relations between him and the Lister Household, Du Wei would of course have to personally go receive them as the master of the Desa Province.

In particular, he is quite curious towards the little sister of the marquise.....

# Chapter 205 “Stunning” (Part One)

When Du Wei’s carriages sped into Loulan City, the day was already getting dark. Though the visibility was slowly deteriorating, the castle guards outside dare not slack off. The moment they saw the Tulip flag flying in the air, they already knew who was coming so they quickly got into position and cleared the road for his arrival.

Regarding this newly constructed castle, Du Wei is very satisfied with it. Back in his previous life, he had the chance to travel the west and managed to witness some of the most glorious castles used in the middle ages. Yearning for the something similar, he would of course go all the way since the opportunity presented itself. Compared to the Rowling Castle, this one is even larger by a few margins and equipped with several water wells to boot! And to increase the defense capability of the place, Du Wei specifically had his people introduce groundwater to the moat dug around the castle walls. Even if war does occur in the future and the outer perimeter is compromised, they can easily hide behind the inner castle for a year or so.

By imitating the style of the Buckingham Palace in the United Kingdom, what came after the wooden bridge on top of the moat is the castle’s gate. With brightly outfitted guards standing on each side, none of them made any movement even when Du Wei’s carriage approached. The only noticeable gesture was how much livelier they looked when they saluted with their right hand besides their head.

Once inside the Castle, the first one to welcome Du Wei is naturally Marde and from this loyal servant’s mouth, he was made aware the preparations for the dinner banquet is well underway.

These past days, Loulan city has been bustling with celebration. Everywhere you looked, one would see a festive scene and even the usually stern looking patrol guards had a new set of uniforms on just for this occasion. Besides this, something unique and out of ordinary occurred. It is far too common to see the faithful praying in temples towards their worshipped gods, but in Loulan City, the faithful only prays to the Duke’s Castle. Every day, large batches of citizens

would stand outside the castle wall and openly and loudly say their prayers before going about their business.

After Du Wei came to the Northwest, time and time again he would create miracle in front of everyone. From the grain harvest to the construction of the greatest city the Northwest have ever seen, everyone witnessed these events first hand so let's not even mention the tax exception he gave these poor farmers. Aside from these points, there is also one more thing. Though he didn't actually give the order, Longbottom had more than on one occasion brought his subordinates out into the wilderness and decimated the bandit groups which plagued the Northwest for so many years. Not knowing the ins and outs of this, everyone had mistakenly credited Du Wei for Longbottom's effort. Hence the batches of people coming in front of the castle walls to pray for Du Wei's longevity and wellbeing. In their minds, as long as Du Wei is lord of the Northwest, their lives will continue to prosper.

That's why, when word got out the Duke is about to go through his 15th birthday in two days, the residence of the city were boiling with anticipation that it even overshadowed the joyous mood usually reserved for the summer celebration.

For Du Wei's birthday, the castle would of course not lose out to the general populous. Every day, the staffs were breaking their legs running around organizing everything that none could even rest. Du Wei actually didn't want to make it too complicated because he isn't very used to such big events, but Philip quickly shot down his idea when he caught wind of D

uke's intent. His argument was: If the Duke doesn't make it a big event, then it will make him look shrewd and hurt his prestige.

"Young Master, dinner is ready. Following your orders, I asked around and heard the Lister family is from the south so I purposely made the food with a southern taste....." Just as Marde was reporting the details, several cavalry knights suddenly came up to them from behind. Jumping off their mounts, they immediately kneeled and saluted Du Wei: "My lord, the Lister household's carriage is already at our doorstep!"

Du Wei nodded: "Hmm, they're finally here."

No longer able to change his wear, Du Wei simply stood at the doorway to greet his guests.

Late in the evening, the Castle guards aligned in two rows across the bridge sounded the Horn and hung two giant flags across the castle walls; one being the golden tulip flag and the other of the Lister Household.

Du Wei originally didn't plan to play it so thick; after all, it is only 2 children that are coming to meet him. However, when he thought it over, he changed his mind. They are the Marquise's sibling and the boy is the only heir to the Lister fortune so it's certain he will be the future lord of his Household. For his own interest, it's better to show some goodwill.

It's just a pity that the Dadaneier-this former Lister subordinate<sup>0</sup> is out of town. Three days ago, he went to the Northwest corridor to meet up with some natives to purchase some horse and cattle's.

Under the honoring sound of the horn, a team of white horsed cavalry unit slowly came up to the gate. Uniformly dressed in a standard silvery armor, each of them looked like they were selected based on their handsome looks and young age. Not only was that, even the white steeds under their crotch are completely outfitted with a matching silvery armor.....

With one look, Du Wei can already tell the bunch is the Lister Household's personal cavalry unit known as the "White Feather Knights". Within the Lister Household, only the marquise is with a non-hereditary noble title, so they are technically not allowed to own a private army. But who are they kidding? For such a famed and wealthy family, there's no way they can go about without protection. Using the excuse of a mercenary group, the Lister Household created a phantom company outside the family name and bypassed the limitation placed upon them, thus creating a private fighting force they can rely upon.

Imperial Decree: apart from the hereditary nobles, none can wield a private army! However the empire does allow the wealthy to hire mercenaries.

The truth is, everyone already knew what the Lister Household was doing, but why would they go make trouble for such a wealthy family without reason? It's just that due to imperial decree, the number of mercenaries hired cannot

exceed 500 people, so the roster of this white feather knight unit always had the odd number of 499.

Regarding this 499 number, Du Wei also know there is more to it inside. There's a saying, "for every policy, there will always be a countermeasure". The age of chivalry may have long passed, but it did have a glorious past, so the empire's attitude towards the knight profession is still quite tolerable. The biggest trick here is: In addition to the knight themselves, they are allowed to be accompanied by four squires. Though on a regular basis, they would normally be responsible for cleaning and repairing weapons, but when a actually battle begins, they can also partner up to fend off the enemy.....

And the amazing party is that.... The Squire's name is not required to be on the official roster list!

In other words, the white feather knights may only number at 499 in the official list, but if you include the squires, they are in actual fact well over 2,000!

Unlike Du Wei that has a territory to defend, this unit of 2,000 is more than enough to secure the safety of a merchant family like the Lister Household.

Looking at this a team of silver armored knights and their white steeds, Du Wei could not help but sigh in disappointment.

Though the current head of the Lister house is a woman, but the fact that even the guards are fancily outfitted to bring out their most beautiful side is too wasteful. Piling up unnecessary gears just for appearance sake, Du Wei can already imagine how powerless they would be in actual combat.

Although he was shaking his head inside, but Du Wei's appearance said otherwise. Masked with a welcoming smile, no one would ever guess how disappointed he really was.

Well, at least this team of white knights still had their dismounting posture right. Coming down in unison, they quickly lined up on either side of the bridge. Then from behind, several horse drawn carriages slowly came up to the gateway.

The carriages may seem average from the surface, but that was not true. With Du Wei's eagle eye, he can already speculate the price to produce it far

exceeded the one gifted to him by Prince Son. Matched with numerous perks hidden under the surface, the carriages were neither overly arrogant nor lacking, truly fitting that of someone from the upper class.

When the carriage came to a stop before the castle's gate, the ground had long been covered with red carpets to welcome their arrival. As if he was already used to such scenes, the leader of these white knights casually walked up to his master's carriage and opened the door.

Subsequently, a slender and dainty foot stepped off the carriage and the delicate figure began to draw closer with each walking step.

God as my witness, even the way this woman bent her waist to get off the carriage was beautiful! It was as if each of her movement she made was naturally like this, elegant and refined.....

When she first looked up at him, even Du Wei's heart began to mercilessly pound against his chest he saw the girl's face!

What a face.... What a beauty!!!

# Chapter 205 Of “Stunning” (Part Two)

Considering the number of beauties Du Wei had encountered in this world, it should be quite a lot already!

Vivian – a sweet innocent beauty that would cause those around her to not only want to bully her but also protect her at the same time.

Rolynn – a female knight with a seductively hot body. Due to her devilish body and experience, Rolynn is able to fully take advantage of her natural assets to maximize her charm.

Joanna – the kind of icy beauty with a cool and aloof expression. Even though you know she is dangerous, one can't help but be attracted to her just like the snowflakes in the winter months.

Among everyone, the one that stood out the most in terms of facial feature is without a doubt Queen Medusa, or better known as Nicole in her human form. In Du Wei's opinion, this snake beauty is already at the pinnacle of humanity. Just from her face alone, there is not a spec of fault he can pick out from it! In fact, she so beautiful that it's frightening!

If Du Wei really had to compare everyone to Nicole, all of the other girls are still slightly inferior to Medusa by half a mark.

But today... Today! Du Wei has finally met up with another woman that wouldn't lose out to Queen Medusa in any way!

This girl in front of him should be the Marquise's little sister.

No matter what he did, Du Wei simply can't find the precise words to describe the girl in front of him. Yet, just when he thought to give up, Du Wei suddenly remembered a poem from his previous life that was sometimes used by the ancients to describe a peerless beauty:

With a spirit as memorizing as the moon, her face is as alluring as a flower.

With a body like ice, her bones are cut from jade and her skin is as white as snow!

This girl before him is without a doubt a true reincarnation of this saying! On top of this, the air around her seems to radiate with charm like an elegant swan in a lake. Even the way she smiles seems to brighten up the atmosphere around her!

Just that..... From what is known, the Marquise's sister should only be 16 years of age. Yet the girl in front of him is so attractive and beautiful.... Not only is her face blossoming with a sense of maturity, even her figure is exploding with a seductive charm due to her tight fitted dress, so where in the world is the fresh bud of a 16 year old?

From her looks, this girl should be at least 18-19 years old, right?

Could it be that she is the maid of the Marquise's sister? But from her elegant temperament, he can tell she's not because a maid wouldn't have such character.

However, Du Wei quickly changed his mind because thinking it over; he realized the majority of the beauties in this world are known to ripen quickly.

Du Wei's little moment of awkwardness was imprinted in everyone's eyes, but unlike everyone else, the white feather knights seemed oblivious to this and even acted like they were accustomed to such reactions.

Realizing his manor, Du Wei loudly coughed once to knock everyone back to their senses. Then slightly bending his waist, he performed a highly formal greeting and reached out his arm: "Miss Lister, welcome."

In reply to his greeting, this stunning beauty sweetly smiled before passing one of her hands in Du Wei's hand.

Beyond his imagination, the first sensation Du Wei felt from her frail fingers were a soft creamy texture unlike anything he felt before. Maybe it was his demon working, but he subconsciously gave the hand in his possession a slight pinch. This was purely a knee jerking response and even Du Wei had no idea why he did i

t, but luckily none around them knew of this.

Instead of pulling her hand back like most girls would have done, Miss Lister's face began to flush red and her eyes even began to show signs of shyness as if



she was too embarrassed to face Du Wei.

Seeing this, Du Wei coughed his throat to chock up some courage. Then bring the girl's hand to his lip, he gave the snow white hand a kiss: "It must have been hard along the road."

"Your dukeship is too kind." Though her flush was gone, the girl's voice still sent shockwaves into Du Wei's mind! Like she was born with such a voice, her soft tone sounded like it was naturally melded with a power to hook onto one's very soul.

As he was still thinking this, his focus was quickly brought back to reality when she made a small laugh: "Your Dukeship, from what I've seen along the road, the Desa Province is very different from the rumors. At such a young age, you've already achieved quite the remarkable result." After a pause, she seemed to remember something: "Oh, my brother and sister are quite tired from the journey and even caught a little cold yesterday. I'm afraid that they won't be able to greet you at the moment, I hope you won't take it to heart."

Du Wei originally didn't pay much attention to it, but when he heard the last words, he suddenly went blank.

This girl is not Miss Lister?!

Hearing her say, "My little sister and brother", could she be?

Du Wei was suddenly staring wide eyes at the "Miss Lister" in front of him: "Ah! You are....."

This stunning beauty in front covered her smiling mouth and gently said: "I was rude and forgot to introduce myself. Your Dukeship, I am Lan Lister, titled Marquise by the emperor."

(Lan is the marquise's real name and if I remember correctly, "Lan" is the Magnolia flower because China like's to use this flower during the chinese valentines day)

This surprise of Du Wei's is quite serious!

Marquise of Lister? The Empire's richest widow?! The most famous beauty within the aristocratic circle?

But..... Why didn't anyone inform him of the Marquise's presence along the way?

And..... From rumors, the Marquise's age is at least 30 this year, yet why does she look so young? According to Du Wei's view, the woman in front of him, no matter what, should not be more than 20 years of age!

Du Wei was a little embarrassed, but this only last for a moment: "I made a fool of myself; I did not expect the Marquise to be so young and beautiful. Forgive me in mistaking you for your little sister."

But this Marquise is exceptionally intelligent and considerate. Giving out a gentle laugh, she then slowly said: "Your Dukeship sure knows how to compliment someone. How can a smart person like you make such a mistake? This is clearly your way of complimenting Lan. I don't even know how many compliments I have received in my life, but your peculiar ways really left me ashamed. At my age, I can still be praised by the Duke is really....."

Speaking up to here, her face once again blushed red.

Du Wei dared not say anything else so he quickly welcomed everyone into the castle. While the younger siblings are said to be sick, he had them routed to another courtyard so they can rest and freshen up.

Knowing he started off with such a mistake, Du Wei secretly cursed the people down below as garbage. What Du Wei didn't know is that along the way, the Marquise made sure to block off any information pertaining to her visit! And along the way, she never once showed up in public so it's only natural his people wouldn't catch wind of her presence.

After coming into the lounge, Du Wei understands full well the Marquise isn't just here to escort her younger siblings. To make it easier for them to speak, he waved his wand to dismiss all of his servants.

After hand-pouring a cup of desert honey for the lady, Du Wei has already regained his composure despite sitting so close to the Marquise. It's not like he is still wet behind his ears, so forcing his youthful urges isn't that hard for him: "Madam Lister, your sudden visit really is flattering. Is there an important matter for you to be personally present?"

The Marquise gave out heart throbbing smile: “Your Dukeship, looking back from when you first met Dadaneier and saved my life, it should be almost a year already.”

Then she gently sighed: “In one year’s worth of time, things have changed a lot. In one year, you have already become a magician famed throughout the continent and is even titled a Duke by the regent. Along the way, I witnessed your exemplary skills in governing the Desa Province. Such extraordinary skills really is admirable.”

Du Wei didn’t say anything and simply took in all the praises.

“Your Dukeship ...” The Marquise suddenly smiled: “There isn’t much reason for my visit to the Northwest. Since young, my sister and brother haven’t had our parents around, so their dependence on me naturally increased after our mother’s death. Not only is our bond really good, but they have never been apart from me since young, so of course I wouldn’t feel at ease to be apart from them so easily. While there isn’t anything going on at the moment, I decided to accompany them on this trip. Besides.....” After a pause, the Marquise spoke the next words like it’s to be expected: “Your 15th birthday is only around the corner, how can I miss your coming of age ceremony?”

Du Wei braced himself: Here it comes!

Sure enough, the Marquise gently sipped the tea before speaking the next part like it was just idle chatter: “I heard your lordship has been reclusive since young and rarely makes contact with the other noble children, and then you later you only focused in the occult. But now that your lordship is famed through the world, I fear the young girls in the capital will be eyeing your lordship. May I know if your lordship has anyone in mind?”

Du Wei really didn’t think the Marquise would be so straightforward. Without trying to cover up her intent, she went straight to the point.

He hesitated a second before replying: “Madam, you jest, I’m only a teenage boy. I still don’t have any need to consider such a thing. And you know this, I’m a magician. Being a magician, my lifelong goal is to explore the meaning of magic so I don’t have much time to worry about these things. I’m just an amorous clumsy man.”

Marquise gave out an amorous laugh as she eyed Du Wei's face: "I heard your little brother Gabri is already engaged to the financial chancellor's granddaughter, but you being the big brother is still without any arrangements. Such a thing really is surprising." Having said that, she paused to let her words sink in before laughing softly, "Duke, I've heard the majority of the noble girls in the capital are imprinted with your name in their hearts. Who knows where she heard your glamor and exploits, even my prideful little sister suddenly wanted to join the magic academy on a whim! This child may be young, but I understand what she was thinking."

Du Wei was bitterly crying inside already because he can't take it anymore. No matter what this woman says, the focus always revolves around her sister. Though she is straightforward, but her skill in leading the conversation left him no room to wiggle at all.....

In that case, rather than let the little sister be the main lady, it be more appropriate to take this elder sister.

For a moment, Du Wei didn't know how to respond: "The Marquise, you can stop making fun of me. My teacher Gandalf once said pursuing the meaning in magic should be my life's goal. I also don't have much intent to think about these things. Moreover, others may not know this, but I know. I'm always wrapped up in my lab experimenting with potions and stuff. If a girl comes near me, I fear they would be frightened off in merely two days."

With that, he laughs: "If your sister Miss Lister is interested in magic, I can help since the academy is about to recruit next year's batch of student. I do have a say in the academy, so if I put in a few words, it shouldn't be hard to get her a position. My relationship with Master Alley is not bad either. If I ask him for a favor, it might even be possible to get Master Alley to take her as a disciple."

Knowing Du Wei is intentionally pulling the topic away, the Marquise made no effort to force it. She's in no rush and the key is to find the right timing. Following Du Wei's lead, she brought up some other topics and made a few jokes.

What came next is just some idle chit chat about some gossip and business dealings. As the two sat there chatting away, their conversation was only

broken when a knocking sound came from behind. Walking in, Marde gave a slight bow and informed them dinner is ready and the Lister siblings is already at the banquet hall waiting to greet the Duke.

Finally, Du Wei has his first chance to meet the Marquise's sibling during the dinner banquet.

Although Miss Lister's beauty is said to supersede even the madam in her younger years, but Du Wei already experienced one shock today. With one stunning beauty to lean upon, the impact from this young beauty seemed a little lacking. Just like they say, this young girl is just as stunning as the Marquise with eighty percent similarity, but unlike the elder sister, she lacked the seductive scent of the Marquise. It's to be expected, this girl is only 16 years of age, still wet behind the ears, so her body is not yet fully grown. She may be less elegant, but this just so happens to highlight the pure innocent feature of her youth like a fresh strawberry.

Moreover, the Marquise wasn't lying. When the girl first met up with Du Wei, she immediately shied away like she was embarrassed. Though she kept her face down, Du Wei can easily see that beside the red blushing cheeks, there is also joy in her eyes. After making the initial contact with him, she only made a small greeting with her delicate voice before turning away. But unlike before, she would constantly peek at him whenever she thought he wasn't looking.

As for that Lister family's master, he wasn't so friendly. Aged 15, this young man is the same age as Du Wei. Probably because he inherited the genes from his family lineage, this teen is extremely handsome. Like his sisters, he has delicate skins with a straight nose and the only part that discerned him from a girl is the thick eye brow that gave him a manlier feel. If by the odd chance he plucked some of that off and put on a woman's gown, he might really turn into a kingdom ruining beauty that wouldn't lose out to even his sisters due to his diamond blue eyes!

It's just that the way this young man looked at Du Wei wasn't very enthusiastic. In fact, he can feel a hint of hostility.

Even when he greeted him, his voice was bland, neither haughty nor humble, there was even a hint of arrogance in his tone.

Over dinner, there was little to say, but the Marquise seems intent on always bringing the subject back up that made Du Wei feeling awkward at times. However, after seeing Du Wei's constant change of topic, the Marquise could only relent and drop it. As for the young Miss Lister, her peachy red face was nearly drooping below the table at this point. Matched with her stunning watery eyes and youthful charm, she still looked dazzling despite the weird posture she was in due to shame.

But this Master Lister on the other hand is a different story. Whenever the Marquise and Du Wei stepped on the subject, this young boy that didn't even puberty would deliberately knock his knives and forks around like they were musical instruments.

Du Wei didn't lose sight of this. Laughing inside, he was thinking: Is he afraid I will steal his sister?

Sure enough, after Du Wei sent the guests back to their resting quarters, this Master Lister suddenly made a request to Du Wei that he wanted to tour the castle.

Being the master, Du Wei was not in the position to reject. After getting the consent of the Marquise, Du Wei can only take this unfriendly guy around.

It's just that after Du Wei and her brother left, the Marquise slightly frowned with a glimmer of concern in her eyes. Then turning around, she chuckled as she looked at the shy little sister of hers: "Angel, what you think of him?"

(Angel is the younger sister's name)

The girl's eye showed a trace of confusion followed by a blush. In a whispering voice: "Very.... Very good."

Du Wei and the boy went around the castle until they finally arrived at a race course. Seeing no one was around, this master of the Lister Household suddenly spoke in a cold voice: "Du Wei, you better not have any idea's toward my sister!"

"Oh?" Du Wei was stunned. Then smiling, he looked at the boy in front of him like he was thinking something.

Seeing how the other party was smiling so weird, this teenager instantly took

a step back with a trace of panic on his face. Biting his lips, he stuttered: “I’m warning you, don’t get any funny ideas about Angel! She won’t marry a noble like you!!”

Du Wei nodded before suddenly reaching out his arm and putting on the kid’s shoulder. His action made the kid jump in surprise but Du Wei had already closed the distance and was right in front of him: “Don’t worry; I have no such intent right now. By the way.... Your sister is really kind you because everything she does it for you. If you want her to be happy, then we might as well cooperate. But, my temper isn’t all that good. From now on, you will be following me around in the Northwest, so you better be kinder to me. Otherwise..... I don’t care if you are the Marquise’s brother, if you don’t listen to me, I’ll take off your pants and give you a few whips, you understand?”

With that, Du Wei lets out a ha-ha loud laugh. Turning around, he left the boy and walked away.

“What a headache..... Inviting a god is easy but sending one away is hard. Didn’t this kid want to become a student of Mr. Blue Ocean’s school? Better leave him in a town or city where one of Mr. Blue Ocean’s students is located. This way, I won’t have to deal with him. But Miss Angel.... I can’t throw such a little girl to some random place and not care.....” Du Wei was thinking this as he walked.

# Chapter 206 “A Young Maiden’s Heart” (Part One)

It only took two days after the arrival of the Lister household for Du Wei to lose his patient. Inwardly, he really wanted to go back to Anglia City because news has it that Solskjaer had once again conjured up something new and fascinating. Not only that, but from the reports he’s been getting, Seth and his group of helpers are coming close to a breakthrough in bringing Old Alley’s flying broom to fruition.

He can already imagine it. Once the flying broom becomes a reality, a new unit of flying soldiers would soon become a fighting force he can rely on.

Just knowing all this is causing our little Duke here itching with anticipation. If he could, Du Wei would immediately fly back to Anglia City and personally take part in these grand and wonderful experiments.

Unfortunately, if he takes his status into account and the fact that the Lister Household has helped him time and times again, it would be totally improper for him to leave them alone like this.

Fortunately, the Marquise expressed she is only staying until his coming of age ceremony and that is only a few days away. Once that is over, there shouldn’t be any more reason for her to stay, right?

Never once did he ever felt so eager for his birthday to arrive.

It can’t be helped because the previous two days really has been torturous for him.

Who knows what the Marquise said, but the very next morning, this little girl called Angel immediately sought an audience with him and requested someone escort her around while she had a look through the City of Miracles.....

Send someone? Du Wei was already sighing when he heard the request. Other than Philip, just about every subordinate he has is a rough shot that knew nothing of manners and etiquette, of course, Philip would be too busy to go.



What does this mean then? Since he's the only idler around, it's quite obvious: If you won't accompany me, who will?!

Objectively speaking, this Angel really was pleasing to the eyes and the best part of all was that her eyes held an undisguised admiration towards him..... For a beauty like Angel, it's certain nine out of ten men would be swept off their feet.

Although Du Wei did not actually fall heads over heels for her, but to say he found her bothersome is too unfaithful to his conscience. Pity thing is that wherever this Angel went, the sour faced little boy would always tag along.

Towards this male heir of the Lister Household, Du Wei cannot be too rude to him (at least not before the Marquise leaves, but afterwards..... Humph-humph!)

First stop in their tour is the castle. Making a few rounds around the castle grounds, Angel took an immediate liking to the greenhouse conservatory in the back. Following the knowledge from his previous life, Du Wei planted some common magical plants normally used in medicines and alchemy, of course, there are some dangerous things in there too but he made sure normal people wouldn't encounter them unless they intended to.

Maybe it's because girls are naturally into fluttery and flowery stuff. With only one glance, she was already in love with the place. Towards the carefree and cheerful attitude of Angel, Du Wei found her endearing, especially when she goes around excitedly asking the gardeners about this and that. In his view, she is like a butterfly, free and beautiful.

Despite being a young mistress of a giant noble household likes the Lister Family; Angel showcased a rare virtue that held no feeling of superiority over others. Even for the gardeners and servants in the greenhouse, they took close liking to this charming young girl within no time.

Du Wei can tell, this young lady is not putting on an appearance just for him. Too many times have Du Wei witnessed those noble children back in the capital claiming to have a modest nature, but he can tell, their so called modesty is not something natural.

These types of people may be very kind to you on the outside, but their type of 'kindness' is only that of a master to a servant.

As for this Angel, she is totally different that you could hardly tell she was of high birth. Surprising even Du Wei, Angel would even personally go play with the flowers and dirt, thus, dirtying even her clothing and face.

For a little girl like this, coupled with a beautiful face, who wouldn't like her?

When Du Wei asked without alternative motive of why she liked magical plants, this little Angel actually blushed and whispered this:

"Because you are an excellent Magic Pharmacist....." Her voice was so small that it was like a mosquito's buzz.

Hearing this, a complex feeling was fixed in his heart. Unfortunately, Du Wei's moment was somewhat ruined when the snotty little boy nearby made a loud "humph" as if he was ready to swing a sword at him.

This kid..... He wouldn't have a sister's love complex, right? If not, why would he be so negative towards me?

Back on the first day, this kid was already stepping on his shoes and worst of all; Du Wei's warning from last time had the opposite effect. Raising the kid's rebellious nature, this is what the Lister boy was thinking: You want to scare me? Fine! I will go against you no matter what just to snub you!

Luckily Du Wei is one of the few well learned individuals on the continent. No matter what kind of question this innocent and harmless girl asked, he was able to answer it with ease. The only annoying part was no matter what he said, the brat would always contradict him or start nitpicking him on certain areas.

Like this, the two kept going back and forth over whatever topic Angel brought fourth. Anyhow, Du Wei did verify one thing from their little bout; the knowledge of this Lister boy is indeed profound.

At the beginning Du Wei was too lazy to bother, but nearing the end it him that was asking the questions after having his interest piqued. From the farming method of Orchids to the history of the continent, their conversation eventually led them to the discussion of the current state of affairs in the empire!

In the end, Du Wei realized this boy may be annoyingly hateful, but he is certainly not an airhead!

A kid is after all kid, how can someone so young compare with the Du Wei's cunningness built up from two lifetimes? Eventually, Du Wei outwitted the kid: "humph! What do you know! My sister's knowledge far exceeds mine by 10 times and everything I know is from her!"

Du Wei was shocked: The Marquise sure is extraordinary.....

The kid's only 15 years old and he's already at this degree of education. What's the point of being in Mr. Blue Ocean's school? If Du Wei had to be rude, this kid far exceeds the majority of those scholars!

Since he's made aware of the kid now, Du Wei held nothing back and completely started to provoke the poor boy. As his questions intensified, the Lister boy's answer started to show signs of weakening. Though the Lister Household did everything they could to cultivate the boy's growth, it cannot be compared to Du Wei's wealth of knowledge. Flushed red on the cheeks, the boy could only come up with an answer after a long period of thought in the final bout.

Oddly enough, besides the kid's knowledge, Du Wei also discovered another weakness in the boy: he's a neat freak!

During the afternoon, Du Wei took the two to see his own race track. Horse riding is a hobby that cannot be missed in a noble's lifestyle.

Since Du Wei came to the Northwest, he has been blessed by the heavens and managed to collect a couple of fine steeds through Longbottom's effort. Among his collection, one of the horses is a white stallion with only its hooves being a yellow shade. From what he knew, if he brought such a horse into the heart of the empire, he can sell it several dozen times more than the couple of thousand hold coins he used to procure it!

When the kid first saw the horse, the Lister boy froze there on the spot, unable to budge an inch. Du Wei originally wanted to see a show so he had him go for a ride, but beyond what he expected, the kid actually did it! Oddly though, before he got on, the boy had one of the servants give the saddle a full scrub as he put on a white glove before he got on.

The result is just like Du Wei expected. Untamed and wild, this white stallion easily knocked the poor boy down to the ground. Fortunately there were guards standing by to protect him so he didn't get hurt and only dirtied himself.

Despite falling so hard, the kid didn't cry out in pain; instead, he jumped up like he's seen a ghost. Pulling out a handkerchief, he hastily wiped down all the dust like it was some kind deadly poison. Finally, not even bothering to say goodbye, he turned and ran back to the castle for a bath!

"Brother has to bath at least three times a day, once in the morning, noon, and night. Then there are the clothes. Every day he would throw the old one away and wear a new one the next. Also, he would never touch anything of others." Angel's tone sounded somewhat sheepish as she explained: "He's been like this since little."

A neat freak? Du Wei was laughing inside: very good! Once your sister leaves the Northwest I'll have you sweep the toilet every day if you don't behave!!

Though he was thinking along these lines, Du Wei did a fine job hiding it and only gave a look of indifference like he didn't mind.

## Chapter 206 “A Young Maiden’s Heart” (Part Two)

Originally today they started off with the boy causing trouble between the two, but now that he’s gone, the little Miss suddenly went mute as if overwhelmed by their situation.

Gently biting her lips, Angel suddenly whispered her words: “Your Dukeship, before I came here, I heard you showcased a miracle in the Northwest and this city is the result of that. When news spread of your great deed, the majority of my people didn’t believe it but I do. With your skills, it must be true..... Right?” With that, she looked directly at Du Wei with anticipation.

Sighing, Du Wei avoided her gaze: “It’s true that the city was built in three months, but that’s not a miracle. You’re aware that I’m a magician and mages will always have some skills the common people lack.”

“I don’t believe it.” Angel shakes her head with a smile: “I also know several mages, but when I asked them they said they absolutely cannot do it.”

Then after a pause, her face suddenly blushed red as she lowered her head, “Duke, with talent like yours and a distinguished title, I think you must..... Must.....” Not sure where she got such courage from, but she looked up at him with eagerness and said: “Must have a lot of beautiful girls.....”

“You are wrong.” Du Wei immediately shook his head and then pondered the question for a moment, “My experience is no different from the average noble lord. Before the age of 13, I have always been hiding at home and have rarely gone out. I fear I don’t have a single friend around my age in the noble circle. Even back when I later moved to the Rowling Plains, I barely went out that year.....”

Angel suddenly blinked with a hint of playfulness on her face: “Oh, you must be pulling my legs!”

Then she laughs: “Who doesn’t know. You may not like the limelight, but you went adventuring alone inside the frozen forest..... Aigh, I just can’t believe

such a young person like you would have such admirable courage! Going to dangerous places to seek out thrilling adventures..... Hmm, I think such a life would be quite fun, right?”

Adventurous life?

Du Wei was left wordless because it's not like he can explain the truth of how he was one day kidnapped by Gandalf and tossed into the Frozen Forest.

But when it comes to the life of an adventurer, he suddenly remembered a man, the Snow Wolf mercenary leader Bienlich. Among the people he knew, this person is without a doubt the closest to that of an adventurer!

As the fond memories slowly flowed out from his mind, Du Wei unintentionally leaked out a hint of reminiscent in his eyes. In a gentle voice, he slowly said: “As a true adventurer, it's a true shame to die in one's bed! As a true adventurer, one should choose to die in his most exciting journey!”

This sentence is exactly what Beinlich said when he explained his life's wish. Looking back at that moment, Du Wei can practically see the brave man standing before him giving out orders to move forward into the mysterious unknown using his foul loud language.....

Unaware of his surroundings because of how lost in thought he was, Angel was in fact completely mesmerized by his appearance right now.

In this little maiden's view, Du Wei's charming smile and deep eyes is something beyond what those noble children in the capital can show..... Filled with endless heart wrenching stories, everything about him is beyond what she could have imagined!

For example: the son of the Baron she knew would always boast about his great deed of hunting a fox. Then there is the young son of a count. That guy is always showing off his experience of how he injured himself from a duel, yet, these are nothing but childish stories.

Even adding up all those people, they cannot match up to the rich and varied experiences of the Duke before her.....

“Is it possible to tell me your stories in the Frozen Forest?” Before anyone

even realized, Angel was already sitting up close to Du Wei. Freely lying on the grass, her slender legs naturally curled and even her body was faintly leaning against him.

Du Wei wasn't aware of this either: "There isn't that much point in talking about those things."

"But I really want to listen." Angel's voice sounded like she was begging him: "Uncle Dadaneier once said you are the bravest and most talented young person he ever met. In the frozen forest you not only saved his life, but you also saved my sister's life with the golden eye python!"

Du Wei is now alerted to the love and admiration unique to a young girl. Sitting up straight, he quickly put some distance between the two: "There really is nothing to say. You know I'm a magician. To an ordinary person, these things may be somewhat difficult, but every magician can do it."

The more Du Wei refused, the more Angel found him fascinating. Not only is he mysterious, she also noticed a rare trait in him, humility! Compared to the children of the noble circle, this created a strong contrast in her mind.

"Well then, why not talk about how you saved Uncle Dadaneier, alright? Just once....." The maiden's eyes became hazy with water. Du Wei feared that if he refused again, this girl might really burst into tears on the spot.

Du Wei sighed with helplessness as he said: "Fine then..... It happened a few days before I entered the frozen forest. That night, I heard the barking of the sleigh dogs like they were frightened of something. Coincidentally, I was also awake and couldn't really fall asleep, so I went around to take a look. Suddenly, that's when I heard the screams coming from the woods....."

Although this story was heard countless times already, but because it was coming from Du Wei's mouth, Angel was immediately immersed in the details. Especially when the word "screams" came up, she actually trembled slightly and pushed herself against Du Wei's body.

Then when Du Wei got to the point of Dadaneier and his group being hunted down by the corpse eating monster, Angel closed her eyes and cried out in freight as if the beast would really jump out from the story.....

“I think you are lying!”

Just when Du Wei got to the point where the corpse eating monster was too afraid to approach his camp, a loud shrilled voice came from behind.

Looking back, the person in question is in fact the evil kid that ran away before. Still wet on the head with drips of water falling off his hair, it's quite clear he ran here right after taking a bath.

“Oh? How do I lie?” Du Wei isn't angry and was even amused.

“Once it smells blood, the Corpse Eating Monster will go on a rampage, yet, even when it stood before you guys, it still hesitated to charge!!” The guy questioned ruthlessly because he thought he found a weak point in Du Wei's story.

Du Wei was smirking now: “It's because we had something it was afraid of. At the time, I already scattered the stuff around my camp and most monsters wouldn't dare approach if they smell it.”

“And it is?”

“Droppings.” Du Wei smiled malicious as he looked at the kid: “Dragon's dropping.”

Sure enough, this guy with OCD immediately turned paled. Turning around like he was completely sick to the core, he dare not ask any more details.

(OCD=Obsessive compulsive disorder. From now on I'll be using OCD to describe this kid because its simply easier)

“Muse!!” Angel is bit angry. Although she is patient and mild manner, but after witnessing how her little brother kept interrupting the Duke's dialogue, she finally became annoyed: “Did you forget your basic manners? If you continue to be like this, then you are to go back to your room!”

This guy is obviously afraid of Angel. Not daring to say anything, he bit his lips and looked downward.

Contrary to how the girl felt, Du Wei actually thought this boy was gift from heaven. If not for his constant interruption, how else can he keep dodging Angel's lovey dovey eyes?



“No, no it’s fine, your brother is very cute.... We’ve already sat here for too long. If you do not feel tire yet.....” At this point, Du Wei stopped for a moment because he really hoped they would say “tired”. However, it just wasn’t meant to be because Angel looked like she was completely full of energy.

Du Wei could only sigh: “Alright, I can take you to have a look around the city. Not only is this city the biggest one on the Empire’s border, the bazaar here also have many people and things coming in from all sorts of places.”

Muse smirked as he whispered, “Humph, what exotic things is there that our Lister Family doesn’t have?”

But before he could even finish, Angel already gave him a dirty look, thus causing him to obediently close his mouth.

However, before the group could even make it out of the castle, Vivian was already rushing over excitedly with a face full of joy. This little lass is certainly a genius in magic, but when it came to other things, that’s hard to say.....

God knows what could have caused her to be so happy, but because of how hard she was running, she easily tripped over her robe and fell right in front of Du Wei.

“AHHH” Vivian screams out.

Hurriedly moving forward, Du Wei manages to catch her right before she made contact with the ground. Luckily she was so close to Du Wei, if not, who knows how much tears she be leaking out again.

Flustered by the sudden shock, she only managed to regain her composure after seeing the person was in fact Du Wei: “I-I.....”

“I what!” Du Wei gave a scolding smile: “How could you be in such a hurry? Did you forget your tumbling the other day? Or is it because you are hungry and in a rush to steal some food?”

“N-n!! NO.....” Once Vivian gets flustered, her stuttering becomes even worse. Shyly staring at Du Wei, she looked like she didn’t know how to defend against his words. In Du Wei’s head, he loves it whenever the girl acts like this.

“Alright.” Du Wei laughs as he helped her stand up. Out of habit, his hand was

still softly holding onto hers as he softly said: I'm just teasing you..... What exactly caused you to be in such a hurry/”

With that, he gently reached out a hand and gently pinched Vivian's cute little nose.

Shocked, Vivian quickly turned away because just a few days ago Du Wei tricked her into thinking a person's nose would go flat if someone pinches it a lot. Due to his little stunt, the first thing this innocent girl does in the morning now is to look in the mirror trying to make sure her nose is straight!

Dodging away from Du Wei's evil hand, Vivian then patted her chest before smiling sweetly at him: “guess!”

From behind, Muse's gently coughs to get their attention. Turning around, Du Wei then realized the Lister siblings were still nearby. Pulling Vivian to his side, he then smiled: “I didn't introduce her last night.... This is my.....” When he spoke up to this point, he paused to ponder over what to say: “This is Mage Vivian, eighth level Mage and also a student of Gandalf.”

Du Wei then briefly introduces the Lister siblings.

Angel was shocked the moment she first laid eyes on Vivian because it's not uncommon for beautiful girls to pay special attention to other females similar to their own level beauty. If one had to describe the two, Angel is a freshly blooming flower while Vivian is a translucent crystal with an innocent aura even Angel lacked.

Also, seeing how Du Wei was tightly holding the girl's hand and standing so close to him, Angel's eyes immediately showed a hint of melancholy.

Even when Vivian greeted her in a stuttering manner, Angel was in such a deep trance that she even forgot to answer. For a high class lady like her that's constantly learning etiquette and manners is simply unthinkable.

How can her thoughts be hidden from her little brother Muse? Seeing how close Du Wei and Vivian was, he immediately understood everything. Coughing once to break the awkward atmosphere: Your lordship, since your friend is looking for you then you must have some business. No need to worry about us, we're tired anyways. I'll bring my sister back with me to rest.”

With that said, he pulled at Angel to bring her back into reality. As the two walked away through the stairs, Angel would constantly look back at the pure innocent Vivian. She may not have shown it, but every time she turned, her heart would sink to the bottom of the ocean which eventually caused her to nearly trip on the staircase.

“Enough.” Seeing how the Lister siblings were gone, Du Wei then breathed a sigh of relief: “What exactly happened?”

“He-they’re-they’re coming.” Vivian laughs excitedly: “Hogwart..... Students are coming!”

# Chapter 207 “The So-Called” Traditional”

## (Part One)

The Magic Academy finally went ahead with Du Wei’s “internship program” and the first group to pass the eligibility exam is all from Hogwarts! Despite knowing Du Wei’s training method is special compared to the other branches, this result was still quite the shock to the school!

Especially in the final phase of the assessment where each student have to go through twenty rounds of magic duels, each member of the Hogwarts branch came out with a mind-blowing record of a perfect score, twenty out of twenty wins!!

Out of Du Wei’s thirty two students, a total of twenty eight managed to come. As for the remaining four that as left behind, these unlucky ones lost their chance due to injuries incurred in the assessment tests. Poor guys, because of this, they locked themselves in their room and cried for a good number of days before finally coming out.

As for those that passed the examination, they packed their bags at lightning speed almost like they were unable to hold back their urges anymore!

Just like how a novice driver will have the addiction to drive a lot in the beginning, these fledglings in the magical arts will naturally have the urge to put their efforts to the test.....

Like them, Du Wei personally brought with him some servants to wait at the Loulan City’s southern main road. Though he lacked the financial resources to construct a wide flat road like the one in the capital, but in the past six months, this road had been a vital aspect in bringing fresh blood and resources to his new capital.

On this evening where the setting sun is scarlet red like the flames itself, Du Wei could finally hear the rushing horse beats coming from afar as he sat on top of his mount.

Du Wei is somewhat surprised right now because he didn’t expect his

students to pick such a method of transportation. Normally, a magician would fly if the distance was short and if it was far, they would choose to ride a coach.

Yet these guys..... Actually each rode a horse like the military army!

It's quite clear even after their time apart; these fledglings did not forget Du Wei's lesson. Like a long line of Mercedes Benz, each of these young mages held their pace without being too far apart or too close together. Also, aside from the mount they were riding, each brought along a backup horse to change along the road.

Once they were finally before him and saw it was Du Wei himself, everyone started to cheer loudly.

Despite being from the military, the majority of these people were already so tired that even the simple task of dismounting caused them to become sluggish.....

But what more can Du Wei ask of them? Don't forget they're magicians, famed for their weak bodies! Yet now they managed to pull off a feat of riding for hundreds of miles without a break!

"Teacher! We have come!!"

Twenty eight boys shouted this in unison as they formed a line in front of Du Wei.

Du Wei sighed before jumping off his mount to assess the kids before him. Inwardly, he already knew the people before him have already been fully imprinted with his mark. Even if they don't become his subordinates in the future, they will forever be doomed to respect him!

"Very good!" Du Wei suddenly yelled with all his might: "I'm very satisfied with you!"

Turning around, he points at the servants and carriages behind him: "I thought I was going to see a bunch of exhausted panting dogs before me..... But you have surprised me!" Du Wei's voice sounds very excited: "Your performance is beyond my expectation! You didn't become a deathly ale magician I

like those in the union.... What I see before me is a group of elite warriors! For that I am very satisfied!”

With that, Du Wei walked over to them and patted each of their shoulders: “As a reward for you guys..... I will announce that starting today; you will have two days off! During this period, drill and training are to be suspended.....”

The moment his voice died down is when the cheers bellowed out from everyone!

“Dear children.” Du Wei’s big voice sounded very happy: “I said it before; we will reunite in the Northwest! And now, you are standing outside this city of miracle! For your excellent performance, I will give you the greatest reward! Now then, follow me into the city! I’ve prepared the greatest food and wine the Northwest has to offer! Whoever doesn’t get drunk tonight will be a fucking bastard! Also, for those that get drunk and drop down, a soft bed will be ready for you! I guarantee this. The experience you gain here in the Northwest will make those that stayed behind look at you with envious eyes when you get back!”

Among the crowd, some of the more daring students immediately cried out a laugh: “We have no doubt of that principle!”

Laughing in return, Du Wei then takes in a deep breath before speaking in a loud booming voice: “I allow..... No, it’s not allowed! It’s an order! I command you, revel to your heart’s content tonight!!!”

In the biggest Ballroom of the Duke’s Castle, buckets and buckets of the finest wines are being brought out. And through the efforts of several chefs’, some of the greatest delicacies the Northwest has to offer are being served up one after the other.

Du Wei had already forgotten about his own status and donned on a black mage robe for tonight’s occasion. Stained with grease and wine all over, he kept chugging down glasses after glasses with the students without a care in the world.

The atmosphere in the Ballroom is already starting to reach the apex. Among those that drank too much, some of them even tore off their mage robes and started to sing and dance with their pants on only. For those that got too

excited, they even jumped atop of the tables to dance!!

Among this group that drew the most attention is Vivian. God knows who it was that first pulled Vivian to dance atop of the table, but this soon became a trend for everyone because it was considered a great pleasure to get the chance to dance with her. Poor little Vivian had long been a little tipsy because she accidentally drank a sip of wine in one of her mishaps. Burning red on her cheeks as if she was running a fever, this usually shy and reserved girl became more and more excited. Eventually, it was Vivian that was dancing the hardest and partying the wildest inside the ballroom.

From the expensive hand tailored carpets to the snowy white drapes, everything seems to be sprinkled with liquids ranging from: alcohol, gravy, soups, and some you can't even identify anymore.

For our little drunk here, Vivian no longer needs to move to see the walls spinning .... In her mind, she actually thought it was the effect of magic so she ran over to Du Wei's side to ask what was happening. Seeing how misty eyed Vivian was from being so drunk, Du Wei could only find it funny as he pinched her nose: "That's enough, I don't want you to become a little drunk." He said this in a scolding tone.

Blushing at his words, Vivian's only reaction was curling her arms around Du Wei's neck like a cat.

Suddenly, she opened her rosy red lips and started to vaguely mutter out some words: "Du Wei....."

"Huh?"

"You..... You like me?"

Seeing how bold this shy little girl became, Du Wei actually became startled for a second. Nonetheless, he subconsciously tightened his grip around her waist and asked: "Are you sure you know what 'like' means?"

Maybe Vivian really is fully drunk because unlike her usual timid tone, her voice actually became smooth and loud without a hint of stuttering: "Who says I don't know!"

Not waiting for Du Wei to respond, this silly little girl suddenly broke away

from Du Wei and grabbed a cup of wine from a nearby student. Who knows where she got such courage from but she climbed on top of the dining table and started to call out: “Notice! Notice! I have something to say!”

With staggering feet’s, she lifted the cup high above her head as she giggled a few times to get everyones attention: “I-I have something to announce..... I..... I.....”

Taking in a deep breath and puffing it back out, Vivian’s delicate voice actually covered the entire audience at this moment!

“Du Wei!” she points to Du Wei’s nose..... With her height atop of the table, it looked like she was arrogantly looking down at him the way she was going about it!

“Du Wei! You listen up!” Vivian suddenly stuck-up her voice: “I love you! I want to be your wife!”

The audience suddenly went mute! Whether it is the drunken students or the catering servants, everyone had a look of astonishment in their eyes as they focused on Vivian.

Watching this girl that was barely able to stand, Du Wei didn’t know whether to laugh or cry as he sat there in his chair: “Silly girl, are you sure you know what a ‘wife’ is?”

Vivian suddenly went blank at his question. With dark eyes and a silly face, she said: “I.... Don’t know.”

Regardless, Vivian still held up her glass and made a cheers motion. In this wave of hers, more than half the wine inside splashed across the air and even Du Wei became a victim of her actions.

After gulping everything down, Vivian cried out: “long live the wife!” Then she finally ended her declaration by dropping the glass to the ground and falling into Du Wei’s embrace, all the while giggling nonstop with her beat red face.

After being silent for so long, the students all raised their glasses after witnessing all this: “Bless our most distinguished dean Duke and our esteemed madam Mage Vivian!”



Immediately, more than 20 people made a toast in response: “Bless our Mr. and Mrs. Dean!”

With that, both the music and atmosphere began to rise again.....

Outside the Ballroom, Marde brought with him several servants to help him push a large dining cart. The content inside is the last dish of the night, an entire roast lamb.

As Marde came near the ballroom’s doorway, his eyes caught sight of a beautiful figure hiding behind the main door. From behind, this person seems to be shaking....

Coming closer, Marde realized the girl is in fact Miss Angel of the Lister family. Dressed in a white nightgown and barefooted, her posture looked like she wanted to push the door open but did not. And if he looked even closer, Marde can see the girl’s hand was squeezing harder and harder on the doorknob. If it wasn’t for this, she might have already fallen on the ground without this support.

“uhumph.....” Marde intentionally coughed a few times to catch the other side’s attention.

Turning around quickly, Angel quickly realized Marde was not far from where she stood. Despite her beauty, her face was unusually pale and her eyes looked like they were full of water with faint traces of tears running down her cheeks. Panicking, she could only utter these words: “Housekeeper Marde..... I.....”

After her words, she quickly raised a sleeve to wipe her face.

“This..... Miss Angel, now that you’re down here, why not go in? I’m sure the young master won’t deny such a beauty like you into their happy hour.” Marde squinted his eyes as he smiled: “The truth is the young master wanted to invite you to participate this evening, but because of his concerns towards how crazy these boys can get, he decided to perish those thoughts. Now that you are here, why not go in.....”

Not waiting for Marde to finish, Angel quickly cut in: “No..... I-I was only walking around because I couldn’t sleep..... Yes, I’m sorry, I shouldn’t have walked around so randomly.”

With that, she ran away like she was fleeing from something. Stumbling a few times, her body quickly disappeared behind one of the corridors..

Marde could only sigh before turning back to his original task. Pushing the door open, loud cheers of joy immediately burst out of the ballroom.

“Bless the Dean and his wife!!”

Hearing these words, could Marde not understand why the beautiful girl ran away?

Very soon, the hangover effects of such a frenzied party became apparent.

This silly girl, because it was her first time drinking in her life, Vivian didn't wake up even when the sun hit noon the following day.

Unlike our happy girl that's currently asleep, Du Wei is looking forward to Vivian's awakening. He wanted to know how this usually shy girl will react after recalling how bold she became the previous night. Just thinking of her reaction is enough to make Du Wei laugh.

But thinking it over carefully, this silly girl really seems to have grown up. So cute... It's enough to make the heart ache!

Like her, those crazy guys are also sound asleep. After running all day and partying all night, it's likely they are still drooling in their sleep right now.

Oh well, why not? Let them enjoy the two days then.

However, unlike everyone else, Du Wei did not have time to rest because it is his coming of age ceremony today!

Du Wei did not know about what went on outside the ballroom last night with Angel because he too like the rest of his students drank till their heads went dizzy. For too long have he not relaxed so last night he really did let go. However, once he was awake, he quickly went to his bedroom freshen up.

With him inside his private chamber is surprisingly the sleeping Vivian. Why she was in his bed has something to do with a funny scene from last night.

When Du Wei carried her into bed, our drunken girl here under the state of confusion asked this: “Wife means sleeping with you, right?”

This degree of boldness was too overwhelming that even Du Wei did not know how to respond.

# Chapter 207 “The So-Called Tradition” (Part Two)

Fortunately, Vivian’s innocence once again solved the sore subject. Before she fell into a real snooze, she actually followed up with another sentence using a hard tone: “If you sleep..... You-you’re not allowed to hog the blanket.....”

With that, this girl seemingly drained of energy finally fell asleep.

“Hmm, I guess in this little girls’ world, the meaning of wife should be nothing more than just ‘going to sleep’.”

After waking up that morning, Du Wei did not leave right away. Watching over our curled up sleeping beauty, Du Wei could only sigh at her revealing shoulders and alluring body because it was he who undressed our heroin’s outer coating.....

But just when he was having these thoughts, Vivian started to drool on the corner of mouth. Seeing how soundly she was sleeping, he could not help but feel humorous at the situation. Moving his hand, he used a finger to wipe away the drooling saliva: “Silly girl..... You know, a little red riding hood like you were nearly gobbled up by a big bad wolf like me..... Haha.”

Indeed, after witnessing the girl’s thin lingerie last night, he really had trouble not taking our heroin’s most precious treasure. For a normal man, such a reaction would be impossible, but Du Wei already made up his mind. He wants to truly and seriously love this girl, not tarnish it with a mistake during their drunken state.

Maybe the almighty God really did bless our poor little Vivian.

Before he left the room, Du Wei suddenly came down with a mischievous thought. While Vivian is sound asleep, he gave our cute lady here a peck on the lips.....

Little girl, consider this a little punishment for not really eating you up.....  
HAHA.

“From now on you are not allowed to drink or I’ll give you a spanking.” Du Wei gently smiles at the sleeping beauty before quietly leaving.

The woes of a leader is that while others can sleep soundly in bed after being drunk, he alone must get up under any circumstances to work.

It can’t be helped since it is his birthday today. He is the main leading role, so how can the event proceed without him?

Seeing the obvious fatigue on Du Wei’s face, Marde can only task the people down below in preparing a soup of refreshment. Of course, a simple soup isn’t enough to wake him up. Concocting a few drugs himself, Du Wei finally livened up after eating his own creations.

Through the efforts of dozens of servants, Du Wei finally managed to don on his luxurious suit that was prepared days ahead of time. He himself actually found the getup a bit overbearing like a peacock showcasing its feather, but.... This is tradition! Being a Duke of the Empire, his coming of age ceremony is no longer his own business!

Even for him, he can only look down and yield to everyone’s expectation.

Covered with decorations from top to bottom, it took nearly half an hour for two handy maids to put everything in order. Nevertheless, the part that drew his attention the most is the lace collar. Tightly wound around his neck, he thought he was going to suffocate if he didn’t loosen it..... And the most depressing part of it all is how eye catching his gorgeous suit was. Laced with flowery patterns and exaggerated sleeves and waistbands.... Du Wei felt like an actor in a stage opera.

In the end, Du Wei vehemently denied a servant’s request to wear a wig. Is he kidding? He didn’t want to wear something so outlandish! Then there’s the guy after him. The prosperous dumbass wants to powder his face! Not even bother to deny him, Du Wei sim

ply sent him flying out the door with a kick.

The traditions of the noble circle tended to lean towards the kind of pale and slightly sick complexion for a gentleman. As for Du Wei’s face right now, after being in the Northwest for over half a year, his skin is already wheat yellow due

to exposure in the sun.

According to the standard of nobility, his face is not qualified like this.

After putting on his boots, Du Wei tried to take a few steps only to be depressed by the constant tinkling sound he made with each step. Losing it, he simply ripped apart the cumbersome ornaments across his body. But through the insistence of the clothing experts he brought in, he retained the family insignia on his chest – a golden tulip shrouded in flames.

After removing so many pieces from his body, Du Wei was keen enough to notice the difference in the looks coming his way from the beautiful ladies in the room.

Fifteen year old Du Wei is after all from hail from a good family lineage. Though his body cannot be considered strong, but his height is already taller than his peers. Matched with a good face due to his Rowling genes, a handsome face is already starting to show after being polished by the Northwest.....

He may hate his current getup, but he had to admit, the famous clothing expert he brought in really did have skills. Tightening parts where it counts, the overall outfit adequately brings out his body outline to the point where he looked somewhat princely!

The Du Wei right now can truly be called a handsome noble boy!

“Young master, are you ready?”

Marde comes in after knocking. With a glimpse of Du Wei, his old eyes began to water with praise: “Young master.... You’ve finally grown up.”

Du Wei smiled at the remark. Turning around he hugged this faithful old servant that has been looking after him since small: “That’s enough with the tears. Marde, I have a request for you.”

“What?” Marde became startled.

“In a bit, I want you to accompany into the hall.” Du Wei softly says this.

From startled to stunned, Marde’s eyes quickly turned red as he shook his head again and again: “Young master, this won’t do. I.....”

“My parents aren’t around. Marde, you are my only love one here.” Du Wei

took hold of the retreating old servant: “Really Marde, the number of times you held me far exceeds my own father.”

According to the tradition of the Roland continent, every nobleman organizing their coming of age ceremony needs to be accompanied by an elder (usually the father). This is a symbol of gratitude and respect for one’s elders.

The ballroom today, just about every subordinate under him is gathered, this includes: Mr. Blue Ocean’s student across the province, the two disciple of Old Alley, and even some delegates representing a few people he knew in the capital.

Shockingly enough, even General Totoro of the Northwestern Army came to congratulate. There’s also a delegate for governor Bohan in the Nuling Province, but his gifts was much stingier with only a handwritten letter.

In addition, the three siblings of the Lister family would naturally participate as guests. Not knowing the Marquise herself was present, the people across the province that came to congratulate Du Wei was surprised and was eagerly trying to get a look at the famed number one widow of the empire.

When stern music began playing, the first one to step through the main ballroom’s door was not Du Wei but Marde. With a face full of proud excitement, he walked in front to help lead Du Wei into the room.

Under the gaze of all the guests, the two came to the forefront of the crowd.

According to the tradition, there should be another clergyman to conduct prayers to god. However, Du Wei is not a man of god. It doesn’t matter anyways. The empire’s states that its fine as long as you don’t believe in another god beside the Goddess of Light.

Standing alone atop of the main stage, Du Wei looked down at the audience. Some are his subordinates, some are scheming enemies, and the remaining are his allies.....

Du Wei gave a loud cough before beginning his speech.

“I think everyone must be quite curious towards what I’m about to say.” This is Du Wei’s opening words.

Some of the people below began giggle.

“What I really want to say right now is.....” Du Wei suddenly laughs: “What I really want to say is that this dress really is uncomfortable because it’s too tight.”

This time around there was even more laughter.

“I first want to thank all the guests today. Thank you all for coming here.”

Du Wei ponders for a moment before speaking: “I don’t want to say too much crap because for a magician, life is too precious to waste. So.....”

Du Wei took a deep breath in before deeply bowing: “God bless Roland!”

Every member of the audience also repeated what he said: “God bless Roland!!”

However, Du Wei added in an extra sentence in his mind: Sir here doesn’t believe in God.

Just when Du Wei thought the ceremony was over, the music band below suddenly started to play a melodious song. Following suit, the crowd seems to be expecting something because everyone began to very consciously scatter apart to give out a big open space in the middle.

Then like a routine gesture, all the male in the room took a step back to elevate the ladies to the forefront!

Seeing how Du Wei froze, Marde quietly reminded him: “Young master, let’s start.”

Confused, Du Wei can only utter one word: “What?”

Marde wanted to slap his head but could not: “ceremonial traditions!”

“Ceremonial..... Tradition?” The clueless face on Du Wei is not some act, its real!

Marde was also shocked. Never once did he think the young master before him would be so clueless on such traditional rites!

Hurrying around, he lowered his voice and whispered into Du Wei’s ear: “This part..... Young Master! You must invite a lady in the room to do the first dance



of the night. Remember though, the girl must be single! This dance is represents your growth into adulthood and your pursuit for love. Also, if the girl accepts your invitation, then she can ask you for a promise in return after the dance. For many great love stories, this dance in the coming of age ceremony is where it all begins!”

Seeing the blank look on Du Wei, Marde smiles wryly: “It can’t be... You really didn’t know?”

Du Wei can only feel his head going numb. Biting his lips, he whispered: “I really didn’t know! God damn it, who was it that set such a rule?”

“The first emperor, his majesty Aragon.” Marde quickly steps back to push him: “Come on young master, you mustn’t be rude!”

Du Wei was a bit nervous.

Among the single ladies below, there is no doubt the ones to shine the most is the strikingly beautiful Lister sisters! Especially Angel, her dress tonight obviously had a lot of work put into it. Like a flower that’s ready to bloom, every part of her female asset was emphasized with the designs. And there are those eyes. Filled with anticipation, Angel clearly wanted Du Wei to look her way.

However, Du Wei knew that he can never ask this Angel to dance!

Marde may have explained it very simply, but Du Wei already got some understanding for this. Very often, the first dance is usually a man’s excuse to invite his most beloved woman!

Hell..... Du Wei suddenly thought the move of leaving the drunken Vivian behind was his biggest blunder tonight! If he knew, he would have pulled Vivian along.

Angel’s eyes no longer tried to hide her excitement. Starting intently at Du Wei, even her shoulders were gently trembling.

Finally, Du Wei took in a deep breath to make his resolve. Slowly but surely, he walked over.

He’s coming!?

Angle can only feel her blood rushing to the head and a constant thumping in

her heart. Seeing how Du Wei is heading in her direction with a smile on his face, Angel really wanted to faint with happiness.

Although she heard Vivian's outburst behind the banquet doors, but she is still quite confident in her beauty! That's why she won't give up so easily!

When Du Wei was almost in front Angel, she was already fully prepared to answer, but just as he was two steps away, he suddenly changed direction.....

"Dear Madam, can I invite you to accompany me for the first dance of the night?" Du Wei came up to a beautiful woman and elegantly stretched out his hand.

Marquise of the Lister was stunned. Looking at the youngster in front of her and the ashen faced sister around the corner of her eyes, she quickly regained her composure. She is after all a lady that went through many ordeals in life, as such, most people never even noticed her moment of shock.

Wearing a silver dress that showcased her ivory skinned shoulders, the Marquise's beauty was elevated even further by her slender body and delicate face.

Blooming a graceful smile on her face, her hand was already in Du Wei's palm as they walked to the middle of the room.

Placing his hand on the Marquise's waist, the two started to dance under the guidance of the music.....

Seeing how Du Wei started the rite with her sister, Angel's heart felt like it was about to burst! Since small she was praised for her beauty and who knows how many boys have been intoxicated by her, but this boy! This guys! Even before she met him, Angel already felt like she was intoxicated by his legendary tales. While at home, she would again and again run to uncle Dadaneier to listen to the stories in the frozen forest.

Then After seeing him in person, Angel truly believed it. She believed she has finally found the shadow of love!

Yet now..... her pride has been torn off. Deprived of a soul in her body, she can only watch on as the boy she so daringly yearned for danced away with her sister.....

Why?! Is he really not tempted by me?!

“Your lordship ...” Following the music, the Marquise’s body spun around like a spirit sprite, soft and flexible. Then in a low voice, she moved her face up closer to his and whispered: “Someone will be very sad at your ways.”

Du Wei carried a faint smile on face: “It’s better to make the pain short than to prolong it.”

At this moment, the Marquise finally realized her sister had no chance to begin with. If Angel is to hook onto the Duke’s heart, they must think of another solution.....

# Chapter 208 “Rather Jump Off A Bridge Than To Dance” (Part One)

According to the so-called “tradition”, the first dance is solely reserved for Du Wei and his female companion. Thus, everyone in the crowd began to consciously spread apart to give them space in the middle.

Gently putting his arm around the Marquise, Du Wei and our famed beauty began dancing to the music. Although he wasn’t favored since childhood, Du Wei still received the education befitting that of an aristocrat. From dancing to the proper manners used in a banquet, he is well versed in everything.

But to his surprise, the Marquise’s skill in dancing left him in awe. At first, our beauty here was still somewhat reserved, but after following the tempo of the music, her body became light as a feather. Swinging and rotating without resistance, she as a whole looked like a blooming flower. And there was the odor her body gave off... Apparently, it’s a rare perfume that gave off an elegant and refreshing smell that could get others to become drunk with its scent.

Like this, two danced away. But very soon, Du Wei found himself unable to keep pace with his partner. Fortunately this experienced lady was very clever. Slightly changing her body’s tempo, she quietly replaced Du Wei’s leading role without any apparent indication to the crowd.

Before he knew it, the two became closer and closer that they began talking in their dance.

“Duke, why did you not invite the other single ladies? Using me as a shield is not something a gentleman should do.”

Du Wei smiles as he whispered, “Marquise, you misunderstood me. Among the many ladies here, who can compare to your beauty? To be able to invite a noble and beautiful lady like you to dance with me tonight is a memory I will never forget.”

Who knows how many times she heard such compliments already. Regardless, she didn’t care and only gave a shallow smile in return as she

moved into whisper next to his ear: "I have to say, you can be really sneaky."

Curling his lips, Du Wei decided to admit it with silence.

He really didn't have any other way. Just now when he heard the so called tradition from Marde, he quickly understood that this first dance is a way for him to express his love.

One must know, though the nobility will only officially recognize a child as an adult at the tender age of 15, but it's not unheard of for a young lord to be well experienced the matters of bodily functions.

Of course, for safety sake, there are some that would choose not to propose their love to their intended recipient if they lacked the confidence. When this happens, most men would choose to invite a sister or family friend to dance. This way, they won't lose face or offend the tradition.

In this case, Du Wei's move of inviting the Lister Marquise just so happens to coincide with the latter option. Even if he invited such a beautiful lady, no one would really think there would be any chance for sparks to ignite between the two. One is a famed widow double his age and another is a fresh youngster, the age gap is simply too far apart. Aside from this, it's well known the Marquise is a dedicated woman to her deceased husband. After the old guy died and left our beloved lady behind, there were many that sought after her for her beauty and wealth, yet every single one of these men were pushed away. It's rumored even the emperor himself was one of her pursuers and because of this reason, she had no other option but to leave the capital and go back to her old home in order to avoid arouse gossip.

For many guests present, they were only smiling in good faith at the pair. Inwardly, they only believe

d this Duke still hadn't decided on a lover yet, so as a solution, he temporarily invited the Marquise. For some, they were even thinking of going back to report that this young Duke is still single and is a definite good choice in marriage for the misses.

As for our Angel, she was quietly backing up to the furthest corner of the banquet hall. Leaning against the wall with her pale complexion, her nails were deeply gripped into her palm from how tight she was squeezing her skirt.

Seeing this, Muse that was standing by took hold of his sister hand and whispered: "Sister, let me take you back."

Biting her lips, Angel's tears that was held in by sheer will up to this point finally began to rain down.

Fortunately she was stationed at a remote spot so others didn't notice her. However, Muse can see this and he was taking it all to heart. Pulling out a handkerchief, he handed it over: "Sister, from yesturdays meeting, I believe this guy already has a lover. Also, I don't see what's so good about him? Humph....."

Angel's face sank as she sighed: "Muse..... Bring me back."

As the atmosphere in the lobby grew thicker, the pair quietly went through the crowd and used the excuse of being unwell to exit the room from the side.

When the last note died down, the Marquise's body made one final rotation before suddenly falling into Du Wei's arms. Despite how curved her back was, this amazing woman was still able to keep her balance. Puffing out her chest with those ivory skinned breasts, her dazzling posture now is like a goddess that would drag anyone into her beauty. Then without any indication, a glimmer of tease flashed across the Marquise's eyes.....

Applause began to break out at the wondering performance. Using this as a signal, Du Wei pulled our lady up and helped her stand upright. Mrs. Lister is after a woman. Under such intense physical exertion, even the beauty powders could no longer hide the blush on her face. Then there is also the thin wheezing sound coming from her, it's exceptionally attractive like that of woman's moan at night.

Suddenly, under the eyes of everyone present, our most esteemed beauty here stepped up and made a surprising move!

Reaching out her hands to grasp at Du Wei's cheeks, she then spoke in a whispering voice like that of a girl speak talking to her beloved: "Duke, you know, I've never danced again after my husband's death. In order to thank you for the invitation and..... To keep up with the norm of the event, I want to make an 'adult's request'. This is the tradition."

With that, the Marquise suddenly moved closer without waiting for Du Wei to respond. Then in a mere split second, her sweet sumptuous lips were already matched up against his!

The applause from the audience seemed to have been snipped by an invisible scissor! For some of the gawking onlookers, they didn't even have the wits to put down their hands at the scene.

It's.....

It's a "Kiss of love"!

Everyone became startled! According to tradition, the first dance is a dance of love. If the invited lady accepts the proposal, she can then respond by giving a kiss to accept each other!

If they're not a couple, then a simple peck on the cheek is enough.

But..... This nation turning widow actually publicly gave Du Wei a kiss of love!!!??

Those that were just thinking Du Wei was using the Marquise as a substitute were starting to have severe doubts in their minds because this famed lady is now wrapped around Du Wei's body and even gave him a kiss on the lips!

What should have been just a second in that kiss is now an eternity for Du Wei. And before he could even push her away, the other party was already backing up.

"I'll wait for you in the garden." The Marquise whispers this in Du Wei's ear.

In Du Wei's plan, he never expected such a kiss and it completely turned his plan upside down. For the next part of the party, our Mrs. Lister used the excuse of being unwell to excuse herself. As for Du Wei, he was pinned between everyone's admiration and surprised look that left him feeling very uncomfortable.

Everyone knows that this Marquise is the dream lover of who knows how many noblemen in the empire, yet this widowed beauty never responded to any of them. But today, this usually restrained lady actually made such an amazing scene.... Such skills from our young Duke really left everyone in awe!

Unlike how everyone felt, Du Wei was bitter at his inability to speak up. In the future, it's certain his name and the Lister family will soon be inseparable..... Perhaps this is the result our lady wanted?

For the remainder of the ball, Du Wei did not take part. Instead, this master of the house quietly slipped away and left the guests behind.

Du Wei was not very sure about his emotions. In addition to being surprised, he was vaguely irritated because he felt like he was being played by the Marquise. After slipping out of the banquet hall, his body seems to be naturally drawn to the garden indicated by the Marquise.

Through some changes made by him, there is now a transparent greenhouse filled with flower beds in the middle of the field. Due to Du Wei's dislike of overpowering smells, the garden only contains certain varieties of flowers like the family symbol: The tulip.

Swaying under the gentle breeze, a beautifully dressed figure with soft swaying hair stood there at the epicenter. This shadow is none other than our famed Marquise of the Lister house.

Walking slowly over, Du Wei lightly coughed once.

Turning around at his voice, the Marquise's showed a graceful smile.

"Marquise." Du Wei frowns, his voice a little deep: "I think I need an explanation."

"What?" the Marquise began to laugh beguilingly.

"Just now." Du Wei did not get angry, instead, he quietly walked up to her.

The Marquise seems to deliberately tilt her head like she was in thought: "Duke, I only remember you openly invited me to dance your very first dance of love in life. While accepting your invitation, I also followed as per the tradition demanded and returned my intent..... Is it not like so?"



# Chapter 208 “Rather Jump Off A Bridge Than To Dance” (Part Two)

Du Wei was left wordless at the outlandish lie, but seeing the foxy look in her eyes, a trace of anger started to develop inside of him: “Madam Marquise, I believe the truth would be better in this situation..... We both know what that was about.”

Under the moon’s radiant glow, the Marquise showed a hint of playfulness in her eyes as she fiddled with her hair: “Your dukeship.... Can it be that in your eyes I’m a woman without appeal? Or, do you think a woman of my age is not good enough for your noble status?”

Finally unable to keep a straight face, Du Wei smiled bitterly: “You jest. With your stunning looks, how can you not be appealing? Though I am young, but even for I when I first met you, I was awed by your radiating beauty. It just that I feel your move earlier is beyond my expectations.... For a goddess like entity like yourself, I really need to ask myself what part of me is good enough to make you tend to me.”

“Duke, you are underestimating yourself.” The Marquise suddenly took a step back, her eyes staring intently at Du Wei’s: “At the tender age of 14, you are already titled a Duke, an esteemed magician, and a council member of the magic academy. Looking back a hundred years in the empire’s history, there is none in the nobility that could match up to your amazing feats! Besides, you are still young, so there are plenty of great things you are yet to do in the coming future.”

Du Wei kept up his composure to utter laugh: “Madam, your exaggerated compliments are making me feel a little ashamed.”

“Oh contraire, I feel this is still far from enough.” Madam Marquise charmingly smiles as her hand gently brushes against the flowers. Slowly, she came so close that Du Wei could faintly feel her breath: “In my opinion, your achievements will be far more than what I can possibly foresee.”

Du Wei was somewhat perplexed at her comment. Carefully, he then took a step backward: “Oh?”

“Du Wei.” The Marquise suddenly changed her formal manner of greeting to a more personal form. Whispering her words beside his ear: “From a year ago where you saved my life, it only took you half a year to soar from a unflavored child of a noble family. Isn’t these points enough to explain the problem?”

After a pause, she whispers, “Also... The sort of moves I did tonight is already different from my usual ways.... But at the time, i had to do something.”

Du Wei chuckles a laugh as he stared intently at the Mrs. Lister.

“You are a very smart person so I think you should understand the meaning of why I sent my sister to the Northwest.” A hint of sadness crossed her eyes: “Though my sister appears to be patient and gentle on the surface, but she is a very persistent person at heart. Since small she has been arrogant and despised the young lords of the capital. However, as a woman born under the Lister household, it’s never up to us to choose our own fate. When I was young, I had no way to resist when my father forced me to marry, and now.....”

Her tone mellows out pieces of sadness in her voice:

“I can’t bear to let her make the same mistake as I did. Although for the family, she will still have to marry the best candidate that could bring the greatest benefit to the family. However, I never forced her. Luckily you appeared and solved one of my biggest dilemmas. Whether it is your status or identity, it can be said you are the most ideal candidate. More importantly, Angel is very fond of you. While at home, she would always mention the tales of your adventures, hence

the reason the reason I brought her to the Northwest..... I originally thought with Angel’s charm, there would be few in this world that could resist her.... But unexpectedly, you.....”

At this point, Mrs. Lister wryly shakes her head.

Unlike her, Du Wei’s face became at ease: “This kind of thing cannot be forced..... And besides, when did it become the norm for the older one to kiss me when the younger one fails?”

After a while of silence between the two, it was the Marquise whom broke the awkwardness: “Du Wei, what do you of me?”

Du Wei became stunned.

Instead of stopping, the Madam continues to speak without stopping: “I’ve been under strict education since I was small from my father, therefore, I could never relax my guard for even a second. Though I could not claim to have extraordinary talents, but in my eyes, these so called reputable scholars really can’t catch my interest. Also, I may have married early on in my life, but I never loved my husband despite the wealth and prominent status he brought me. Through my hands, I’ve expanded the family business to the point where it’s already double the size of my father’s times.....”

Du Wei didn’t really understand the meaning of her explanation, so he just shut up and listened.

“I’m already 31 years old now.” At this point, the marquise’s face flashed a hint of worry, but that was quickly cracked away with a smile that surpassed even the flowers in the garden in terms of beauty. With a touch of self-pity in her tone, this truly indescribable beauty softly said: “

“Fortunately the Gods favored my family lineage and gave my people an excellent face. And despite my age, the god of time has been merciful enough to not take my youth. Although I’m already nearing 30 years old, I’m still certain I won’t lose out to any of woman of this world.”

Du Wei instinctively gasped a breath: “Indeed, you are truly a rare beauty that could not be matched.”

What he said just now is all true. No matter the angel he looked at it from, every gesture coming out of this impeccable beauty carries with it a boundless charm that superseded every woman he’s met (excluding Nicole). It’s true Angel would not lose out to her elder sister in terms of beauty, but she is still too wet behind the ears to be a match for the Madam’s elegance and sophisticated style. What’s more, despite her age being already over 30, there isn’t a single trace of time on her face. Back when Du Wei first met this woman, he really did mistake her for a young girl only.

Truly worthy of being the dream lover of numerous nobleman’s in the empire.

Hearing Du Wei's admittance, she gently turns her head sideways with a bit of fluster on her cheeks as he looked at him: "So, Du Wei, would a man like you be tempted by me?"

"....." Du Wei subconsciously replied despite being frozen with shock: "what?"

"I said, would a man like you be tempted by me?" After she asked with those soothing soft words, the Marquise's body was already slowly swinging towards Du Wei.

Managing a smile, he said: "Madam, you jest."

"What if I'm not kidding?" The distance between the two were already close enough to the point where their nose can be called touching. Not sure why, while looking at this stunning beauty before him where his hands can already caress, a part of his mind was beginning to fall into temptation. This side of his mind was realized when his hand won't listen to him when he wanted to push her away. Now, at such close distance, he can finally get a clear look at all her features. From the eyes to the vague female scent, he was absorbing everything.....

"I can guarantee I'll be any man's perfect wife." The Marquise's soft gentle voice wafted around his ear like a reverberating echo: "I understand what should be known and what should not be known.... And if a man wants me to not know something, I'll pretend not to know....."

Du Wei can only feel his throat going dry and his heart beat accelerating. Fortunately, his mind remains intact. Taking a deep breath, he only managed to recompose himself by secretly pinching his body: "Madam, what are you trying to say to me?"

"Marriage." The word that came out of her mouth nearly made him jump from freight!

"I, Lan Lister, am proposing to your Dukeship." This is clearly not a joke because despite her laugh being so charming, her eyes were clear and her voice was very serious!

"I want to be your wife, Du Wei."

This time around, the pause in dialogue lasted for a very long time. Panting

like how a cat had its tail stepped on, he could no longer hide the shock on his face.

To tell you the truth, even if she told Du Wei she was a world traveler like him, it is unlikely he would be reacting in such an extreme manner!

“Ma-marriage?!” Du Wei felt like he was dreaming: “You’re asking me to marry you?”

“Yes.” Mrs. Lister nods: “I am asking you to marry me.”

Du Wei wanted to laugh, but looking at her serious eyes, a sense of dread appeared in his heart: “are you serious?”

“In the 30 years of my life, I’ve never been so serious.” This beauty gently nods her head.

He could no longer laugh because he is fully aware of how serious the problem at hand is now!

Reject?

Are you fucking kidding? The most sought after beauty of the nobility circle is asking him for marriage. If he dare refuse, the amount of spit flying his way from her followers would likely be enough to drown him!

Say their age is too different? But Du Wei is well aware that while she is already 30 years old, he is in fact much older if he put into account of his true age!

Say she is too old? But no matter how he looked at her, she is simply a stunning beauty that looked no more than 18 years old!

Say her origin is not good enough? Are you kidding? The amount of wealth she has is enough to bury him alive ten folds and more!

Say she already married once? If he really did say such a thing, even he will look down at himself for flaunting the chastity excuse.

Also, the other party is apparently very serious in their attitude and commitment. From any standpoint, Du Wei must use the upmost respect in his answer. That is the very bottom line!

In addition, this Marquise is not some ordinary person!

Hesitating for a moment, Du Wei's attitude also became serious. Coughing loudly to clear his voice, his eyes became steady as he faced the woman before him: "Frankly, I'm really surprised..... And, to be able to get such favor from a noble lady like yourself is a great honor!"

"So, are accepting? Or deny?"

This problem should not be answered with "Yes" or "no", so Du Wei thought for a moment before politely saying: "Madam..... I already have a woman I like."

Out of Du Wei's expectation, the Marquise gave a light smile in return: "I know, it's that beautiful magician girl, right?"

"Yes, it's her." Du Wei lets out a breather: "She is my favored girl."

"But what if I tell you I don't mind?" the Marquise blinks her eyes: "With your position and identity, I cannot expect you to be bound by only one wife. Although the imperial law only permits one formal wife, but I don't think you should be bound by this act. In fact.... If you agree to my proposal, I won't mind if you continue to pursue your love life.... You see? I said that I'm an intelligent woman. If there are some things you a man don't want me to know, I'll cleverly pretend I don't know."

After say all that, this woman cleverly backed up because she knew this is not the time to force an answer out of Du Wei. With some space between the two, Du Wei is finally able to breath.

"Please consider my request." Her tone sounds nothing like someone talking about marriage, instead, it sounded more like some business deal: "I'll be the best wife out there. Besides that..... I will also give up my last name for you and marry into your household. In the future, the Lister family will hence forth support you without reservation and become your most loyal supporter!"

With that, this beauty elegantly made a parting gesture and quietly floated away. Leaving behind her is the tulip garden and our Du Wei in his preoccupied state.....

Damn it, it was just a dance..... If I had known, I would have rather jumped a

river than to dance!

# Chapter 209 “Afraid Of Change!” (Part One)

Undeniable, Du Wei is somewhat annoyed.

And what caused him to be so angry is that he himself realized his “heart” was moved!

Speaking from heart, with the Marquise’s beauty, it’s unlikely to find a man that wouldn’t be physically and psychological tempted by this woman!

If he had to say a rude word, then it’s: she is so fucking beautiful, so beautiful that no man can refuse her! Don’t mention anything else; just thinking of that body and face favored by even the gods is enough..... A goddess yearned by every man in the empire... And now he is able to embrace such a goddess in his arms!

More importantly, not only is she a stunning beauty with immeasurable wealth, she is also usually wise. Du Wei is certain if he marries her, she will be the most loyal person to him.....

For Such a woman, who wouldn’t be excited?

Du Wei may not be a lecherous scum, but he is still a man with normal bodily functions.

Most importantly, it’s the last word spoken by the Marquise.

“In the future, the Lister family will support you without reservation and be your most loyal supporter!”

Such a promise..... Or “deal”, holds a very special meaning for Du Wei!

Du Wei knows that if he wants to gain a proper foothold in Northwest and prepare for the coming crisis in the next few years.... He will need large amounts of money!

Lots and lots of money!

He needs do large amounts of construction projects in the Northwest because the City of Miracles is only the beginning. Being the closest frontier to the prairie natives of the desert puts his Desa province at the greatest risk! With



only a single fortress city like his Loulan City is not enough! In his plan, he intends to establish a batch of cities across the province to deal with the native Calvary!

Just imagine it, back in Governor Bohan's Mansion, even a whimsical small tribe scared off their wits by Longbottom could so easily bring out tens of thousands of the finest warhorses..... So then, how much warhorses and fighters would the entire prairie desert have?

Although he managed to establish his city if miracle with the help of the spring's water and horn of life from the treants, but he spent millions of gold in the process! And what's more, the water from the spring is not unlimited! That damn spring is in the Northwest part of the frozen forest. Each run is troublesome and only someone like Hussein could possibly make the trip successfully..... Don't forget, that damn spring is not always there! According to the treants, it's not uncommon to find it in a dry state for decades!

So, Du Wei can't completely rely on the spring to help me through the Northwest's construction projects. With each drop of water consumed, it would mean one drop less for him.

Thinking up to here, Du Wei began to sigh because Hussein is still not back yet from his mission. Let's hope he can bring back some water from that blasted spring.

Nevertheless, even if Hussein does indeed bring back what he wanted, Du Wei already made up his mind to never use the water again unless he absolutely must. Who knows when it will be that the spring fills up again.....

Back when he used the water to create a big harvest and build the city of miracle is because he had ulterior motives.

Achieving all of that within three month is to showcase his "power"! This is the quickest and most direct method for him to get everyone to yield!

Looking at the outcome, he got what he wanted. Throughout the entire Northwest region, the story of his City of Miracle runs so rampant that even the other parts of the mainland is rumoring with his story.

However, such "miracles" can only occasionally happen once or twice,

anymore is beyond his capability.

Therefore, after deterring all those who doubted him thus far with the two miracles, Du Wei will hence forth need to look for alternative methods to reinforce his strength!

The answer is: Money! Lots and lots of money!

Millions of and even tens of millions of gold coins!

Whether it is the prisoners from Sin City, buying warhorses through Longbottom, or procuring slaves for his factory, everything thus far is only small stuff..... If he wants to gain a firm foothold in the Northwest and have enough capital to go up against the warlords of the Northwest, he needs to build up his private army first!

And it just so happens that the army is the most expensive thing there is!

The Northwestern Corps is nearly 200,000 strong with an additional 30,000 personnel in the back for logistic.... This is one of the more elite Corps within the empire! To be able to go up against such a powerful force, Du Wei needs to have at least 100,000 elite soldiers under his banner to put up a front!

Then there are the prairie natives with a deep seated hatred outside the Northwest Corridor! Despite their population being only at a million, just about every citizen can become a soldier with a little training!

If Du Wei wants to fend off such an awfully strong enemy, how much troops would he really need?

Even more so, how many sturdy walls will he need to construct? Then there are the weapons and fodders needed for the horses.....

Just relying on the income of his business in the capital is absolutely not enough.

Even if he did plan to thoroughly blackmail the United Kingdom, the small fortune that came his way is likely far from enough in his squandering.

Without tens of millions of gold coins, he can forget about truly building up in the Northwest!

Du Wei's biggest issue is..... If it is anywhere else, a family would have

decades or even centuries to develop.... But Du Wei doesn't. At most, he will only have around a few years... Or even short if things comes to push!

The only way to speed up the process is money.

Just now, Du Wei can faintly hear the last words spoken by our wealthy lady again.

After dinner, the majority of the guests were mostly dispersed, especially that Totoro of the Northwestern Army. His departure was very urgent, but before he left, his attitude was exceptionally polite. Confused by the odd behavior, Du Wei later learned from the other guests that the Northwestern Army Head Rugaard is also an admirer of our fine Marquise.

The Roland Empire's custom can still be considered open. Whether it is from the legal or religious standpoint, it does not prohibit a woman to remarry, and within the noble circle, this is even more common. The reason why there was such an outpour of surprise is because of our Madam's sudden intimacy with our Duke. Also, for many of the people that was originally aiming to bond their families with our young duke can only sigh at this point.

Du Wei's upsetting heart can never be overlooked by our guests. In their eyes, they only thought the young Duke is simply too eager to ditch them for the lady.

It wasn't until midnight did the party come to the end. While the majority of the guests were already gone, some remained and was escorted to the guest rooms by a servant.

Unlike how his guests were being accompanied by a servant, Du Wei dispersed his people so that he quietly go back up to his room to think the matter over:

Accept or not to accept?

Thinking about it reasonably, binding the Lister family with him is indeed a good choice. The wealth from their family is something he needs urgently and there are also the connections they have. While others may revere him as Duke, but his standing is still too shallow in other peoples opinion. Turning around, they might not actually pay him any heed!

The empire is waning day by day and even the emperor himself cannot be compared to before, so let's not mention a young Duke like him. For example: even a governor like Bohan is not taking him seriously!

However, the Marquise is different. She's been in this circle for a very long time and her methods are very skilled; otherwise, her family wouldn't be so well off right now.

But does he really have to accept such a disgusting thing like a political marriage?

Don't joke..... This is not my personality!

As Du Wei moved down the hallway, he suddenly heard a hurried stepping sound coming from the door in front of him. Taking a closer look, this is the room Vivian is asleep in. After the girl got drunk last night, he carried her into one of his bedrooms, that's why she's been asleep all day and night. If she was present in tonight's ball, then just maybe he wouldn't have encountered such a dilemma.

Apparently, Vivian is already awake and when she heard the fast footsteps coming from the door, she took a peek outside to realize it was the person she least wanted to meet. Hurrying to close the door behind her with a flustered face, a foot was already interlocked between the doors.

She may be awake, but her head was still having a major migraine from the hangover. Nonetheless, flashes of what transpired last night would occasionally flash across her mind.

Ah!!..... I did something very bold last night!

After a series of scenes pieced together in her mind, everything became clear. With her heart beating uncontrollably at the fear and regret of what she did, Vivian would even use the advance spell "Wheel of Time" to undo all that has happened last night.

Just as she was freaking out at what to do, Du Wei had already forced the door open and was standing before her with a smile on his face: "You awake?"

Bouncing between red and white on her face, Vivian can only nod and make an 'umm' sound to reply.

“How did you sleep? Looking at your face, it seems your full of spirit.” Walking in, he backhandedly closed the door behind him like he had just closed off the last escape route.

Vivian jumped in surprise and her body instinctively recoiled backward.... Right now, her body was already leaning against the wall: “You-you... What are you doing?”

“Do what?” Du Wei smiles joyously: “Who was it last night that said she wanted to be my wife? Who was it that said she wanted to sleep with me?”

Not only did Vivian’s face turn blood red, her head was so low that her chin nearly touched her chest. Then disregarding the girl’s reaction, Du Wei took two steps forward and completely picked her up. With him sitting on the bed and her on top of his leg, he then told her not to move.

“Vivian, don’t move.” Du Wei’s voice suddenly showed a trace of weariness: “Let me hold you for a while. Aigh, I really stumped right now.”

## Chapter 209 “Afraid Of Change!” (Part Two)

Just when Vivian was about to struggle, something about Du Wei's tone of speech changed her mind. Squinting her eyes, Vivian's small hands cautiously reached for Du Wei's forehead: “You-you have a fever?” She asked timidly with a spec of worry in her voice.

Without hesitating, Du Wei grabbed hold of our girl's hand and gave it a peck with his lips: “Nonsense, I don't get sick.”

Knowing she was kissed, Vivian's face blushed with embarrassment.

It would seem no matter how problematic his issues are, all would be flushed away when facing our frightened little rabbit: “I ask you, was the words from last night in your drunken state true?”

Trembling, the first reaction she had was to shake her head; however, she quickly finished it off with a small nod after hesitating for a bit.

“Really?”

This time, she finally gave a full nod.

Du Wei cried out a laugh. Holding her in his arms, Du Wei softly says: “My sweetheart, you're finally grown up.”

Vivian grievously objected: “You..... I'm bigger than you..... ”

Surprised at her words, Du Wei lets out a long laugh as he shook his head: “Vivian, you're wrong, I'm much older than you.”

Then he lay down on the bed. Sighing, he then said: “I'm a little depressed today, so please, stay here for the evening and have a chat with me, alright?”

Vivian instinctively wanted to answer with a yes because it had already become a habit. However, seeing how late it was already and the fact that it is only him and her inside the room.... She's not stupid! A man and a woman on a bed in the middle of the night, even she knows such a thing is inappropriate.

Picking up on the girl's worry, Du Wei couldn't stop himself from teasing: “Did you not say you wanted to sleep with me last night?”

“No..... No.....” Vivian started to panic. In the end, she can only choke out a few words: “Not..... Not now.....”

“Don’t worry; I won’t really eat you up now.” Pulling Vivian to him, Du Wei had the little maiden wrapped in his arms with her head against his chest. Though she wasn’t as breathtakingly beautiful as the Marquise sisters, but there’s a strange comfort to be had in her existence.

Like.....

He had no other needs in this world.

Oddly enough, a person’s mind is funny like this. The once complicated problem plaguing him earlier just became moot and it was unnecessary to overthink the issue!

Embracing Vivian, he suddenly muttered these words without even thinking it over: this is the kind of woman I want!

Sometimes, things are just that simple.

Losing himself for a moment, Du Wei suddenly found himself being knocked back to reality due to the itch on his nose – this is caused by Vivian’s hair. Sneezing, he shook head out of habit and instinctively reached out for something to wipe his nose. In seconds, his hand fell upon something small and soft while being infused with a faint aroma. Giving his face a good wipe, he opened his eyes to have a clear look at the unfamiliar object in his hand.....

Both Du Wei And Vivian became dumbfounded.

This thing is obviously a little girl’s panty, pink and cute!

Needless to say, this obviously our heroin’s undergarment. Unlike the hesitating expression on Du Wei, our panicking girl was already trying to take back what is hers like someone catching a thief. Nevertheless, as much as she tried, Du Wei already pocketed the

booty before she can get her hands on it.

Flushing a beat red face, Vivian begs: “Give-give it back.”

Du Wei shakes his head: “Finders keepers.”

“Give-give me..... I beg of you. I-I was just taking a shower and left it here.....”

Vivian's eye becomes watery.

Du Wei smiles with great enjoyment: "I'll keep it for now. When you become my wife, I'll give you ten instead."

With that, Du Wei suddenly leaped up from the bed and sneaked a kiss on Vivian's lip. With a happy smile on his face, he ran off without stopping.

By next morning, Du Wei's mood was much more relaxed.

Humph, who am I?

I am Du Wei!

Madam Lister, don't think you can catch a big fish like me so easily!

You want to play with me?

Fine, let's see if you are capable enough!

Making up his mind, Du Wei knows he cannot so openly reject them, thus, a "stalling" tactic must be used. Anyways, his age is still young; he's in no hurry to marry.

The beauty of this Marquise is indeed very exciting to the point where she is considered a disaster to those around them, but..... Isn't she just a woman? That's still not enough to make our little devil here fall heads over heel for her.

After two days of rest, the nice times for our Hogwarts students have finally come to an end. Waking up early that day, he immediately went to meet the two teachers sent along to oversee the kids – they are Old Alley's disciple. Since they are old acquaintances anyways, Du Wei did not bother hiding his intent, likewise, the two seniors made it clear they intend to follow through with Du Wei's arrangements.

"In that case, I won't be so formal." Du Wei said this with a genuine smile: "My plans are very simple. I'll first take the students with me while both of you rest at the castle. If you are interested, you can freely look around. After a few days, I will bring them back."

Du Wei's style may be a bit bossy, but these two seniors' disciples of Old Alley happily agreed to his arrangement. To them, it just means a baggage is lifted off their shoulders and they can finally do what they want.



Without stalling, Du Wei immediately sent for General Longbottom and the twenty eight students. Together, he had them all moved into the military camp outside the city.

In addition, he also had someone prepare a change of clothing for him while he himself picked up some magic items in preparation of joining the others in the camp. Thinking it over, he thought it was for the best if he met with the Marquise family before going. Only problem is that when he went to the sisters place, he was told by the servants that Miss Angel and the Marquise was unwell and could not meet him. Unfortunately, it was the hateful boy Muse that came out to greet him.

With a dark and unwilling face, Muse said: “Why did you come? Because of you, my sisters not only cried all night, they also argued! I’ve never once seen them so heated. It’s all because of you that they fought!”

Just knowing this is giving him a headache because one is love struck teenage girl and the other is a strong willed woman. Being stuck in-between the two is something he does not wish for and not something he can solve.

Whatever, it’s better not to meet. If he did, it would be more bothersome.

To make it quick, he made up an excuse of having urgent matters outside the city. Not knowing when he will return, he gave his parting message that he is sorry for not being able to personally send her Ladyship off. However, just when he was about to leave with his back turn already, the snobby brat cut him off by running in front of him: “Wait!!”

Frowning, Du Wei eyes the kid.

“You need to go out?” An idea shifts across Muse’s childish blue eyes: “Perfect, since I don’t know how to solve my sister’s argument anyways, I might as well go out since I’m here to learn from you!”

Du Wei smile became somewhat crooked: “But the things I have not only poses a certain level of risk, it also requires long periods of travel on horseback. I fear you might not be able to endure such pains.”

Muse immediately became angry: “How do you know I can’t endure it! I’m telling you now; I can already wield the sword at the tender age of eight! Then I

was able to ride at ten! Don't look down at me. In terms of riding skills, you may not be above me!"

Du Wei sighs as he gave the kid a look: "Fine then. It's not like its anything even if you tag along, but..... If you can't keep up and get kicked back here, don't blame me."

With that, he glanced at the room upstairs: "Go back and pack some clothing for yourself. On this trip, we will be out for at least ten days or more!"

"Humph! Though you look like a man, but your attitude is too naggy. What is there to pack? With the clothing on me and my trusty sword, I can go anywhere! Don't take my for those fragile rich kids!" Muse taps the sword on his waist.

Inwardly, Du Wei was thinking: you make it sound nice now, but if you fall behind on the road, I'll simply send you back with someone.

With more than 10 guards and Old Smoke by his side – they are the odd talents recruited by Longbottom – Du Wei was just about to announce their departure when this snobby Muse went ahead without his permission.

"Humph, kid." Du Wei curls his lips in dissatisfaction.

He did not know this but when he rode out of the gate, two eyes were gazing down at him from the castle's window.

Pale and full of sadness in her eyes, Angel stayed like this until Du Wei's back could no longer be seen. Biting her lips, she then turns to face the Marquise standing at her side.

Like her, the Marquise look tired as she sighed: "Angel, you still can't come to terms with it?"

"Sister!!" Angel suddenly exclaimed: "I just don't get it!"

She raised her hand to point at the Marquise: "You know I like him! So why, why did you do such a thing like proposing to him!!"

"Angel....." The Marquise eyed her sister a sense of determination: "You think I'm stealing your lover? My sister! I originally wanted you to be with him too..... Our family may appear to be thriving right now, but even you should be able to

figure out our family's biggest weakness. And he, this man, is the key to our family's future! This is precisely the reason why I sent you to the Northwest.... My sister, you must understand. Men likes the opposite sex, but that doesn't mean all men will be hypnotized by the beauties before their eyes!"

Angel was silent, but she was still hatefully staring at her sister.

"Angel....." The Marquise sighs as she slowly walked over to gently hug her beloved sister: "Although I did not have much interaction with him, but I can tell you cannot tie his heart down, you understand? You must believe me, I've never been wrong in judging people. I've always taught you that you must learn what a man wants. Some likes women, some likes power, and this guy.... Even I don't know what he wants. This guy is not right for you.... From his words alone, I can see he is not the type to be soft hearted against a woman....."

After a pause, she whispers, "You know what? I heard he was gifted a group of quadruplet, trained and skilled in the art of seduction. Despite their many merits, this guy simply tossed the girls into his store and never bothered with them.... And I even heard because the girls disobeyed him, he mercilessly whipped the sisters. He's dangerous .... So please understand me, I did this to protect you!"

"All you ever think about is the family, always for the family!" Angel suddenly shouted.

PACKKK!

A resounding slap landed on our delicate Angel's face. With a pained expression, the Marquise looked at her foolish sister: "Don't forget, both you and I are a member of this family! You may hate me now, but let me ask you.... Since you have no way to get him to like you, then what other choice do I have other than sacrificing myself?"

After a pause, the Marquise whispers, "Don't forget, Muse is already 15 years old! How long do you think we can hide the matter? There are many people eyeing our family's wealth! Some would be more than happy to swallow even our bones if they can..... We don't have much time left!"

Just as Du Wei arrived with his students at the military base camp outside Loulan City, a lone knight on horseback slowly came before the city gates. From

top to bottom, he had battle scars all over the place like he just experienced some kind of unimaginable storm! Even from afar, the garrison soldiers can smell the scent of blood permeating from this mysterious knight.

Subconsciously, every soldier at the gate had their alerts up at this blue haired one eyed knight. Despite the determination on the knight's face, it could not hide the fatigue caused by the injuries on the body. In fact, the wobbly fashion he sat there on the horse looked like he would fall at any moment.

Just as the soldiers were about to stop the knight in his tract, this mysterious person took the lead and pulled out a badge from his clothing. Surprising everyone, it was the symbol of the Duke's manor!

Not only did they not dare block the road, the soldiers even sent a messenger ahead to bring the news to the Duke's castle.

The mysterious knight is in fact Hussein!

Who knows what happened to be able to delay our Saint Knight from returning, but not only was he injured all over the place, even his armor was near the breaking point with cracks everywhere. If not for his Saint Dou Qi suppressing his wounds, it's likely Hussein would never have been able to make the long journey back!

For example: the most serious wound was on his right shoulder! From the way the wound appears, it's likely pierced by a violent force. Even under the protection of the Saint Dou Qi, this opponent was able to deal such a devastating blow; clearly this enemy was exceptionally strong. If not for such a powerful interface lingering inside his body, Hussein would have already mended his wounds.

Like Hussein, his horse is also exhausted from the long trek back. Only by reaching the vicinity of Loulan City did he breathe out a sigh of relief. Nevertheless, despite his perseverance, Hussein could no longer keep his body upright after reaching the castle's bridge. Slanting on one side, he fell down from his mount, thus, causing quite the stir among the palace guards.

The security forces originally thought it was an enemy attack so their awareness were suddenly raised to the maximum. However, when they realized it was Hussein, they quickly brought our Saint Knight inside without hesitation.

Soon after Hussein was carried into the Castle, Marde was quickly called upon because the Duke was not present at the moment. With just a glance, Marde began to exclaim in shock: Oh god! How did he get so seriously injured! Fast! Send for the Duke in the military camp and have the temple's clerics come over now! We need their healing magic!"

Originally in a coma already, Hussein suddenly woke up and grabbed hold of Marde's arm. In a husky voice, he said: "Don't call the temple."

Stunned at the request, Marde nevertheless agrees to the request because he's already used to the odd balls working under the young master.

"Have someone..... Carry me to the greenhouse, fast!"

Hussein's breathe rapidly increases as the veins on his forehead pops up.

Hurrying two servants over, Marde had Hussein carried over to the Greenhouse and ordered some people to stand guard outside.

Du Wei had secretly placed a bunch of magic potions and ingredients in a location within the greenhouse. Among the many things there, one of the stuff is the ice berries. This narcotic like fruit may have been abused by the wealthy class, but there's no denying it's a great anesthetic for pain.

Barely able to support himself, Hussein forced down a bit of the ice berry along with some other medical potions. Through the relieving and rejuvenating effects of the magical plants and potions, his body finally regained some of the golden luster unique to that of a Saint level warrior like Hussein.

Enduring the pain, Hussein suddenly did something no normal man could possibly do on their own. Towards his right shoulder bones where the severe wound was located, he once again fractured it with his bare hands. Under the fierce burning light of his golden Dou Qi, the gruesome sight of his reopened wound sealed itself off at a rapid pace. Normally, not even Hussein should be able to endure such excruciating pain, but thanks to the numbing ice berry he partook, the pain became a lot easier to bear.

Right now, our Saint Knight is a ragged and tattered as one can be. His side still had a sword hanging there, but the blade had long been shattered with mostly only the hilt left. Then there is his hair. Stained red, the usually glossy

blue hair is now clustered into bands of lumps due to the viscious blood.

Waiting till his bones were regrown, Hussein slightly sighs out in relief as he sat up. With his legs crossed, he then reached for his bag and opened it up.....

Inside, there is a sword radiating an awe-inspiring chill like that of the winter chill!

If Du Wei were here to see this sword, he will most certainly be surprised!

The reason is because this sword in Hussein's hand is none other than the famed sword wielded by Rodriguez "Beauty under the Moonlight"!!!

However, why is this legendary weapon possessed by Hussein?

## Chapter 210 “Fuck!” (Part One)

Within the military camp outside Loulan City, Du Wei and his 28 students are getting ready to set off for their training session along with Longbottom and his 1000 Calvary knights.

Du Wei's intention is very simple: He needs these mages to be capable of cooperating with his forces and this trip is the perfect opportunity for him to find the most efficient engagement style.

After going through the strict physical training set out by Du Wei, these kids can no longer be called weak. To match their development, he specially designed a set of equipment that subverted the image an ordinary person would have had towards a magician. Ditching the representative robe unique to that of the mage profession, each of the students are now wearing leather armor with a short sword strapped to their waist like that of a light infantry. Above all else, Du Wei even gifted these fledglings with their own wands made of decent quality walnut branches; of course, the walnut tree was produced by using the spring's water to fast forward its growth.

Though the wands were only of average standard for a walnut tree, but for these fledging's, it is already a gift of immeasurable value! One must understand, a wand made out of a walnut tree's branch is not something a newcomer can so easily afford or come by because even in the union, only those in the mid-level range can possibly afford one. Having such a valuable treasure in their hands, some of these students were so memorized by it that they were wiping it back and forth with their sleeves like fanatics.

“Everyone listen up.” Du Wei sternly cries out his word atop of his mount: “I will give you the best! The best wand, the best equipment! But whether or not you are worthy of these things will depend entirely on your efforts! I hope that after your internship in the Northwest, you will be a match for this stuff! I can tell you now, as long as you can satisfy me.... I will provide you with some extra things as a reward at the end!”

Watching the eager eyes down below, Du Wei then announced a decision

that left everyone bewildered: His request is that in the coming days, all of them are to cooperate with the army!

“What you have to do is match their movements, support their operations, and follow General Longbottom’s command! Even if the orders are unreasonable in your view, you still must do everything in your ability to meet his requests, do you all understand?”

Magicians are going to support the soldiers?”

This command really is surprising because of how prosperous magic have been developing on the Roland Continent. Historically, the limited number of magicians in the Union would still play a part in military campaigns, but that doesn’t mean they will coordinate their attacks with the main army. During a battle, these highly temperamental individuals would only fight the enemy by themselves. In Du Wei’s view, this is highly unreliable and inefficient.

And let’s not forget their attitudes..... If their mood is nice, they might lend you a hand at a critical moment, but if their day is bad, they might just pack up and leave you to your own fate.

Du Wei’s intention is to make these young magicians change this habit. Although it doesn’t make much sense to force these students to always bend to the army’s will, but this method is very effective in correcting the bad behavior so commonly found in the mage profession.

Even for our famed General Longbottom, he wasn’t very accustomed to Du Wei’s mind-blowing suggestion. Sure, he may have been a senior officer in command of thousands of soldiers at one time, but these are magicians were talking about! Overwhelmed by such a task, Longbottom

can only smile bitterly as he accepted the assignment. Coughing once to clear his throat, he began to cry out his words: “Fine then! From today onwards, I will not look at you as wizards; instead, I will hence forth treat you like one of my subordinates! Don’t expect preferential treatment! If I hear anyone ever going against my orders, I will punish you with the whip! Do you people understand!”

This speech can be considered extremely ambitious. If it was anyone else, these overlords known as magicians would have either turned tailed and walked away without so much as a glance. As for those with a bad temper, you



can damn well expect some payback.

Fortunately through the art of brainwashing, Du Wei is quite prestigious in their hearts. Also, these kids are from the military to begin with, so taking orders from the military is quite normal for them.

“Well then, get up and let’s go!” Longbottom ordered with his booming voice: “Get into marching formation! Magicians unit stay in the back..... We must get to Cow Tongue village located at the base of Mount Kilimanjaro before dark. We will resupply there, but don’t expect any breaks because we will be making our way up the mountain throughout the night! Kids.... What will be awaiting you there is the fur and the cores of the magical beasts living there!”

Once they were on the road, Longbottom rode side by side with Du Wei just so he can complain: “Boss.... You really gave me a problem..... With so many mages listening to me..... Even I don’t know what to do. Oh god, I fear I’m the only commander throughout the empire to be given so many mages as underlings.”

“You’ll get used to it.” Du Wei smiles like it wasn’t such a big deal: “Everything is just the beginning, we still need to slowly develop it.”

After a day of forced marching, even Longbottom was surprised at the endurance showcased by the young mages. Like many generals in the empire, they love and hated mages. What makes a magician so lovable is their immense strength, and what makes them so hateful is the inability to control them. Seeing how much suffering these young mages are willing endure and their willingness to take his orders, what more can Longbottom ask for?

Unlike the fit youngsters that impressed Longbottom, the young master of the Lister Household was different. When Du Wei peered over to look at Muse, this brat was clearly showing a face of fatigue. However, when he noticed Du Wei’s gaze, this stubborn child immediately straightened his back to hide his weakness.

“Humph, what a proud kid.” Du Wei laughed inside.

Cow Tongue village is located at the southern base of Mount Kilimanjaro and what makes this place ideal for going up the mountain is its unique topography. Unlike the steep slopes across the mountain range, this area is relatively flat.

“According to our information, the area approximately 100 miles from here is likely to be infested with magical beasts.” Longbottom explains: “When we came here last time, the locals said that whenever spring comes around, a thing they called a ‘monster’ would come down from the mountain to harass the cattle’s in the village. According to the villager’s description, the monster’s body is relatively small with fast reflexes. Some hunters tried to kill it before, but every attempt they did was unsuccessful.... It is said the thin can spit fire and when it needs to flee, it can even burrow into the ground.”

“General, we need more information to figure out what this magical beast is.” A sorcerer apprentice boldly speaks up: “This thing is clearly a fire based magical beast, but these features are too vague. Small in size, fast, capable of breathing fire, and able to burrow into the ground, I can think of at least seven creatures that matches these characteristics. In order to properly deal with this beast, we need more information to come up with a plan.”

Like this bold kid, the other students were also nodding in agreement while some even began coming up with possible suspects. Seeing this, Du Wei is very pleased because under his influence, these kids have learned the most important thing he wanted: efficiency!

It was at this moment, a sharp voice suddenly broke their mood: “Why are you people so worried about a magical beast when there are so many mages like you around..... Humph, can it be our famed Duke is afraid of some measly magical beast.....”

Muse’s tone is evidently full of disdain and mockery over Du Wei and his students lack of courage.

After Muse’s reckless outburst, this kid immediately regretted his words inside. He doesn’t know why either, but his heart would ache with displeasure whenever his eyes fall upon Du Wei.

Du Wei didn’t say anything, but the students were another matter. Every single one of them were glaring at this little boy and one even cried out to retort him: “Who the hell are you to accuse the dean!”

Muse originally regretted his words too, but hearing the rude words shooting his way, this proud young master of the Lister Household wasn’t going to back

down: “Humph, a great and mighty wizard is afraid of a little magical beast.... If word spread..... Hey-hey, don’t think of me looking down at anyone, but others will definitely laugh.... Humph, it’s to be expected; whatever people will have whatever students.....”

While everyone was already fuming at this inexperienced kid, Du Wei only coughed once to shut everyone up.

Glaring at the kid before him, Du Wei said: Mr. Muse.” Du Wei ponders for a moment, his face seemingly devoid of any anger: “Courage or cowardice is nothing more than someone else’s evaluation. When acting, it’s good enough when your conscience is clear, so why should one care about others gossip. Since you are so brave, then I can’t suppress your great virtue.... So be it then, we just so happens to need a scout when climbing the mountain. Since you are so willing to show your bravery, I believe you won’t miss this opportunity, right?”

Other than the snowy mountain peak being stained with snow, the mountain forest was already beginning to look creepily dark as the sun sets across the horizon.

Muse’s voice may sound firm, but his heart was already beginning to shake: “Fine then, a scout it is, what is there for me to be scared of!”

With that, this kid immediately gripped his reins readying to dash off. However, Du Wei immediately stopped him: “Duke, did you have something else to say?!” Muse exclaimed.

“Mr. Muse, the road is rugged; you aren’t expecting to ride up the mountain, right?” Du Wei smiles wickedly.

“Humph!” Muse’s face was red with anger, but through the cover of darkness, his flush only lasted for a second: “Who said I was going to ride up the mountain. I’m just riding ahead for a stroll.”

Du Wei also didn’t want to be too hard on the kid; after all, his relationship with the Lister household is not worth ruining over some argument. Subsequently, he ordered several of his men to lead the kid and his horse away to rest.

## Chapter 210 “Fuck!” (Part Two)

Those magic apprentices had long forgotten about the kid. Dismounting, these students began combing through the town in search of clues related to the magical beast. Unlike the soldiers that came before, these young mages are much more knowledgeable so their questions for the villagers had left the regular soldiers baffled.

For some of the students, they even wanted to look at the livestock bodies attacked by the so called monster.

Luckily, the weather in the Northwest is cold, so many of the bodies haven't decomposed yet. Seeing how these prestigious mages aren't afraid of dirtying their clothes and is even willing to personally inspect the body, many of the soldiers nearby were having strange thoughts in their minds.

Very soon, the students came to a conclusion.

“Dean.” A leader of the student came over to report: “We found a clue; any livestock bitten all have the same characteristics of having a lot of their blood drained..... Apparently, the monster loves blood but only blood of living creatures. When the victim is dead, the assailant would stop and move on to the next victim. We've cut open several bodies to come to such a conclusion.”

Du Wei was pleased: “What else?”

“And.....” The students spent a moment in thought: “The brothers do have a split in opinions, umm, but the possibility of that idea is unlikely.”

“Oh?”

Du Wei recalled the brothers are different from the rest. Unlike the rest of the class that was from the military, only these two siblings hailed from a declining noble family.

Among his students in his Hogwarts branch, this pair of brothers is the youngest because the people sent over from the military are mostly around 18 years of age. They may be young, but their talent is in fact the highest!

“Yes, they presented an idea, but we doubted it. However, we cannot come to a conclusion, so we thought it was for the best that you inquired the theory from them yourself.” This leader of his student spoke in an objective manner.

Du Wei is also very pleased with their rational towards the question. Unlike the traditional megalomaniac mages he’s seen so far, he wants his student to be fair and objective when tackling an issue.

“All right, have both of them come over.” Du Wei gave the order, but before the guy left, he called out again: “Wait a minute, Ziggy.”

Ziggy is the name of the guy. Though he is only a cadet in the army, but because of his rigorous nature and fair personality, the students all recognized him as their leader.

“Dean, is there something else?”

“Ziggy.” Du Wei ponders a bit as he slowly said: “I noticed in your words that you used the word ‘brothers’, right?”

“..... Yes, that’s right.” Ziggy seems to understand the Du Wei’s meaning.

Du Wei looked him in the eye and sternly declared: “I think that whenever you are talking about the two, you will address them as such, right? The brothers..... Hmm, I know the 30 of you are from the army, but this form of unity will make others have a hard time joining. What I want to say is that perhaps in the future, you guys will go your separate ways to do various things. This kind of unity has its good points and bad points, but as a whole, all of you are from the Hogwarts branch, do you understand what I’m trying to say?”

Ziggy solemnly replied: “Dean, I get it! I wasn’t diligent enough, I will do better!”

“Very well, from now on, I don’t want to hear ‘brothers’. In my opinion, all of you are the s

ame and those two are a part of your group.”

“Yes, Dean!” Straightening his back, he was about to leave when something else came into his mind.

“Dean.....” Ziggy’s voice wasn’t high, but was very adamant: “I feel..... All of us

don't want to go our separate ways, we wish to follow the dean; this is not just my own thoughts."

While Ziggy turns and walks away, Du Wei can only sigh because he believes this young man will grasp his meaning

Very soon, the brothers were called before him, both somewhat nervous; "Enough, I don't eat people and besides, it's not like you two held back during the party."

The two immediately smiled at his remark.

"I remember you are the older one, right?" Du Wei looks at the chubbier one.

"Yes Dean, my name is Bebe and this is my brother Tokar."

Du Wei pleasingly smiles: "Alright, no need for the introductions, you think I can't remember my own students? Now then, tell me the results of your discussion. I heard you came up a different theory, right?"

"Yes Dean." Bebe explains: "We believe the number of magical beasts roaming here is not one.... but two working together. However, the majority of our classmates disagrees with us."

Du Wei nods with understanding because he can already imagine the reason why their idea was shot down.

In this world, majority of the magical beasts are solidary animals with only a small number of species living in social groups. For example: griffons like to live in packs.

"And, we even suspect..... the two are of different species, one being a fire type and the other being a fire type."

"Oh?"

Du Wei was interested now.

Its hard enough to find magical beasts living in packs, and now they are telling him the two are of different species?

What's more, a fire type is working with an ice type? This is like saying cat and a mouse just joined up to form a team.

Have you ever seen a cat and mouse living together?

“Explain your reasoning.” Du Wei ponders the issue for a moment.

“Dean, this idea was proposed by my brother, so let’s have him explain.” Bebe pushes the problem to his little brother.

Tall, thin, white skinned, Tokar is a shy guy almost like Du Wei in his previous life. However, his way of speaking was very different from his shy appearance: “Dean, this idea was indeed proposed by me..... After dissecting some of the bodies, especially the ones that had their bloods drained, I became confused. From my knowledge, a fire type beast rarely sucks blood from their victims. Of course, there are exceptions, but according to what I know, those that do suck blood for nutrients are small in stature..... But from what I saw in the victims bite wound, the assailant should at least be the size of an ice demon wolf. This point is very different from how the villagers described the ‘monsters’ head as being small. Also, from the number of dead cattle’s, I fear the appetite of the ‘monster’ is very big, which is a sign that the beast is not small in size at all! There’s also the coagulate blood piece I extracted from the body of a carcass. After carefully examining it, I found that the sample I took is not naturally formed, instead, it was the result of a cold element inserted from the outside.... This leads me to conclude that other than the big guy, there is also a small one! The big one is responsible for using fire to kill the livestock, while the small one is responsible for draining blood.”

“cooperation?” Du Wei asks.

“I don’t feel like cooperation..... Hmm, more like..... Slavery.” Tokar carefully explained: “

I suspect the ice type is a high class magical beast. He captured a low class fire type and drove into servitude.” Tokar smiles wryly: “But even I feel this is unlikely. The Kilimanjaro Mountain may have magical beasts, but it’s not a place frequented by high class beasts that could enslave other species.”

“In this world, there is nothing impossible.” Du Wei curls his mouth.

Even that fucking Aragon, a guy dead for a millennium, can still leave him a message in Chinese.... After that incident, is there anything else is out of the question?

Tokar's theory really is incredible.

A highly advanced magical beast does indeed have the ability to subjugate lower class beasts. Such as the ice demon wolf, once evolved, it will become an Ice Wolf Demon King. With a single howl, the epitome of this specie can call upon every beast within a certain radius into serving him.

However, Du Wei quickly ruled out the possibility of an Ice Wolf Demon King because this beast did not have the habit of sucking blood. Besides, if it did howl, it wouldn't just enslave a single creature in its radius.

Just..... If there really is a guy who only enslave another magical beast, then this beast is definitely a high class monster. His students may be able to handle an ordinary beast, but when facing such a foe, their only option is to flee.

Even for Du Wei himself, considering his real strength, he would also need to retreat if he encounters such a foe.

"Cancel the original order. We will stay in town for a night and not go into the mountains." Du Wei immediately sent out the order.

Hearing Du Wei's command, Longbottom immediately came over to ask why. He tried to explain the theory from the brothers, but clearly, Longbottom underestimated the threat of a advanced magical beast. It can't be helped; Longbottom is only a fighter, you can't expect someone like him to grasp the danger posed by a creature he's not familiar with.

"We have a thousand cavalry, then there's the mages you brought along. With so many people, are we really not able to deal with a monster or two?"

Du Wei was very serious when he lowered his voice: "General, I have to tell you, these students are not true magicians. Moreover, they are all my precious assets..... I'm not going to let them lose their life here, even if it's just one, it's not something I can afford! You understand? Secondly, the power of an advanced magical beast is not something you can imagine. I can tell you now, an advanced magical beast may not be terrifying by itself, but through its ability to summon other beasts nearby, it can call forth an army at any time..... Moreover, the hardest part in dealing with an advanced magical beast is that it finished its evolution cycle. Not only is it capable of defending itself, it also has wisdom like you and I. We came to train, not to go to war. Sacrificing my people



for no reason is a stupid option in my opinion.”

However, Du Wei added an extra sentence inside: advanced magic beasts don't have powerful inherent strength..... The only exception is Medusa!

Obedying Du Wei's command, Longbottom cancelled the journey up the mountain. However, because of this, it gave Muse another opportunity to mock Du Wei.

“Well then, we have to ask a fine warrior like you to be our night's watch for tonight.” Du Wei utters these words to shove this bothersome kid away. In addition, he also instructed the other watchman to pay close attention to Muse so he doesn't do anything reckless.

“Let him suffer a little, but make sure he doesn't really get hurt.”

Du Wei also ordered that his 28 students be split into four groups. Escorted by 200 soldiers each, they are to search the mountain in rotation after dawn breaks. If they find anything, they are not to engage, instead, they are to inform the others immediately.

This operation must be carried out while the sun is up because in the midst of night, its no different from suicide when going up against a advanced ice magical beast.

Although this may be overreacting, but Du Wei feels this is necessary if his concerns are true.

Unlike his agitated state, the 28 students are in fact very excited. To be able to see a legendary advanced magical beast is not something they can come across easily. Normally, they will only read about it from a book at best.

While the Sky is still dark, Du Wei was already up. As he was readying to go outside, Old Smoke beat him to the punch and came knocking:

“My Lord, the Duke's castle sent word that something major happened at home and needs your presence immediately.”

“Oh?” Du Wei was startled..... Can it be that something happened to the Marquise?

The one coming to bring the message is none other than our little Sandia.

Marde is a very smart housekeeper. From Hussein's request of not calling the Temple's healers, he can already smell something was amiss. To be on the safe side, he didn't pick some random person to bring the message, but rather, he only picked the most trusted among Du Wei's people, which is little Sandia. Poor Sandia, though our clever boy is not bad in riding a horse after half a year of practice, but this trip is something out of his league. Riding through the night without rest, his butt is burning with pain at all the bouncing his butt did.

In addition to a message, he also brought along something.

The message is directly from Hussein, and the thing that Sandia passed on caused Du Wei's face to change the moment his eyes laid upon it!

"The giant lizard in the frozen forest is coming for revenge, return immediately!" This was Hussein's direct words.

And the thing brought along is a golden scale!

This is clearly a broken scale, though broken; it is still the size of a big bowl! As he held it in his hand, Du Wei found it heavy and stained with blood!

Du Wei immediately recognized it..... This is a Dragon scale!

And this scales was pulled from Hussein's back wound!

Du Wei's face was ghastly pale!

That old dragon is coming for revenge? Is going back on his oath?

Getting up quickly, he was just about to go out when Longbottom suddenly barged in from the door.

"Boss, we've got a problem ..... The kid you brought along sneaked into the mountain by himself last night....."

Not waiting for Longbottom to finish his words, Du Wei flew into a rage: "FUCK!!!!!"

## Chapter 211 “Slap” (Part One)

Du Wei did not say blaming words at Longbottom, but even a fool can see the Duke's anger.

Facing Du Wei's gloomy face, even General Longbottom is starting to regret.

The truth is Muse's action of sneaking into the mountain at the dead of night was partly his fault because he secretly told his men to let our troublemaker suffer a bit.

These guys may not really dare do anything to our Duke's guest, but during the night's watch, they had Muse stay up during the latter half because it's the hardest. Aside from this, they were also mocking him left and right in revenge for the rude remark from before. Who is Muse and how can a little lord like him put up with such insults? Before dawn, he made an excuse and quietly sneaked away while the others weren't looking. Seeing the troublemaker didn't return after a long time, the other guards on night's watch finally realized what has happened when they go searching and found Muse's footprint.

“What did your people say to him?” Du Wei's voice map appears calm, but was apparently at the edge of losing it already.

Longbottom smiles wryly: “They said to the boy: If you dare laugh at the Duke for being cowardly, then you must be very brave. Our lord is brave enough to go into the frozen forest, what about you? The kid probably couldn't take such insult and ran into the mountain in search of the demon beast.”

Du Wei suppresses his anger down: “immediately call everyone and search the mountain!”

Du Wei also hates the kid, but he had to face a fact: Muse cannot get hurt under his watch! During this period, he still needs the Lister Family to help him expand his business.

And this hateful Muse is the only heir to the Lister family!! If something happens to this brat, even if their relationship is even closer, there's no other outcome other than becoming enemies!

No need to mention the resources under the Lister Family, Du Wei can already tell the Marquise is not an easy opponent to deal with. With her intellect and extensive connections, he can already imagine the headaches she would bring.....

Everyone has been called upon and sent up the mountain according to the plan set out by him last night. The only difference is the radius of their search has been expanded several folds and the target has been changed to that hateful kid.

“No matter the case, everyone must guarantee the safety of the boy! This is the highest priority!”

In addition, Du Wei also assigned his personal bodyguards into the search teams. This included the weird talents he recruited and the former hunter under him.

Du Wei also intended to personally go into the mountain, but his people stopped him. He is after all duke, he can't always personally do everything, if he did, what's the point of having subordinates?

Moreover, even if he went into the mountain, it's not like he can make a difference. He may be a magician, but with his abilities right now, burning an entire mountain forest is out of his league.

He would call for the treant companions to help him search, but his miniature version of the horn of life can only bring forth mindless beings. These blundering giants would listen to his every command, but something as complicated as finding a lost kid is out of the question.

Besides, after slightly weighing in the matters, he still felt Hussein was more important.

He decided to stay in Cow Tongue village for another half a day. If by then there's still no news, he's going to ditch the matter here and rush back to Loulan City.

That bloody Muse..... If they bring him back, he's going to violently beat the kid once and for all! Du Wei gnashes his teeth as he thought this.

The Lister family is certainly an ally he did not want to abandon, but Hussein is even more important!

For a guy he hates, Du Wei is not so stupid to abandon a guy that went through hell with him.

The truth is Du Wei did not even have the patience to wait until noon. By morning when the sun just rose, he was already having trouble suppressing his anxious state! Though Sandia made it clear Hussein did not have any significant problem and is already resting in the castle, but Du Wei is still shocked by the news.

The piece of Dragon scale..... From that old lizard, is he really going to get even with him? Back in the bloody battle at the frozen waste, Hussein became blind in one eye, Medusa had to use her iconic petrification eyes, and Gandalf sacrificed himself to cover their escape.....

Despite their narrow, the hatred on both sides is practically set in stone. Even now, Du Wei suspects the old lizard is not the type to go back on his words.... When Aragon tricked him into keeping his promise for a millennium, this guy may be a nasty bastard, but he still kept to the deal. On this point, Du Wei really admired him.

Yet now.....

Du Wei is so upset that he went numb. The Dragon patriarch is not an easy opponent he can take lightly! Let's not mention the extremely powerful body of a dragon, Du Wei almost certain the strongest being on the continent now is this dragon that could stand even with Aragon! Back then he had Gandalf, Hussein, and Medusa by his side; even with so many powerful allies, his side only broke even.... And now, his side is down one person. Let's not forget the lizard commands an entire dragon clan too!

Du Wei may have vowed to get revenge for Gandalf, but this is not the right time! With his abilities, he feared he won't even have a corpse left after they're done with him.

With the sun hitting noon, Du Wei can't wait any longer. Tightening his grip on the whip, he sternly said: "We're not waiting anymore, let's go!"

Du Wei is now only left with two guards, Old Smoke, and little Sandia by his side. Hearing his words, Old Smoke knitted his brow because he is originally from the royal guards, so he did have some insight:

“My Lord..... I don’t think this is a good idea. Muse is after all the heir to the Lister Household. If the Marquise asks and you can’t explain why you returned without her brother, it will become a difficult situation.”

Du Wei of course knows Old Smoke’s words are right, but he is simply too anxious.... Regarding Hussein’s matter, Old Smoke is not in the loops. Then there’s the matter of the dragon patriarch, how is he going to explain that part?

His expression became gloomy as he gritted his teeth: “That reckless kid.... Humph, if we can’t find him, then he deserves it.... There’s no reason or us to waste our time here waiting for him!” His words may be harsh, but he followed up with another sentence that gave away his true thoughts: “Humph, if we find that brat.... I guarantee I will give him a special treatment so he can’t get out of bed for ten days. If he can get up before then, I will write my name backwards!”

With that, Du Wei mounted his horse with a hateful face. Sighing, Old Smoke did not have anything else to say after knowing the Duke made his decisions already. However, just when they were about to set off, Duke widened his eyes to star at the southern road in town.....

Completely opposite from where Kilimanjaro Mountain is, a horse was casually strolling towards them with a kid leisurely sitting on top. With a lazy smile, this somewhat womanly faced person is none other than the person Du Wei wanted to hurt the most.

Muse!!!!

For this boy, everyone went up the mountain to search for him, yet, he dare come from back from the opposite direction?!

Just seeing the carefree face on this kid is making his anger boil over! The first thought that came up is to rush forward to strangle this bastard!

The second thought was to violent beat the idiot that said they found Muse’s footprint headed into the mountain!

Of course, Du Wei wanted to do the first option the most right now.

Even for someone like Old Smoke that was standing nearby, he could clearly feel the frightening chill extruding from the Duke's body!

While the young duke is usually very pleasant to those down below, but he is well aware that once this person really becomes angry, the result would be devastating.....

Du Wei's face was livid as he narrowed his eyes to glare at the kid.

Muse seems to also feel something was not quite right with Du Wei, but he was too complacent at the moment. Even when he finally came up to Du Wei, this brat dismounted like he was flying through air from how smug he looked.

Old Smoke was sighing already..... This boy really doesn't know when he's screwed.

"Mr. Muse, please explain where you went last night." Du Wei did not become angry right away like Old Smoke imagined. Instead, he was too calm, so calm that it was scary!

Muse seems oblivious to the danger befalling him with the proud mocking smile: "Oh, are you concerned about my whereabouts? Humph, are you scared that I lost?"

But his arrogance only lasted up to here.

PA!!!

A resounding crisp sound came out.

Du Wei did not wait for the kid to finish when he sent his hand flying across the left cheek!

## Chapter 211 “Slap” (Part Two)

Regarding this slap, Du Wei did not hold back his strength because there Muse was dumbfounded by what just transpired! What was usually a handsome face is not covered in five clear fingerprints!

What was a complacent and derisive look is now solidified. Like a knee jerking reaction, he clutched his face as he stared at Du Wei, unsure if this was really happening because never once in his life did he get beaten, not even by his sister!

Very soon, the kid woke up from his stupor and a anger began burning his eyes. Using his sharp voice, he growled: “You dare to hit me!!!”

Since when did Muse ever suffer from such humiliation? Blinded by rage, he had long forgotten about Du Wei’s identity and reached for his sword. In a single push, he thrust his sword right at Du Wei’s chest!

Although Du Wei is a magician with weak martial skills, but after practicing the Stars Dou Qi martial steps, his body is no longer as weak as it once was. Besides, Muse is not some kind of martial prodigy, so how can he harm our little devil.

With a little effort, Du Wei easily dodged the thrust by stepping sideways. At the same time, his hand did a back swinging motion and landed another hit across Muse’s face!

PA!!!

This hit was even harder than the last, thus, causing Muse’s right face to swell up instantly. Even on the corner of the kid’s mouth, there is a spec of blood leaking out.

Under such brutality, Muse faltered and dropped his weapon. Despite how weak his body felt, Muse was too angry to give up.

Seeing how the brat was trying to pick up the sword again, Du Wei became even more irritated. With a flick of his finger, Du Wei sent a ball of light flying at Muse.



After being hit with this spell, Muse found his body weakening like his strength was being drained. Instantly, his body collapsed to the ground.

Even after all this, this stubborn kid still didn't give up and reached for the sword hilt again. Seeing this, Du Wei came forward and stepped on the sword to crush the last remnant of hope/

Muse had a face full of anger as he tried to budge the sword: "Du Wei, how dare you be rude to me! My sister won't let you off for this!!"

"Sister?" Du Wei spent no effort in hiding his contempt: "Oh, you can only take your sister out to threaten me? Humph, a kid that didn't grow all his pubic hair yet dare put on air in other's territory?"

Though Muse was flushing with shame and anger, he could not talk back because Du Wei's words were all hitting the target.

"If a person wants to be arrogant, they must have the ability to back it up!" Du Wei continues to merciless crush the boy: "What about? What skill do you have? You are nothing but an idiot that can only rely on your sister! I can pick any one of my bodyguards to beat eight to ten of you! Without your sister, you are nothing but trash!"

Muse couldn't retort at all from the lethal insults: "Du Wei, you dare!"

POW!

Replying to his words is another slap across the face!

This strike was very hard that even Muse's head was turned sideways from the force.

"I dare!" Du Wei's face did nothing to hide his grin: "I dare, so what! It's because I'm stronger than you! A hundred times stronger than you! If I want to go against you, I can ravage you however I want! And what about you? Other than putting on some air, what else can you do?"

"I....."

Just as Muse began speak, Du Wei immediately sent another slap across his face!

POW!

The four loud slaps is like a sharp knife cutting apart the arrogant pride in Muse's personality. Now, there is not a spec of the former attitude.

He did not know when, but his hand had long given up the sword. Instead, his hand was now covering his fear filled face.

"Speak!" Du Wei's outcry caused Muse to cringe backward. Then just when he wanted to open up his mouth to speak, Du Wei suddenly raised a hand in an intimidating fashion: "Do-Don't hit me anymore....."

"Humph!" Du Wei heavily grunted as he lowered his hand: "Do you know why I hit you?"

Muse quickly shook his head.

"Boy, you better listen up." Du Wei angrily said: "Now that you are following me, you better be good..... Especially when you address me, you are to call me 'lord', you understand!"

Muse finally showed no signs of resistance like he had caved into Du Wei's power: "Al-alright."

"What did you say!" Du Wei's eye gleamed with fury which caused Muse to jump with fright: "Yes.... My lord."

With that, Muse's watery red eyes finally began to cry out. Seeing this, Du Wei frowned with contempt because he couldn't believe how weak willed this Lister kid is. What was usually an arrogant kid is now crying like a woman.

"What are you crying for?!" Du Wei cried out: "Get up now and tell me where you went last night!"

Muse covered his face as he fearfully dodged Du Wei's gaze: "I..... I only sneaked out because I didn't want those guys to underestimate me....."

"So why did you come back from the South?" Du Wei frowned.

"I... .. I do not know." Muse suddenly looked somewhat embarrassed: "Last night was too dark that I couldn't see the way. After a while, I fell asleep.... By the time I woke up, I already found myself on the southern side. It was by asking some locals did I find my way back....."

Du Wei coldly laughs: “From your appearance, you looked very carefree! Is it because you thought I would be in a panic because I couldn’t find you so you intentionally came back slowly?”

Muse really is terrified by Du Wei’s somber look. Without even trying, an indescribable fear compelled him to answer: “Ye-yes...!”

“HAHA!” Du Wei laughs coldly: “Your thinking is right. I was in a panic when I couldn’t find you and even sent all my people into the mountain to find you. But do you know why I was in such a panic? I bet you didn’t think it through on the consequences of your little stunt!”

Muse was unable to speak.

“If you really met with an accident under my watch.....” Du Wei voice was clear and serious: “Then your family and I will forever be sworn enemies.... And I will destroy your family at any cost! Don’t doubt my willingness to do it! I will not let the Lister Family continue its existence in this world! Think about, because of an idiot like you, your sister and clansman will all die because of you! Now, do you still think your little stunt is interesting?”

Muse can obviously feel that this horrifying little devil is definitely not lying to him! From the oppressive eyes, he really believes Du Wei will do it and will achieve it!

In the face of such intimidation, Muse’s heart began to bud a seed of fear!

“Why are you still like that, do you expect me to lift you up?!” Du Wei’s single order caused Muse to frantically get up and move back a few steps.

“Humph, just a useless sissy boy.” Du Wei grunts a sigh of contempt: “There’s blade for you to practice, yet you choose to practice the sword. There’s a gold sword for you to take yet you take the silver sword, what a kinky bitch!”

Slightly venting his anger, Du Wei then turns around to face the eccentric Old Smoke and the slightly frightened Sandia. With a wave of his hand, he orders: “Call everyone back from the mountain by burning the wolf dung!”

The two guards immediately turned to obey his orders, but before they can take two steps forward, a earth shattering ROAR came from behind the farmhouse nearby!!

Then the contour of a long red shadow suddenly popped out from behind the house and quickly rolled around the dazed Muse.... Du Wei is having a clear look at this thing now... It's a really long, long tongue!

Poor Muse did not even have time to recover from his fear before his body was swept inside the farmhouse.....

Du Wei's moment of stupor was enough to let the creature pull Muse into the farmhouse! Greatly shocked, he quickly ran towards the farmhouse as his first response, but before he can take a step inside the farmhouse, a wave of flame sprayed out at him from the inside.....

# Chapter 212 “Blood Skull Flag” (Part One)

Watching the flames coming right at him with incredible speed, Du Wei instinctively ducked his head only to find a part of his hair singed by the blast. Just as Old Smoke and his men started to scream at the situation, Du Wei then found himself being attack by a black shadow. Pouncing at his left shoulder, the sharp teethes of this creature easily pierced through his skin to cause great pain on his body.

Like a beast’s growl running through his ear, Du Wei then found his body being flung into the farmhouse like an object.

Enduring the pain scorching through his shoulder, Du Wei then opens his eyes to look up from the ground. It is then that he saw it. What should have been nothing but haystacks inside this unlit farmhouse is now occupied by a strange monster lying in the middle.

Standing a meter in height, this oddity stood upright like a human with some clear differences. Its arm was much longer while its leg were shorter, if Du Wei had to make a reference, this guy can even be called a monkey from the large volumes of bodily hair. However, its fingers were webbed like a ducks with only three appendage fingers. If anything, it’s better to call it a fan from how wide those webs are.

Covered in its flaming red hair, this monster just stood there in the middle staring right at him. Du Wei really was taken aback by this creature’s appearance because the first picture that came to mind was a haunting ghost from those scary moves with its long tongue sticking out of its mouth all the way to the ground. That’s not all though. In addition to the strange growl it was making, Du Wei also noticed the tongue was covered in small fleshy spikes; this made it increasingly scary because it gave off the image of something really nasty in his memory.

(In case anyone didn’t understand the reference, the author is referring to the freaky tentacles in Japanese porn)

Never once in his life did Du Wei hear or read about such a monster.

Poor Muse. Maybe the kid fainted or something because he was just lying there under the monster without moving an inch.

As for Du Wei, he wasn't any better because a grey haired creature with green eyes was busily eyeing him down. This time around, Du Wei immediately recognized this creature with a glance.

A fire Fox: This creature is a medium sized demon beast with fire properties as its base. Not only is it fast with good reflexes, it's also like a dog with canine like teethes and a good sense of smell. In addition to being able to emit fire to fend off an enemy, it can also burrow away to escape from more powerful foes.

After getting a clear look at the two beasts, Du Wei immediately composed himself. (Seems the theory from the brothers were correct after all!)

As Du Wei got up from the ground, the Fire Fox continues to bare its bloodied fangs at him, ready to pounce again with a moment's notice. Seems the creature that attacked him earlier was this damn mutt.

Stuck between two monsters in a small space, Du Wei knows he's in no position to put up a fight especially when he's not good in melee combat. Inwardly, he's praying Old Smoke would rush in at any moment with help.

It is then the unknown monster that Du Wei cannot identity made some purring calls which caused the Fire fox to timidly step back.

Taking all this in, Du Wei's heart sank because he knew only an advanced demon beast can drive another low ranked demon beast into servitude.

With one leg stepping on Muse, this monster then made several purring roars at Du Wei as it pointed at Muse with a grin. Surprised by its actions, Du Wei suspect is starting to suspect the thing is trying to communicate with him.

But he can't speak the  
beast's language.

It was at this moment, a loud bang can be heard from the outside and in seconds, Old Smoke was already running in after slicing apart the door apart. As for the two guards that were with him, the one that was bigger and couldn't feel pain came crashing through the wall. The farmhouse was made out of

wood to begin with so it wasn't that hard to crash right through the structural wall. In a triangle formation, the trio surrounded both Du Wei and the Fire Fox.

Du Wei immediately cried out at Old Smoke: "Don't come! Stay over there!"

The Fire Fox had already given up on Du Wei. Facing one of the guards, this fox slowly stepped backward until it was by the other monster's side.

Relieved, Du Wei finally got up from the ground and looked at the monster stepping on Muse's body: "You.... What are you trying to tell me?"

Although Du Wei knew that any demon beast capable of evolving into its advanced form is equipped with a certain level of intelligence, but he wasn't so sure if the thing can understand his words.

Sure enough, the creature seemed to understand his meaning. Reaching out its paw to point at Old Smoke and his two subordinates, it then points back at Muse and made a throat slicing gesture.

"Okay! Okay!" Du Wei immediately threw up his hands: "I get it! You are warning them not to go over, right?! I will have my people move back, all right?"

Du Wei then made several gestures to have Old Smoke and the two guards move back a few steps to where the entrance was.

"Sir, are you okay?" Old Smoke asks with worry: "The signal smoke is already lit so General Longbottom will be back soon."

Du Wei nods: "I'm fine.0.... You guys stay back and don't get too close... .. This guy doesn't seem to be very hostile."

This monster seemed to understand Du Wei's words as it nodded several times. Then pointing at Du Wei's shoulder, it made several woo woo purs like it was apologizing.

"All right, Mr. Demon Beast..... Sir." Du Wei smiles wryly because he never a time would come where he would end up talking to an animal: "It seems you can understand my words.... If so, what do I have to do to make you let my friend go?"

This red haired Monster then shakes his head back and forth. Jumping a few

times on the spot, its hands looked like it was holding something. After a few times of this demonstration, Du Wei finally realized the thing was trying to imitate the posture of someone riding a horse. Noticing Du Wei's understanding, the monster then points one of its webbed fingers towards the outside and made the same posture again.

Du Wei frowns as he made a guess: "Are you saying ... there are horse riders coming from the outside?"

Red hair Monster nodded as it pointed to itself. Letting out a few pitiful cries, it then made a posture like it was being tied up.

"Hmm, they are coming to catch you?" Du Wei smiles bitterly.

The Monster nods again as it showed a miserable looking posture.

Du Wei lets out a breath of relief: "You don't want to be captured?"

Then with a gloomy face, he continues: "I don't understand what you mean ... I can let you off and not hurt you, but you have to let my friend go."

It was at this moment the monster suddenly started to bow at Du Wei, its whining cries carried a begging tone.

"You ... are asking me to let you go? That's fine... Ah no, you're asking me to help?" Du Wei struggles to guess the monster's meaning.

Finally, after the Monster repeated the riding posture, Du Wei now understands: "You're asking me to help you drive away those who are here to catch you?"

"My Lord, can it be talking about our Calvary riders?" Old Smoke asks from behind.

Du Wei thought for a moment only to shake his head in the end: "This should not be it." His expression became serious as it stared at the monster; "You're able to understand my language, why is that? Did you live with humans before?"

The reaction from the Red hair Monster was a look of fright as its body trembled in fear.

"Okay! Okay!" Du Wei quickly cries out: "Don't hurt my friend and I will drive



away the people outside.”

It was then he heard the sound of someone blowing a whistle – this is the warning signal used by Longbottom and his men that they encountered an enemy!

What came next is the banging and panging sound of fighting mingled with Longbottom’s call to assemble.....

Du Wei expression changed immediately: “Someone’s coming? Old Smoke, hurry outside and take a look!”

Old Smoke’s face was also dark as he ran outside without another word. As for Du Wei, he can see monster was already trembling, it’s face extremely nervous.

Du Wei spreads his hand out: “Alright, I can protect you.... But first, you must let my friend go!”

Despite Du Wei’s words, the Monster shakes his head again and again as it stepped firmly on Muse’s body. This gesture is pretty obvious already, even so, it made it crystal clear when it pointed at Du Wei and then at the outside.

Fate likes to play on people because it is exactly at this moment Muse woke up from his slumber. Finding himself under the foot of a monster the moment he woke up, Muse immediately uttered a loud shrill cry of horror. From his ghastly pale complexion, Du Wei really wished the kid would just faint again to make it easier: “Muse, don’t move if you want to live! Listen to me and be obedient! Stay quiet right now!”

## Chapter 212 “Blood Skull Flag” (Part Two)

Moments later, Old Smoke and Longbottom both ran in. From our General's appearance, his armor was already stained red with blood: “Boss, we encountered the enemy! It's the prairie natives! About 3,000 people, all cavalries... .. Bloody hell, why did such a group come into our place? And there's the people standing post at the corridor, why didn't they send word!”

With that, Longbottom then frowns as he exclaimed at the sight of the monster: “MAMA, what the hell is that thing!?!”

“Silence Longbottom!” Du Wei said at once. He didn't want to annoy the monster and harm Muse in the process. This monster is clearly is high class demon beast. With Muse in its hand, the defenseless brat will definitely die if the wished to pluck his heart out!”

Nevertheless, Du Wei was also surprised at the news.

3,000 horsemen from the prairie?

Both shocked and angry, he grits his teeth as he looked at the monster: “I have a look outside first.... But you must promise me that you won't hurt my friend, got it?!”

After getting the monster's agreeing nod, Du Wei can only leave Old Smoke in charge: “You keep watch here.” He Then pull Longbottom out of the farmhouse with him and had 100 guards surround the place without anyone space to leave or enter.

“All four rescue team has returned from the mountain.” Longbottom plainly reports. When he saw the smoke signal sent out by Old Smoke, everyone was already rushing back down the mountain. However, when they were outside the village, they ran into the prairie natives. These people were very rude. The moment they got close, the two sides were already clashing with their blades drawn, hence the bloodied appearance of Longbottom. Fortunately, Longbottom's men were strong, so most of the deaths were on the enemy's side, with a dozen wounded too!

Well, it's impossible come out unscathed in a battle. For Longbottom's side, they also had around twenty injuries with a few seriously wounded, but thanks to their armor, there were no fatalities.

After the first skirmish, the other party retreated back outside the village and even they seem to be surprised by the number of imperial soldiers present.

Looking at the perimeter outside the town, Du Wei estimates there are at least a couple of hundred horsemen.

This is actually the first time Du Wei came across such a large number of prairie warriors. Unlike the cavalry knights of the empire, every single one of these prairie natives looked exceptionally strong with their wild nature. In a lot of cases, these people even had beards growing on their faces; this made them even more intimidating than normal.

Covered with a headscarf on their heads, these people didn't wear armor like the empire's cavalries. Instead, they all wore leather clothes in all shapes and colors. The reason for this is because the prairie lacked iron, so their ability to produce armor is hampered by their surroundings.

No matter how he looked at it, Du Wei can only see hundreds of wolves with eyes filled with the desire to hunt!

Under the cover of several cavalry knights and academy students, Du Wei went forward with Longbottom behind him.

Squinting his eyes, Longbottom peered over at the enemy only to have his attention caught by something pinned to a spear. The thing atop of the spear is actually an entire sheep skin, but it's the mark on it that's important!

This symbol is clearly a skull drawn up by blood.

Who knows how this skull was drawn, just a few strokes was enough to make it so lifelike, especially those eyes. It was like it was alive and would give off t

he illusion of staring right at you if you face it!

Longbottom immediately had his expression changed the moment his eyes lay on the thing: "AH!! It's the blood skull flag!"

How can Du Wei not be surprised when even this General 250 was showing

such an expression: “What is a blood skull flag?”

Longbottom expression was very strange: “Damn it... .. In all the years I’ve been in the Northwest, I only seen the blood skull flag once.”

He then explained: “Boss, the barbarians in the Prairie have a lot of tribes and the largest one is the royal tribe. This tribe is chosen through an election made by all the other tribes. When they gain the title of being royalty, the tribe at the time is given the right to control the royal court and give orders to the other smaller tribes. However, even the flag of the royal tribe is not as influential as this blood skull flag. In the prairie, there is a iron law rule that every person must comply and that is when they meet up with this blood skull flag, they must stop whatever they are doing and kneel down to the ground and worship this flag. This even applies to the prairie king himself! No matter how power the royal tribe at the time is, if they offend the blood skull flag, they can forget about keeping their royal status!”

Du Wei frowns: “It’s that great?”

“Our empire has magicians..... While these prairie natives have their shamans. We believe in god, but they believe in their ancestors. To them, a shaman is the medium in communicating with the spirits..... Also, more often than not, shamans are very powerful people that are highly respected. Even for the chief of a large tribe, they must pay their respects to even the lowest of shamans. In addition to the prairie king, there is also the ‘shaman king’ in the prairie. Because of the legends passed down through the natives, the shaman king is supposed to be the descendant of the most powerful ancestor. For this reason, the status of the shaman far exceeds even the prairie king. From some of the rumors I’ve been told, this entity has an extremely long life span and his powers are is one of a kind!”

Du Wei also narrowed his eyes: “Let’s hear it.”

“Let’s say it like this. Even if a regular shaman runs off to a tribe and say their ancestor wishes for them to offer their life, the herdsmen will without hesitation kill his family before committing suicide!” Longbottom’s bitter smile looked like even he couldn’t believe it: “The way these prairie natives worship their ancestor is already at the level of being a fanatic. If you never lived there,

it will be very difficult for you to understand this. Then there is the war 20 years ago. Did you know the empire couldn't gain the upper hand at the beginning of the war? With the support of the shamans, even the empire's magicians couldn't break through, and that was without the Shaman King making an appearance! But then a strange thing happened later....."

"What is it?"

"Towards the end of the war, rumor has it that the Shaman King suddenly issued an order for all shamans to leave the battle. According to what I know, the Shaman King claimed the souls of their ancestor gave him a signal that they are bound to lose the war. But the royal tribe at the time wouldn't give up. Without the support of the shamans, these natives were no match for the empire's magicians and were finally defeated. As you know, the empire forged a blood feud with the prairie natives in that war! But instead of pushing their hate on the Shaman King that gave such an odd order, these fanatics turned their focus on the prairie king instead! After the war, the guy was ripped apart by his very own people!"

Du Wei can't help but whisper a word: "That crazy?!"

Longbottom sighs: "When I was in the Northwest, I also had the chance to see the blood skull flag. At the time, I deliberately provoked two tribes to fight each other. In that battle, more than 20,000 people were going at with blood shot eyes..... In the end, someone came over with that flag and announced the Shaman King forbids the battle. Even in the midst of battle, these blood crazed people abandoned their weapons and just bowed there on the ground like they were enchanted or something. After retreating, these two tribes never once provoked each other!"

It was at this moment, the other sides horsemen parted aside to let three people come out on horseback. The one leading in front was holding the blood skull flag and the two old timers behind had long braided beards.....

The weird shape was very interesting in Du Wei's eyes, but Longbottom's expression immediately went dark when he saw them: "These guys are shamans!"

Shaman?

Du Wei came down with interest as he carefully observed the two bald grandpas'. Other than the colorful fur coat and long beard, he really can't see anything special about the two.

Coming up to Du Wei with 20 meters between them, the fighter holding the flag was very rude in his words: "The other side is to listen up! While in front of the Blood Skull Flag, none is to block its path! Anyone daring enough to defy the Shaman King will face disaster, you people understand!"

Longbottom sneers loudly: "Who the hell are you and what tribe are you from?!"

The Prairie man puffed his chest and said: "I am the royal courts golden sword fighter!"

"Royal tribe?" Longbottom sneers: "Royal tribe? Which tribe is the Royal family now? Humph, you people are getting too arrogant! Back in the days, even the prairie king has to be polite to me when speaking! Get someone with status over here then talk!"

The Prairie warrior was furious: "Who are you? How dare you insult me!"

Longbottom sneers again. Turning around, he gave one of his subordinates an eye: "Do you see? They have the Blood Skull Flag so fly my banner!"

One of the guy behind Longbottom laughed out as he took off his helmet. From it, this guy took out a flag with a sword and helmet embroidered on it. Then picking up a spear, he raised the flag into the air.

Sure enough, the prairie warrior immediately turned pale the moment he saw it. Unlike before, his tone became much more respectful: "You... You are lord Mossad?"

"That's right, it's I!" Longbottom grins menacingly: "Go find someone who is qualified to talk!"

No longer daring to say anything else, this guy gave Longbottom a deep glance: "Since lord Mossad is back in the Northwest, I'll go back to ask the shamans to come forward."

With that, he raised the flag and turned back.

Longbottom smiles as he looked at Du Wei: “Boss, my banner is not bad, right? A sword on the left and a helmet on the right. In the prairie, a helmet represents friendship and a sword represents an enemy. The meaning behind it is to tell the foe that they to choose, be my friend or be my enemy!”

Du Wei nods with a pleasing laugh, “A very good choice.”

At this time, the Prairie is already talking with the shamans in the back. Giving each other a look, the two shamans began riding over.

“I like to ask which is lord Mossad?” The bald old guy on the left spoke first.

In the face of a Shaman, Longbottom’s attitude became much better that he even made a greeting bow:

“I’m Longbottom. Respected shaman, please state your purpose here. I need an explanation for why your army is in the empire’s territory.”

“Lord Mossad, first of all, I like to express my respect for you. Even in the prairie, you are a famous character.”

The shaman faintly smiles: “As for why we are here is because we gained general Rugaard’s permission to enter these lands. All these brave warriors you see behind me are here to protect us in our mission to carry out the Shaman King’s order.”

“Oh?” Longbottom flinched: “The Shaman King’s direct order?”

“Yes.” The attitude of this shaman may seem amiable, but his tone was firm: “Our great Shaman King’s favorite pet had wandered off and is currently hiding in this village. It’s a very precious demon beast so I’ve been given order to get it back at any cost. After scouring for clues, we are certain its hiding somewhere around here. So please, move aside and let us conduct a search.”

The Shaman King’s pets?

Du Wei immediately thought of the strange red haired Monster in the farmhouse.

But... ... Make way and let them search?

Though this shaman was very polite in his attitude, but Du Wei’s temper said otherwise!

This is my fucking land! You say you want to search then you can search?  
Where's the law in that?

Shaman King? Is the Shaman King really that great?!!



# Chapter 213 “The World!” (Part One)

Move, or not to move, this is the question put before him.

The shaman’s tone of voice may sound polite, but from their words, he can smell a faint scent of arrogance.

Move aside so they can search?

This is my land, my territory! You want to search my land by just flinging your Shaman King’s command?

Based on what?

Logically, it would be wiser to not clash with the Shaman King and his followers, but things isn’t that simple.

He’s only just arrived in the Northwest and they expect him to yield in front of all his men? That’s nothing but humiliation!

If word spread of this incident, he can expect his fame to be swept under the rug for being the lord of this land. This place is the Northwest, a land of predators where only the strong survives. If you take a step back, your foes will take two steps forward.

Thinking of this, Du Wei suddenly came down with a thought.

The Northwestern Army! What a good Northwestern army!

What a good warlord!

Charged with the task of guarding the empire’s frontier, they have the nerve to so casually let hostile forces enter their own territory! And damn those checkpoint soldiers in the corridor! They didn’t even send him a message!

The doings of the Northwestern army made Du Wei exceptionally angry.

What use is there for such an army!!

Looking at how gloomy Du Wei’s face became, Longbottom can already guess the young Duke was thinking: “Boss.....”

“General Longbottom, what’d you have in mind?” Du Wei narrows his eyes.

“Boss, as long as you give the order, we will charge out. Though they outnumber us, but my men are no pushovers!” Of course, Longbottom isn’t always so reckless: “The situation may not look very good, but this is our land. At the very least, we can push them back.”

Du Wei nods in understanding. Thinking it over for a second, he then cried out at the two shamans: “Dear shamans, I would like to ask you two a question.”

“Oh?” The two shamans glanced at each other. The one that spoke earlier slightly frowned as he looked at Longbottom: “Lord Mossad, I like to ask who this is?”

Longbottom was about to speak when Du Wei interrupted him: “I’m the aid of Duke Tulip, the lord of this Desa Province.”

Both shaman nods in understanding.

Du Wei’s word did not arouse suspicion because he never did like wearing the gorgeous looking clothes of an aristocrat.

“If so, I like to ask.” His words were aimed at both shamans.

“I like to ask. “Du Wei straightens his back and raised his voice: “At this moment, the soil you are stepping on, is it the land of the Roland Empire or the prairies?!”

“.....” The two were silent.

“I like to ask!” Du Wei’s voice became even louder: “At this moment, is the master of this land your Shaman King, or Duke Tulip!”

“.....”

“I like to ask! Is the flag waving on this land the Blood Skull banner, or is it our flaming Tulip!?!”

Du Wei’s booming voice echoed through the air, and the knights that came with him instinctively straightened their body.

Both frowning, the two shamans looked at each other for a moment until one of them spoke in a serious voice: “Young man, i like to know why you would refuse the mighty Shaman King’s command.”

Du Wei smiles coldly: “I’m sorry. You mentioned the word ‘command’. I’m a citizen of the empire! I don’t believe the Shaman King has any right to give me any command!”

The Shaman that asked turned someone green on his face. Just as he was about to get angry, the less impulsive guy came forward: “Young man, I think you are taking this matter too seriously. This is just a request proposed by the great Shaman King..... If you accept, you will receive the Shaman King’s friendship, isn’t that enough?”

“Friendship?” Du Wei raises his voice again: “May I ask, if one day our Duke loses his pet and runs off to demand a search in your land, would you consider it an act of friendship?”

The more ill-tempered shaman shouts out in anger: “Ignorant boy! How can your Duke be compared to the great Shaman King!”

“Is it?!” Du Wei laughs. Then turning to point at the knights behind Longbottom, he shouts: “I ask you, whose warriors are you!”

A thousand people shouted in unison: “Tulip!!!!”

“Tell me, who do you swear your allegiance!”

“Tulip!!!”

Du Wei nods as he sneered at the watching shaman: “Mr. Shaman, I heard that even in the prairies, the act of respect is also considered a virtue! I’ll tell you now; our Duke will never make such impolite words like you so did.”

The calm Shaman smiles he took over: “Young man, please forgive my partner’s tongue.

I of course heard of Duke Tulip’s prestige. He is your country’s youngest genius and also an outstanding magician. Even in the prairie, the tales of his miracles are far and wide, especially the story of him building a city in three months. We mean no disrespect, but we’ve been given explicit orders to find the Shaman king’s pet. So please, we can’t go back empty handed.”

“If So, let’s have his lordship come make the decision.” Du Wei slowly speaks his next words for all to hear: “The only master of this land, Duke Tulip! Luckily,

his lordship is also present here today. I must go ask for his decision.”

With that, Du Wei gave no second glance at the two shamans as he turned back to his people.

Watching how the kid before them was moving away, the two shamans can only frown because they never expected to encounter such a large force in this remote little town. Above all else, this force is led by the infamous General Longbottom and the Duke himself!

Longbottom and his people may not know what the hell Du Wei was up to, but they all knew the young Duke likes to scheme, so they naturally kept their mouths shut.

While Longbottom and his men faced off against the enemy, Du Wei was running back into the village. Outside the farmhouse where a hundred of his guards were located, the first person Du Wei looked for was Sandia: “Hurry Sandia, take off your clothes! Fast!”

Sandia was stunned by the request, but Du Wei didn’t care. In his impatient state, he reached out and began unbuttoning the kid’s cloth without permission.

It was at this moment that Sandia came back to reality, “My lord!.....” He cries out in shock.

“Quick! There’s no time to explain. Listen to me while you take them off.”

Rummaging through his storage ring, Du Wei took out a set of clothes and some decorations befitting a aristocrat. Aside from making Sandia wear all this, he also tidied up the kid’s hair to make him look totally like a noble.

Carefully looking over Sandia, he then took out another black cape – this is a reformed version of his black mage robe. Aside from this, Du Wei also called over Ziggy, the leader of the students, and asked him to hand over his staff to Sandia.

(Note: Staff and wand in chinese is the exact same word, there’s no distinction for it so you will see me changing it up depending on the situation)

As he fiddled around to help Sandia put everything on, the poor kid was

dumbfounded by Du Wei's hyper fast explanation. He was reluctant to wear such luxurious things, but he didn't have the nerve to refuse.

Sandia's true age is slightly smaller than Du Wei's actual age, but after dressing up he didn't look too far off. Besides, the kid has already been in the Northwest for quite some time so his body is much stronger than before. Though Du Wei had plenty of students to help him, but they are all from the military. Their age is certainly more of a match for Du Wei, but after so many days of training, the air around these people is too soldier like. This leaves Sandia. Not only is his age passable, the kid also knows etiquette, something very much lacking in everyone else present.

"In a bit, you only need to follow through with my instructions."

After Du Wei finished giving his orders, he swiftly ran into the farmhouse.

Inside the farmhouse, the red hair monster is still guarding by Muse's side. The kid didn't look as scared as before, but he definitely looked more pitiful with strands of straws mixed in with his hair.

Du Wei didn't have any more patient to spend on the kid, instead, he directly went for the monster: "Listen up, I know you are the Shaman King's pet, right?"

The Monster nodded.

"They came for you and are just outside. But you don't want to go back to them, right?"

The Monster immediately shook his head very hard, seemingly full of determination.

"If you want to get away today then you can only choose to believe in me." Du Wei quickly said, "I'll give you two choices: either you kill my friend now and you break out of here, Even if you could get past me, I know you won't be able to get past the shamans outside! The second choice is you release my friend right now and I help you hide."

Moments later, the two shamans from the Prairie finally gets their chance to meet the famed Duke Tulip.

This "Duke" is exactly like the rumors. Rather than calling him a teenager, its

better to call him a kid.

As the two Shamans glanced at each other, both of them can see the disdain in each other's eyes.

Nevertheless, the demeanor of this young Duke is befitting that of someone in great power, especially the black cloak and walnut tree staff in his hand. Seeing the symbol of a grand magician, even the two shamans didn't dare act arrogantly.

After all, the destructive powers of the Roland Empire's magicians are something very much ingrained in the prairie shamans.

Whether in respect to a magician, or the identity of this distinguished nobility, the two still reluctantly dismounted to perform a greeting bow to the newcomer.

"Duke" The two were quite nonchalant in their smiles.

"Dear guests." This Duke spoke in a smooth and calm tone: "I'm very surprised by your sudden visit. However, through my tolerance and mercy, I will forgive your lack of etiquette. Aside from this, I also want your guarantee that such rude behavior will not happen again. You know, even if a noble lord wants to visit a friend, they must still first gain the person's permission. Personally, I hold great respect towards your Shaman King, but under imperial decree, I cannot allow your army into the village. However, as a gesture of friendship to the Shaman King, I can make an exception for this one time....." Under Du Wei's order, counterfeit Sandia did not give any room for the other side to speak: "I will permit you two to bring your personal attendants to look around town for your lost pet. But according to imperial decree, your attendants cannot exceed ten people. Also, after you finish your search, I must ask you to immediately return to the prairies! Otherwise, I must consider your move as a provocation to the empire."

With that, Sandia also didn't give any chance for more words as he turned and walked back into town.

Du Wei was standing on the side the entire time. Sneering inside, he looked at the gloomy faced shamans before him: "Please, this way."

This is the best and only solution Du Wei can come up with at the moment.

No too hard or too soft, just enough so both sides come out without losing.

Du Wei's decision seems to be right because the other side also doesn't intend to have a falling out with the empire just yet.

Though the two Shamans were somewhat displeased, but they can only quietly accept the Duke's decision.

## Chapter 213 “The World!” (Part Two)

Very quickly, they chose ten elite warriors to accompany them into the village.

Without any suspense or thrill, their efforts naturally yielded nothing in this quaint little village.

The reason is because Du Wei already hid the two monsters inside his storage ring. Despite the extensive search made by the shamans, they simply couldn't find any traces of their target. In their endeavor, the two even brought out something that drew great interest from Du Wei.

It is a a tortoise shell. Like a divination, they threw several irregularly shaped bones inside and chanted a few words he couldn't understand.

At the time Du Wei was quite nervous, but from their disappointed eyes, it would seem the divination failed.

Like this, the disgruntled party and the 3,000 horsemen withdrew from the village. In addition, Du Wei also instructed Longbottom to send out 100 men to “escort” these barbarians out of his territory. Naturally, the escort party kept a hundred meters in distance from their guests.

Regarding this move, the prairie wolves were very upset, but under the direct order of their shamans, they had no choice but to swallow this indignation.

After leaving Cow Tongue Village, the two shamans were riding on steadily on their mounts when they halted their group. Turning back to peer over at the distant village, one of the guy said to his partner: “What do you think of this Duke Tulip?”

“Humph, just a child.” The ill-tempered Shaman said this with disdain in his voice.

“That's right.” The calm Shaman smiles:” Indeed, while the rumors are strong, he's really not much after meeting him today.....” He then paused before sighing: “But that aid of his.,,,, Strong willed and thorough, quite an outstanding guy!”



Watching these prairie wolves leave, Du Wei's face showed no signs of easing down. Instead, his expression became even gloomier as he ordered: "We're going back to Loulan City!"

Aside from hiding the two monsters inside his storage ring, he also thoroughly taught this brat a good lesson. Right now, Muse can only stand from afar, too afraid to say a single word.

Once they were on the road, Du Wei gestured for Muse to come next to him: "Come here!"

The kid seems to be afraid of him from the careful manner he moved: "You..... What do you want?"

"Humph! Did you forget my words? You should be calling me 'Lord'!" Du Wei lightly spoke: "While you're here, you are no longer the young master of the Lister Household! You are merely one of my subjects! If you can't remember this, you can expect more suffering in the future."

With his face flustered, Muse grits his teeth to squeeze out these words, "Yes..... Lord!"

"Better." Du Wei lets out a deep breath: "Mount your horse, we're going back."

At this moment, Du Wei's face was suddenly full of fatigue.

Watching Du Wei's expression, Muse couldn't help but wonder: is there anything else that could possibly annoy this wicked person? A evil guy like him.....

Without words, Du Wei mounted his horse and kept his head down like he was lost in thought.

Though Muse hated the guts out of him, he simply found himself unable to resist peeking at Du Wei's back.

After a long time like this, about 10 miles of travel, Du Wei suddenly turned to glance at Muse: "You've been watching me?"

Caught off guard, Muse quickly shook his in a startled manner.

Seeing this, Du Wei lets out a slight smirk: "Don't den

y it; I can already guess you were secretly cursing me. You must have thought if could grab a dagger and stab me in the back while I'm not paying attention, you would right?"

Muse went completely white on his face because he really did have such thoughts a while back. However, that crazy idea was quickly dismissed by him after getting his head together.

This guy..... Is certainly a devil! Otherwise, how could he have read my mind?

Du Wei gently smiles, his face with a hint of calm like: "Muses, do you hate because I gave you a beating earlier? But then, do you know why I beat you?"

Muse kept his mouth shut and didn't reply.

"Because you're stupid." Du Wei held nothing back in his words: "Because of your foolish behavior. If you were to come into harm while under my care, not only will your family be faced with tones of trouble, there will also be lots of people dying because of you. So then, are you not stupid or what?"

Muse once again blushed but didn't speak.

"You can hate or do whatever you like." Du Wei sneers: "It's just that I don't understand why you hate me so much? It seems from the beginning when we first met, you were already very unfriendly towards me."

While Muse shrinks his head down in shame, Du Wei paused for a while before speaking up again: "is it because of your sisters?"

Muse answer in a low resenting voice. "..... Yes, that's right."

After a while, he suddenly looked up at Du Wei: "I hate you because I know big sis wants you to marry Angel! I hate aristocrats like you. In the past, big sis was forced to marry that old geezer for the sake of the family, but I know she was never happy at all! Luckily the bastard died early! But now you've shown up.... I think you are also a jerk! I don't want Angel to follow in my sister's footstep and marry a hypocrisy noble like you! You bastards only know how to cover my family's wealth and use us for you own gains!"

"But you are also using me." Du Wei slowly speaks: "Doesn't your sister also want to use my position?"

“.....” Muse grits his teeth.

“So like I said, you are very stupid.” Du Wei light spoke: “Fortunately you’re still young, even god will sometimes forgive the misgivings of a young person.”

“God?” Muse was startled.

Du Wei realized he made a mistake so he quickly covered it up: “Oh, he’s just an old bastard, don’t think too much of it.”

(The human of this world only believes in the goddess of light, so what Du Wei just said here is like calling out Jesus in front of someone that’s never heard of it.)

He then looks at the muse as he spoke in a stern voice: “You stupidity lies in your actions. Despite the fact that your little stunts can’t make a single difference, yet you kept going at it and caused things to worsen..... Tell me; is this not stupidity or what? A smart person will think of ways to send the matter down a direction that they want. And you..... Haha.”

Muse grunted: “What about you? Why did you refuse Angel? Did you really set your eyes on my big sis?”

“HA HA HA HA ... ..” Du Wei laughs out at the sky. Only after a good while did he stop to face Muse: “Pitiful boy, you really are pitiful. Do you really think I am like everyone else that can only eye your family’s wealth? In fact, do you think everyone is like you imagined”

Muse seems to have been bearing his thoughts, but now, he finally couldn’t keep it in anymore: “You.... What do you want? You refused Angel, but then at the part you invited my big sis! My big sis.... What do you want with her, you devil!!”

Du Wei eyes turns cold again: “You probably forgot my orders again, right?”

Muse seems to be afraid of Du Wei’s eyes. Shrinking his body, his head bowed down again.

Du Wei did not get angry, instead, he lets out a small breath: “Yes.... What is it that I really want?”

When he first crossed over to this world, his mind was still confused.

Regarding this kind of confusion, one couldn't relate to it unless they experienced it themselves.

Before he came into this world, he did have some idea of this from the novels he read.

However, experiencing it and reading about it is completely different.

The third-rate novels would always write how the MC would accept reality after a brief period and how beautiful their life would become.....

What Bullshit!

An adult..... No, even if it's just a person who just turned 18, that person would still have many ties left in that world like: careers, life's goal, or love relationships!

Ok, even if they don't have a lover, then there's still their parents. Mother and father, the important people that cared and raised them from infancy!

What does crossing over represents? It stands for a hand that wiped away all that you have without any way for you to resist!

All that you have struggled for, all the sweat and tears you gave, everything that you earned from the grounds up is taken from you. What kind of sick jokes is that!

The emotions you once held is nothing but an illusion, an empty casket if you will!

Those shitty third rate novel, the moment the MC crossed over, they will cling to their parents and completely forget their former parents.....

To say it bluntly... .. Bull shit! They have no conscious and are heartless fucks!

What is it that Du Wei really wants?

Truthfully speaking: If! If he can! If the heavens suddenly said you can go back, he will without hesitation give up everything in this world and go back! Screw the bullshit prophecy!

And if he can't go back?

Then Du Wei's goals can only take his second option: He wants to live a life in

comfort where he can be free to what he liked.

Thinking of this, Du Wei suddenly began to laugh.

The smile on his face was truly sincere when he uttered this single word:

“Freedom.”

“What?” Muse seems to have trouble hearing Du Wei’s word.

“It’s freedom.” Du Wei’s voice is very calm: “What I want is freedom. I want to live a peaceful life of freedom where there isn’t too much stress.”

“..... So ... .. Simple?” Muse shocking watched this highly favored Duke of the empire. Even an idiot knows the future of this guy is limitless.... Yet, he only wants freedom?

“Are you still not free enough?” Muse mockingly asks.

“You don’t understand. ” Du Wei shakes his head.

Free? Can this world really let him be free?

He played the fool back then is because he didn’t want to bare the family burdens. (In Du Wei’s view, what does the family burden have to do with him?) Hence the reason why he would rather be sent back to the Rowling Plains.

In the capital, he would rather offend Prince Son in order to his Raymond’s life. He could have chosen to sit idly by to gain more benefits, but that isn’t what his heart wanted! He only wants to do things he liked..... It’s that simple.

And now, he also rejected the marriage proposal of the Lister household.

“It seems to me my definition of freedom is: allowing me to dominate my decisions in life.”

Muse couldn’t say anything. Perhaps because of his age, he is still too young to understand the meanings behind his word.

“But this goal really is hard to reach.” Du Wei sighs wryly: “This world is like this. Once you are a part of a circle, you will involuntarily be pushed into things you didn’t intend for.....”

“As you are now with your status, is there anyone that could possibly force you into things you didn’t wish for?” Muse puzzlingly asked.

“Is it?” Du Wei smiles: “Here in the Northwest... .. How many people are watching my every move? That governor Bohan couldn’t wait to see me kicked out of the Northwest. Then there’s the prairie wolves! While in this place, I can’t do anything according to my will! My first priority is survival, then I can think of others.”

If I had the strength, would Bohan pick my pocket the moment I arrive?

If I had the strength, would the Northwest army dare come again and again for money? Also, would they have secretly let the prairie wolves into my land?

If I had enough strength, then today I wouldn’t have been bullied right at my doorstep! I would have already gathered my troops and knocked the socks off their asses!!!!

Inwardly, he felt a sense of sadness and mockery at himself. The reason is because his yearning for freedom and his goals had caused a seed of “ambition” to bud inside his heart!

Don’t you think this is a hilarious joke?

For his life, anyone that attempts to block his path will hence forth be my enemy!!

Perhaps the prairie natives should regret now because their actions today had just woken up a confused young man.

Du Wei suddenly came down with interest. Straightening his back, he held his horse whip up and pointed it into the distant wilderness: “Muse, what do you see?”

Muses paused for a second as he looked at the far off distance: “Wasteland? Mount Kilimanjaro? Roads? Woods ... .. What the hell is it?”

Du Wei suddenly smiled as he gently dropped a word before whipping his horse to fly off into the horizon.

# Chapter 214 “Good News And Bad News”

Leaving behind Longbottom and the magic apprentices in the base camp, the day was already dark for the evening when he made his way into Loulan City.

In the courtyard behind the Duke’s castle, Du Wei finally met up with the heavily injured Hussein.

From his appearance, this Saint Knight no longer had any apparent injuries on his body. Though Hussein’s Saint level Dou Qi had the property of healing physical wounds, but that doesn’t mean it’s omnipotent. In order to recoup the blood lost during this ordeal, our saint knight will need to use some indirect means like herbs and medicine.

Watching Hussein’s expression, Du Wei became serious as he gave Old Smoke the order: “Keep watch outside and made sure none is allowed in.”

After saying this, Du Wei ran to Hussein’s side and sat down: “You really brought back some bad news.”

“It is indeed some bad news.” Hussein’s expression was very apathetic.

“Now then, tell me what the hell happened.”

Hussein gently sighs instead of answering directly. From his clothing, he brought out the bag he brought with him to reveal the legendary sword “beauty under the moonlight”.

Du Wei only needed one look to be shocked with surprise: “Why is Rodriguez’s sword in your hand? Can it be you met with that person in the frozen forest?”

Hussein nods: “If not for this guy... .. I’m afraid I wouldn’t have been able to come back alive!”

Afterwards, Hussein began recounting his experience.

A month ago, Hussein was entrusted with a mission to visit the frozen forest by Du Wei. With his great strength, there should have been no need to fear the hostile environment of that place

But as fate would have it, Hussein found some unusual marks when he had just bypassed the circular lake.

“In the beginning, I found the carcass of a dead monster pinned to a tree. It was an ice demon wolf, and from its size, I can speculate it was already nearing its evolution point. I was surprised by this because I was already past the lake, which even the brave mercenaries wouldn’t dare cross. Then after another day, I came across several more monster carcasses, it was earth dragons. (pangolin) You know it too, the scales of an earth dragon is extremely rugged, but from what I saw, the scales were shredded into multiple pieces. This is obviously the work of a powerful warrior. If I had to compare the guy’s skill to my own, I can only at best match him.

Then on the third day, I saw something more interesting: while traveling along the lake’s shore towards the North side, I came across an iceberg in the middle of the lake. Looking through the transparent ice crystal, I was able to see an ice bear frozen inside. From this, I came to the conclusion that the guy responsible for all these killings is very capable in ice attacks.”

“The one responsible is Rodriguez?” Du Wei asked.

“Yes.” Hussein nods, confirmation Du Wei’s speculation.

“How could that guy have ran all the way to the frozen forest?” Du Wei frowned.

Hussein hesitated for a second before slowly speaking his next words: “He went there for us.”

After Rodriguez assisted the crown prince in the coup, he was never seen again. Despite this, his status as a Saint level warrior is forever recognized in this world. Even for our former Holy Knight Hussein, this most wanted man on the continent, he was only rumored to be a Saint Level warrior, but Rodriguez is different. Once he defeated the Grey Robed Sword Saint in front of everyone with his golden Dou Qi, he had since then replaced Hus

sein’s position as the “number one knight” in everyone’s mind.

As a man that should be standing at the epitome of a warrior’s path, Rodriguez’s appearance in the frozen forest should be for Hussein because



what he needs now is a worthy opponent to further his skills.

According to the Temple's information, Hussein's last known location is within the frozen forest.

"You two met?" Du Wei's tone sounded serious.

"That's right." Hussein nods.

"And the result?" Du Wei hurriedly asks.

Hussein appears to go silent like an elusive fox, but afterwards, our usually stern looking knight actually smiled: "You want to ask who won, right?"

Du Wei did not deny this: "Of course I wanted to know. You two are now the most powerful warriors on this continent."

"All right." Nodding, Hussein then seems to downplay his story: "I won, but he also didn't lose."

Du Wei became startled.

"We competed for two rounds." Hussein spoke in a light tone: "He gained the advantage in the first round because he had his "Beauty under the Moonlight". Though I was at a disadvantage, but even then he could not break through my Star Dou Qi. We didn't have the intent to put our life on the line, so we decided to temporarily halt the fight. Then during the second battle, he gave up his advantage of using his "Beauty under the Moonlight", in the end, I beat him."

That's it?

Du Wei would course know that a battle between two Saint Knights aren't as simple as he claimed!

The confrontation between the two most powerful warriors standing at the peak of this continent should have been an exciting and intense battle. It's truly a shame he couldn't witness it in person.

"My shoulder's injury is what he left behind on me." Hussein snorted like it wasn't much of a deal: "But he can forget about fighting anyone in the coming year!"

"Then what about that "Beauty under the Moonlight?" Du Wei frowns.

Hussein did not directly answer the question; instead, he seems to be grinning: “Did you know? You almost lost your life.”

Du Wei became somewhat confused: “What does it have to do with me?”

“After we finished duking it out, we both stepped back because we didn’t want to put our life on the line. To be able to find a rival in this world is a very rare thing. Guess what? He then asked me where he could find me in the future, and I told him I might be in the Northwest..... When he heard this, he looked very surprised. He then explained to me that he was entrusted with a mission by someone to come to the Northwest..... His job is to come help you.”

Du Wei gasped with shock, followed by a look of surprise: “He’s..... coming to help me?”

“I was also quite surprised by this..... He told me he resented you for causing the Crown Prince’s death. Although he already repaid the debt he owed to the Crown Prince, but you did play a key role in the coup, so consider yourself lucky that he didn’t come looking for you afterwards.... Du Wei, remember I wasn’t by your side at the time. With his strength, you wouldn’t have lived even if you had several lives in your pocket.”

Du Wei became speechless.

“Fortunately, he was persuaded by someone to leave you alone. At first, he intended to seek me out in the frozen forest before coming to find you in the Northwest.” Hussein sighs at this point: “The situation deviated a little from target; although our duel didn’t cause any life threatening wounds, but we did get injured from over exhausting ourselves. Fortunately, the treants home isn’t too far away, so I took him to the valley to recover..... It is there where we met the dragon.”

Du Wei’s face sank like was in the deepest part of the ocean: “Could it be that the old dragon went back on his oath and came to settle the old scores?”

Hussein shakes his head: “It wasn’t the old dragon..... But, the dragon that came is not someone I can deal with by myself. Though the guy’s magic power is only average, but his physical body and strength is recognized as the strongest in the dragon clan. I’m sure you remember the stupid dragon standing guard in the mountain, right?”

The stupid Dragon? The guy that was stumped by his silly math problem?

“Indeed, the dragon that came is the very same guy.”

Listening to this, Du Wei was somewhat relieved: “Turns out to be that stupid thing..... Had the Dragon Chief gone crazy? Sending out such a fool!”

Hussein coldly spoke: “He’s not just a simple idiot..... The guy’s magic power may be mediocre, but the sturdiness of his body is not to be taken lightly..... Du Wei, by my estimation, I fear even the old dragon’s body is only so-so in comparison. I even heard that the silly dragon can even rival the dragon chief if they only competed with their physical body.”

“Also.....” Hussein’s face turned very ugly: “The guy told me that the Dragon Chief already made the decision. If anyone manages to take your head, the old lizard will hand over his position to that dragon! For this reason, the three sons of that old snake are already on their way here to seek you out.”

Du Wei started to go numb like the very life is being sucked out of him.

Three Dragon Prince wants to come find him?

The strength of that old dragon is terrifying enough, now there’s three more like him? Oh god.....

“Hold on... .. You said the idiot told you this... .. What purpose does he have in doing so?” Du Wei frowns with suspicion.

“.....” Hussein looked gloomy: “This is the most dangerous part in this matter. The idiot told me he came to seek you out in order to protect you.... The dragon chief’s decision caused quite the stir in the inner workings of the dragon clan. Everyone wanted to take the dragon chief’s position, so they didn’t you to die at the hands of the three dragon prince! Aside from bringing some information about the dragon princes.... I was told that it would be for the best that the three prince don’t come back alive!”

Du Wei’s eye lit up with hope!

“According to the agreement, each prince will meet you separately with a time limit of one month to achieve their goal. If the first guy fails, then the second one can take over. Not surprisingly, the first to come looking for you is

the eldest son of the dragon chief. According to the information, the guy is very skilled in draconic magic while being average in martial arts.”

Du Wei mind started to work overtime: “Oh..... Since someone wants to work together..... ha-ha, then they must have provided the guy’s weakness too, right?”

Hussein suddenly burst out a laugh: “Indeed, he told me the weakness of this dragon prince is.....”

At this moment from within the frozen forest, a tall lean figure stood at the mouth of the treants canyon. With his pale face, he looked towards the south where the vast stretches of snow covered the horizon.

“Teacher Blue Ocean... .. I hope you made the right choice. That Du Wei, can he really change the Northwest?” Rodriguez gently mutters this to himself.

# Chapter 215 “History” (Part One)

Exactly 35 years ago, 925 year of the Imperial calendar, a lot of people might have already forgotten the things that took place in that spring.

In their mindsets, the only memorable aspect would have likely been how late the spring season arrived.

In order to prevent the soldiers from freezing to death during the annual spring drill, the military specially rushed an order of thick coats for the soldiers. After a short period of hard labor, the military workshops barely managed to get the coats to the soldiers in time for the drill.

However, that year’s spring is not as simple as that. Towards the people of the capital, there were many things that took place which would eventually have a great impact on the continent’s future.

Exactly in the spring of that year, his Majesty the Emperor Augustine the 6th officially recognized his eldest son as the Crown Prince. In addition to this, the former chief of the Rowling Household passed away and his son Raymond ends up inheriting his title as Count.

In the midst of the young nobles of the Empire, this 20-year old Raymond is of course a rising star. Whether it is his outstanding martial art skills or foresight in military tactics, everyone that believed in him only had this in their minds: military family Rowling Household once again produced an outstanding chief.

At the same time, this young Raymond’s best friend has just been established as the Crown Prince. One is a promising general of the empire and the other is the future emperor of the empire. Together, who would have ever thought the two would face defeat and one would eventually face death in shame?

During this period, they are still young and full of hope for their future.

Like them that are standing in their golden years is the Lister Household’s chief. By using his wits and charm, this famed handsome gentlemen managed to conquer the entire noble circle within one year. Whether it is: music, art, astronomy, divination, history, or dancing... .. It looked like there was nothing

this Lister chief could not do because even his majesty the Emperor ended up bestowing a knighthood on him.

Though this title cannot be inherited and is of low stature, but since it was from the emperor himself, the status of this Lister chief rose immensely in the ladder.

At the same time, this Mr. Lister is a billionaire with a rich family background. With just these two points, most of the young noble girls were falling heads over heels for this man.

Above all else, the most memorable thing in that year's spring is the rising of Mr. Blue Ocean.

In everyone's mind, about a few years ago, a middle-aged man called Blue Ocean came to the capital. No one knows where this person came from, but he was always in his iconic attire: plain cotton robe with unkempt long hair. Living in the southern sector where civilians liked to gather, he would always walk through the busy streets with a smile.

No matter who you are, even if you're just a bakery owner or a carriage driver, as long as you greet him, he will smile at you and nod.

In the eyes of these civilians, this Mr. Blue Ocean is a well learned man! The reason is because since his arrival in their lives, he had solved many difficult problems for them.

If you are ill and unable to seek a physician, you can find this Mr. Blue Ocean for help. He will concoct a remedy for you using herbs that even professional doctors cannot understand to heal your injuries.

At the beginning, everyone thought this Mr. Blue Ocean was a physician.

Later on when the owner of a neighboring failing grocery store decided to sell their business in order to return to their old home in the countryside, this Blue Ocean only ne

eded one afternoon to go through all the accounts to clear up six years of book keeping.

This time around, everyone thought this Mr. Blue Ocean is an excellent

accounting clerk.

Then later on again, a fur businessman decided to bring his entire inventory out for sun tanning in the yard. Seeing this, Mr. Blue Ocean immediately ran to the guy to warn him about the heavy rain in the coming month; of course, the businessman didn't take the advice because the weather just so happens to be the hottest season of the year.

The result is as Mr. Blue Ocean said. Two days later, the weather turned worse and heavy rain swamped the capital for a whole month without stopping even a day. As such, the fur trader suffered a huge loss in his business.

This time around, everyone thought this Mr. Blue Ocean is probably a fortuneteller.

Subsequently, a seamstress came to him for help after losing the fabric she was supposed to use in an order for a noble lord. Without any difficulty, Mr. Blue Ocean randomly pulled down a curtain and easily created a new gown in a single afternoon. Anyone that saw the robe would instantly compliment how pretty and stylish the robe was.

This time, the citizens were finally shocked with surprise..... Is there anything this Blue Ocean can't do?

Hence his fame started to spread.

A nobleman's gardener accidentally caused his lord's favorite flower to wilt and die. To help the poor guy, Blue Ocean only taught the gardener a few methods. Like a miracle, the wilted flower suddenly resurrected and even bloomed more brightly than before.

A businessman in trafficking animals was cheated by his opponent and ended up buying a thousand bad horses. In the face of a huge loss, he went to ask Blue Ocean for help. There wasn't any immediately solution this time around, but Mr. Blue Ocean picked out two pregnant horses and told the merchant what to do in the future.

As a result, the two pregnant mares actually produced two fine horses! Two years later, the two horses were trained to be first class colts and were then sold for more than what the merchant lost in the first place.

The most amazing event was the story of the thief sneaking into Mr. Blue Ocean's home. Who knows what happened that night, but by daybreak, this thief had already changed into a servant's attire and was then on a faithful servant by Blue Ocean's side till this day.

Blue Ocean's fame began to spread across the capital which caused some of the civilians to ask him to be their children's teacher.

After three years of coming to the capital, this Blue Ocean had already become a well-known scholar. Even though he only lived in the commoner sector and only ate common bread, everyone still respected him and would always greet him as "Sir". Of course, some of the other scholars in the capital didn't take this kindly and thought Blue Ocean's existence is an offense to their own.

Being a scholar, how can they mingle in the common sector? From rumors, this Blue Ocean would just walk out barefooted..... This is just too shameless!

Therefore, a number of scholars began to knock on his door to challenge him in a discussion of knowledge..... But without exception, every troublemaker would leave in shame. Despite this glamorous record, Blue Ocean would always lug around in a rocking chair under the tree in his yard to sun tan.

At this point, his fame began to spread to the ears of some nobles. In the beginning, these nobles believed this Blue Ocean is like those traditional scholars that would suck up to them, but they were wrong!

Whenever he received an invitation from these noblemen's, Blue Ocean would always turn them down.

The move made of his made him out to be called a "country bumpkin" in the eyes of the nobility.

As fate would have it, in the imperial year 925, this Blue Ocean surprised everyone by participating in the annual scholar conference.

This is a gathering of the capital's most famous scholars because it is the perfect opportunity to spread ones fame across the empire.

But this time around, everyone's glamor was overshadowed by Blue Ocean.



In the midst of a large group of scholars dressed in luxurious clothes, Blue Ocean waltz in barefooted without shame. Under the crowd of mocking eyes, he raised three questions.

First question: when a person is first born and is a baby, why aren't they ashamed of themselves? Yet, after growing up, why should they be ashamed of being naked?

The second question, he asked: For a beast's life and a human's life, they only know how to mate, fight, and hunt. If so, what is the difference between the two?

The third problem is even more interesting. He invited the most famous scholar at the time to hold a flower. Then disregarding everyone's surprised look, he picked up the excrement of a cattle and took the flower from the famed scholar's hand and stabbed the flower into the excrement. Letting out a laugh, he asked: "May I know what your thoughts were while the flower was in his hand and in mine?"

This single crazy action caused everyone to be shocked.

Despite gathering nearly every named scholar in the empire, no one present could completely answer Blue Ocean's question.

After a heated discussion, Blue Ocean casually announced his own answer:

First question: He told them the clothing you are wearing is not to hide your body, but your own shame. The reason a baby isn't ashamed of its own naked body is because a baby has no shame.

For the second question, none in the audience can answer it either: the biggest difference between man and beast is the ability to think. We are able to think about this issue here while a beast can't.

For the last question, it was even more interesting. Holding the cow dung in his hand, Blue Ocean then asked the famed scholar what was in his hand.

Using a mocking tone, the famed scholar replied: "I see a cow's dung."

Blue Ocean didn't get angry, instead, he very elegantly said: "I only see the flower that was in your hand."

Just when the famed scholar thought Blue Ocean was about to yield to him, the next words that came out of Blue Ocean left him speechless.

“The reason your eyes can only see a cow’s dung is because your heart is thinking of something dirty. I can see a flower is because my heart is thinking of a flower..... Sir, this is the difference between us.”

Blue Ocean ingeniously used these three issues to deride these hypocritical scholars. The first question is to mock their sense of shame, the second question is to mock their inability to think.... And the last question is to mock their dirty hearts.

After finishing all his words, Blue Ocean left the party with a faint victorious smile.

After only a day, Blue Ocean’s fame became rock solid after leaving a hundred famed scholars speechless. In some cases, those with enough shame even left the capital to never return again.

## Chapter 215 “History” (Part Two)

Exactly on the evening of this year 925 of the imperial calendar, Mr. Blue Ocean was sitting under the tree in his yard sipping tea with his servant (former thief).

At this time, a youngster around ten years old had already stood outside his entrance for the entire afternoon that day.

Though the teenager was very handsome, but his thin stature and dirty clothes showed he was from a poor family. Nonetheless, those eyes of his gave off a sense of pride that could not be covered up by the ragged state he was in.

From noon till night, he never once moved a step, that is until the door leading into the yard opened up for him.

“Mr. Blue Ocean.” The child just stood there at the doorway with his delicate yet firm face: “I request for you to accept me as an apprentice.”

Mr. Blue Ocean only smiled without getting up from his chair. With a cup of tea in his hand, he then noticed the kid’s shoe was already worn out from long use.

“You came from a faraway place?”

“..... Northwest.” The teenager replied: “I traveled for over a month in order to reach the capital. Three days ago when I heard of your name, I feel you can untie the knots in my heart.”

“What is it that you want to get from me?” Blue Ocean became intrigued by the kid’s word.

“Answers.” The teenager’s voice became very low and somber: “Sir, I hear people say you are the most intelligent person in the capital. My family hails from the Desa Province of the Northwest and my great-grandfather was a nobleman there. Both my grandfather and father worked as a blacksmith for the military and from their mouths, they told me the army will protect us. However, my sister and family all died three years ago from an attack made by the prairie natives living there. They disguised themselves as bandits and killed

everyone. During the ordeal, my mother hid me inside the cellar and from there; I heard the pleading cries of my sister. They raped her and insulted her before ending her life. What's more, those beasts even beheaded her and hanged my sister's head against a fence post outside my home. After that, my mother wept for three days and three nights and also died from sadness. Then a year ago, my father also passed away. His parting words were..... 'live on'. Dear sir, for people like me that lives in the Desa Province, is there no way to change our sad fate?"

The voice of the youth became somewhat harsh that even Blue Ocean could not ignore.

From the kid's baggage, he noticed something poking out of it; it looked like a sword.....

After a long time, Blue Ocean lets out a long apologetic sigh: "Boy, I'm very sorry, but towards your question, I'm unable to answer it."

From the kid's childish yet determined face, a trace of deep disappointment appeared for a second. As he was about to turn away, Blue Ocean suddenly called out to him: "Hold on."

As the teenager stopped his footstep, Blue Ocean was already up from his chair. Walking over to the kid's side, he looked straight into the youngster's eye and whispered: "There are some things out there that we cannot answer by just thinking about it..... But that doesn't mean we always have to have an answer before taking action..... In many cases, it's wiser to do first then go back to look at the results. Even if the attempt resulted in a failure, but at the very least we will know it's a method that doesn't work. If everyone is always sitting around thinking about this and that without acti

ng, then we will never have any answers in our lifetime."

After a pause, he slowly says: "I can't give you the answer, but I can help you along the way... .. Child, what do you want to learn?"

"Martial arts!" the teenager's response was very firm without any spec of hesitation.

Blue Ocean smiles: "Martial arts? You know I am a scholar right?"

The teenager was silent like he was somewhat embarrassed and disappointed. However, Blue Ocean only stared at the kid for a while before speaking up again, “Very well, come with me.”

Just as Blue Ocean wanted to turn to go inside, he suddenly asked: “I almost forgot... .. What’s your name?”

“Rodriguez.” The teenager replied: “You can also call me Rodney.”

“Very well Rodriguez.” Blue Ocean gently recites this name in his mind: “I accept you as my first disciples ... .. Also, if nothing else happen, you will also be the only one that inherits my martial skills.”

Following Blue Ocean, Rodriguez went into the house and inside there is another small room.

“This door is never locked.” Blue Ocean laughs: “But, I think you may be the only person to ever go inside other than me.”

Despite how small the room appeared from the outside, the inside didn’t actually look so narrow – clearly Blue Ocean is someone that is very capable in utilizing ones space. More importantly, Rodriguez was surprised to find a drape hanging in there because the letters and symbols inscribed on it is something he would never forget!

“This is ... ..” The teenager’s face suddenly became very strange: “Those are the words of the Prairie barbarians....”

“That’s right.” Blue Ocean stood in front of the kid as he replied in a very calm manner.

“Why do you have this stuff?”

“Because.....” Blue Ocean laughs: “Because I’m a member of the so called ‘prairie barbarians’, if you don’t mind me saying so. I’m not from the empire; I grew up in the prairie.”

Rodriguez’s face quickly darkened as he instinctively took a step back. Carefully observing Blue Ocean, Rodriguez became perplexed by the appearance of the old man before him.

Blue eyed and light skinned, not a single characteristic of this old man gave off

the sign that he carried the blood of the prairie natives.

“Feel surprised?” Blue Ocean smiles: “Maybe in your heart, the so called prairie barbarians are all ruggedly looking people that rides through the land on horseback, right? Then again, how many people really understand what is beyond that piece of grassland?”

Finishing his words, Blue Ocean gently removes the drape to reveal a long box.

“I was born in the Prairie but I’m not a part of the nomadic tribes. At the northern end of that piece of grassland, there is a Snowy Mountain that reaches all the way into the heavens. Standing up there, one can even touch the clouds. It is there and only there where you can find the holy land of all shamans because that is where the ruins of a civilization completely different from the Roland Empire lie. We of the people living up on that mountain is the remnants of that once great civilization.”

Rodriguez became somewhat surprised: “You ... ..”

“No need to show such a face.” Blue Ocean lets out a pitying laugh: “Since the day I left that Snowy Mountain, I was no longer a part of that group. Since long ago, I’ve already come to a conclusion that those on the mountain are all crazy.... Or to be precise, the residual remnants of that crazy blood line. Since the day I left that mountain, I refuse to continue that crazy tradition with those people.”

Finishing his words, Blue Ocean gently opens the blue box to reveal a long slender sword!

After opening the box, a stream of cold air immediately enveloped the entire room! In the face of such intense cold, Rodriguez could not stop his body from shivering. Despite how delicate and beautiful the crystal like sword was, one can see it was extremely sharp!

“The name of this sword is called ‘Beauty under the Moonlight’.” Blue Ocean gently sighs: “Though I don’t believe you are a fit for this sword, but I will temporarily lend it to you. The sword may be powerful, but once you reach a certain level, this sword will become a barrier. The reason is because the sword doesn’t belong to you. It may be able to give you a boost right now, but when

you have truly become strong, you will find that you are unable to release its full power. At that time, it will become a constraint against your growth.”

After a pause, Blue Ocean asked: “Didn’t your father leave you a sword? You can put it in the box here. When the day comes where you can no longer grow, you can come here and reclaim your father’s sword. Once that day comes, I will teach you how to create a sword that binds with your soul to become a sword that truly belongs to you.”

Rodriguez stares intently at the legendary sword before him. Even though he was still young, but he can still sense how extraordinary the sword was: “Sir, whose sword is this? Is it yours?”

“It is mine.” Blue Ocean lets out slight smile: “But I can no longer use it.”

Rodriguez became astonished: “Sir ... .. Can it that you were also once a warrior?”

Revealing a strange expression, Blue Ocean did not immediately answer Rodriguez’s question; instead, he reached out to gently stroke the legendary sword: “I am no longer one now.”

Then he seems to smile but did not: “Anyone that leaves the Snowy Mountain must be willing to give up a part of them..... And what I left behind is my ‘warrior’s soul’.”

Rodriguez became somewhat confused because a youngster like him couldn’t possibly understand something so complex right now. All his attention right now can only be focused on the Beauty under the Moonlight.

The sword is just too beautiful because Rodriguez had never seen such a beautiful sword in his life! Despite its inherent dangerous vibe, the mesmerizing chill it gave off seems to make one involuntary become entranced in all its glory.....

While the kid was still in a stupor over what he was seeing, Blue Ocean had already brought the sword out of the box and handed it over the Rodriguez.

“Using this sword, I’ll teach you a special martial art... .. This martial skill is not easy to learn, especially in the beginning. At first your growth will be exceptionally slow, but as you continue to practice it, you will find it to be

extraordinarily powerful.... So are you willing?"

With the kid's little reply of 'yes', the continent will hence forth gain another powerful expert!

An idiot that took twenty five years to go from level one to three, he will later be known as a genius that reached the height of eighth rank in merely five years after that!

In the spring of the year 925, the emperor Augustine the 6th finally recognized his eldest son as the crown prince and was thought to be the future emperor.

Then after Raymond became the new patriarch of the Rowling Household, our new earl held a party at his new manor. And outside the backdoor of this new found lord is our infamous horse coach Marde dozing off for the night. Still young at this time, Marde was muttering in his sleep: "Damn weather is cold tonight.... Humph, that housekeeper isn't so great..... Watch, one day I will also become a housekeeper....."

At the same time in this night, to everyone's surprise, our Mr. Lister that is worshiped by numerous girls suddenly married a beautiful girl that came from a poor family: "Honey, if we have children in the future, I hope that it will be a beautiful daughter ... .. In memory of our love, I want to name her for your sake... .. Lan Lister."

(Lan in chinese is actually the Magnolia flower.)

Meanwhile at the same time, Augustine the 6th already turned his sight of conquest towards the Northwest. Hanging in the emperor's room is a huge map and the Northwestern corner had a circle drawn around it like a target.....

When all these matters that would affect the future happened all at the same night, our little boy known as Rodriguez finally picked up his sword to behind his life's struggle inside Blue Ocean's home.

"My child, since you have now become my student, then I'm going to tell you my real name." Blue Ocean turns to face this somewhat obsessed kid before him: "Remember this; my real name is Blue Ocean's Moon."

Rodriguez was stunned: " Blue Ocean's Moon? A very strange name."



“It’s not the strangest.” Blue Ocean chuckles for a moment until face turns serious: “I would also like to remind you of one thing. No matter the circumstance, you must firmly bear this in mind!”

“What?”

“Remember a name, and you have to swear to me that no matter the circumstance, you may not become his enemy! The reason is because if there really is a devil in this world, then he will no doubt be the closest thing to it!” Blue Ocean’s expression became exceptionally grim.

“Understood, teacher, please say it.”

“That man is my brother, my real brother. However, I have always felt he should not have been born in this world. God must have made a mistake in making him a human because he is the devil..... The truth is, when I left the Snowy Mountain, he was already designated as the next Shaman King!”

Blue Ocean’s eyes showed a strange flash of light: “Perhaps it was a coincident, or perhaps it was fate, but his name just so happens to form a strange contrast with mine.”

Having said that, this scholar gently sighs: “His name is called..... White River’s Sorrow!”

Following his sigh, Blue Ocean gently dipped his finger into a cup of water. Using the liquid in his hand, our scholar quickly wrote several unknown letters on the box.

Looking at the unknown text, Rodriguez became surprised: “This is.....”

“This is the text on the Snowy Mountain. Compared to the Roland Empire’s text, it is completely different. What I wrote here is his name ‘White River’s Sorrow’. Perhaps within the entire empire, only I would recognize this text.”

Although Blue Ocean is an educated man, but in the end, even he was wrong about the meaning of what he wrote.

Because 35 years later, another person appeared on this continent that could recognize this text.

This is of course ... .. Du Wei!

(dramatic sound: Duh Duh Duhhhh)

# Chapter 216 “Disregard!” (Part One)

Though this red hair monster before Du Wei is ugly, but at the very least it could understand the human language which is not common among demon beasts. Aside from this, the most important aspect is its ability to control other creatures like this fire fox.

At this moment, Du Wei is facing off against this monster in a secret underground room behind the Duke's castle.

This guy seems to be quite afraid of him because the moment Du Wei released the monster from his storage ring, the first reaction it had was to retreat into the safest corner of the room with the fire fox standing guard next to it.

The reason for its reaction is due to fear. It instinctively sensed danger around himself like that of a creature being in the presence of a more advanced foe.

Very soon, our mysterious creature found the source of its fear from a woman standing in the room.

Despite having her eyes closed with a gentle appearance of a young blond lady, our red hair monster instinctively sensed a similar aura like his own extruding out of Nicole.....

“It is peaking at me.” Nicole suddenly speaks up: “I can sense this mental strength snooping around my body. Hmm..... His mental strength is very strange.”

“I think he is an high class demon beast.” Du Wei slowly speaks: “It can drive this fire fox to defend him which is a ability usually only found on advance demon beasts. However, I couldn't find any information on this guy.... So what exactly is he?”

Nicole also shakes her head: “I don't know ... .. But I am sure of this though ... .. He is afraid of us. This kind of self-awareness is a feature only found in those that had evolved to a very high level.”

Du Wei nods in agreement.

Slowly walking up to the creature, he was halted by the fire fox's intervention. With its tense glare, the fire fox stares at Du Wei like he was an enemy.

"I'm not trying to hurt you." Du Wei smiles innocently at the red hair creature: "You understand what I'm saying right? Don't forget it was I who saved you. If not for me, you would have been caught by the Shaman king's henchmen."

Red hair Monster hesitated for a second before nodding. His barbed tongue somehow gave off a picture that could cause anyone to feel nauseated. Fortunately it was being honest and kept its timid self-huddled to a corner of the room.

"Since I saved you, I think you should show some kind of gratitude right?" Du Wei began to sneer because he still hasn't forgotten how this guy threatened him – Du Wei is not the type that forgets something so easily.

"Can you tell me what exactly you are? Hmm, though you can't speak, but can you at least show me what you are good at?" Du Wei stares intently at this thing: "To be able to make the Shaman King go so far for you, you must not be an ordinary monster."

Nicole seems to match Du Wei's word as she took two steps forward.

The fire fox originally had its teeth barred at Du Wei, but with Nicole's approach, the little guy suddenly reacted like a frightened rabbit. Clamping its tail between its legs, the fox huddled its body together and began to shiver uncontrollably.

"His aura is giving me a strange feeling." Standing in front of Du Wei, Nicole gave off a rarely seen frown: "The atmosphere around this thing is making me very uncomfortable..... It's almost like it could harm me.... I don't know what it is, but my instincts can't be wrong."

Du Wei's expression went dark: "Something that can hurt you?"

p>

Queen Medusa could already be called one of the strongest demon beasts in this world, yet this guy is giving off the danger signal to a being that can even petrify a dragon?!?!

The more he learns the more intrigued Du Wei becomes: “What exactly are capable of?”

Red hair Monster nervously stares at Du Wei, its quiet sobbing sounded like it was both warning him and begging for mercy.

“Miss Nicole, are you able to communicate with it?” Du Wei sighs.

“Du Wei, although I am also a demon beast, but I’m just a snake in the end.” Medusa bluntly lectures him: “I don’t know how to communicate with other demon beasts.”

“Then.....” Du Wei thinks for a second: “Maybe you can try attacking it ... .. When it tries to protect itself, it might show off its skill.”

Medusa coldly responds to Du Wei: “You want me to open my eyes? If so, there will only be two results. He will die, or he will resist me and live.”

Du Wei scratches his head annoyingly: “Whatever then ... .. Let’s get someone else here, maybe they will be of some use here.”

His curiosity towards this guy is starting to rise by large margins at this point. To be able to make the Shaman King go through such trouble, this thing is definitely not ordinary..... What’s more, Du Wei couldn’t find any information of this red hair monster even after flipping through all his books.

Can it be a never before seen demon beast?

Aside from inviting Hussein over, Du Wei even brought out our Mouse Prime Minister from his closed door training. Sadly though, both mouse and man couldn’t pinpoint what this creature really is.

Finally, against all expectations, the one to recognize this Red Hair Monster is actually our heavenly beast Mr. QQ..... Talk about leaving someone speechless!

Wriggling his fat body, QQ immediately cried out the moment he enters the room: “Oh god! Du Wei, what did you do!”

This bird that had always poised itself as the most graceful penguin in this world suddenly had his eyes light up like a star. Without thinking twice, QQ dashed towards the red hair monster like how a scrooge just came across a mountain of gold!

As a loyal follower of the red hair monster, the Fire Fox immediately opened its jaw to spew out a blast of flame at the sudden intruder.

Fortunately Du Wei was quick witted enough to snatch our feathered friend away in time, or else, there would be a roast bird for dinner tonight.

“QQ, you recognize this thing?” Du Wei’s once dark expression turned into delight.

QQ danced around with excitement: “Recognize? Oh heavens, you really don’t know what this thing is? Oh god! In Aragon’s era, this baby is something every wizard dreams of finding! Unfortunately, even back then this creature was thought to be nearly instinct.... So where did you get your hands on one?”

Not waiting for Du Wei to reply, QQ quickly rolled his tiny pair of eyes around and began making a “purring” sound from his beak.

This whimpering sound coming out of QQ left Du Wei somewhat dumbfounded. Nevertheless, the red hair monster seems to suddenly have its spirit lifted because it also began to make a purring noise like QQ. The way the two went at it looked like they were both very excited.

What came next is a bizarre scene of a Penguin and a red-hair monster purring back and forth. Before Du Wei knew it, QQ was already drawing up to the red hair monster like they were companions.....

In the end, this red hair creature finally let’s down its wariness and even allowed QQ to pet him with those flappy wings.

“QQ..... You ... ..” Du Wei almost couldn’t get his words out: “You ... .. You can communicate with it? Why didn’t you tell me you are fluent in other languages?”

QQ turns around to sigh at him: “My dear master ... .. This is because you never ask.”

Du Wei suddenly became enraged as he angrily stared at this deceitful penguin: “I didn’t ask you? You sly thing, you eat mine and drink mine, yet you dare hide a card!!!”

QQ gracefully sighs again like he was speaking to an inferior being: “Dear

master, let my conscience be my witness, I never once lie to you. Since you never ask me, what else can I do?”

Du Wei mercilessly stomped his feet with his veins popped: “Okay! Then you tell me now, what other language do you know? Humph, aside from the words left by Aragon and this monster’s language, what else can you do?”

“This one.....” QQ seemed somewhat embarrassed: “Master, the truth is I can communicate with every animal in this world.”

Before Du Wei even had a chance to speak again, Hussein already cut in: “You mean. You are an ‘animal Whisperer’?”

Du Wei can’t even get angry anymore. The only thing he can do now is look at this penguin with eyes full of disbelief and surprise: “Really?”

Animal Whisperers are a legendary entity. From the stories, it is said these people can communicate with any animal regardless of their origin or living environment.

But the problem is ... .. There had never been cases of creatures other than a human being capable of doing this.... Let alone a penguin.

“Enough!” Du Wei waved impatiently: “We will discuss your other secrets later. Right now, tell me exactly what the hell this thing is!”

“This one.....” Noticing Du Wei’s anger, QQ’s voice quickly changed to that of a pleasing tone: “Dear master, I think I need to congratulate you ... .. Before you is a very valuable demon beast. From a certain standpoint, it can be said that this thing is the most valuable demon beast in this world! To be more specific, its ability is unmatched by any other!”

“Oh?” Du Wei was interested now.

“But .....” QQ suddenly changed his words: “it also has another name called ‘the most useless monster’ because other than that one ability, it does not have any other capability. Even as an advanced class demon beast, this thing can only summon one follower to its side. Look, even now it can only summon that single fire fox. For our beautiful Medusa here, she can easily summon a group with ease. The reason for this odd circumstance is because the summoning ability of this red hair creature is the strangest among all demon beasts.”

“Hurry and explain why it is so strange!” Du Wei is starting to get impatient.

“Don’t be in such a hurry, my Lord.” QQ doesn’t dare beat around the bush: “It is exactly this strange summoning ability that makes it so terrifying. Its summoning ability has several characteristics: Firstly, it can only summon one creature to be its follower. Secondly, the summoning is for life! That is, unless the fire fox dies, it will always be this red hair creatures most loyal subordinate. Thirdly, unless its current subordinate dies, it can never use its summoning ability..... Also, it cannot kill its own subordinate!”

Du Wei nods in understanding: “Hmm, in short, while the other high class demon beasts can summon more than one creature to their aid, this red hair creature can only summon a single subordinate with absolute loyalty?” Du Wei wasn’t very satisfied with this result.

“Of course it’s not so simple!” QQ’s voice started to become excited: “If it was only these three points, then it can’t be called the most valuable demon beast in this world! The important factor here is its fourth quality!”

“What?”

“Disregarding all class differences!” QQ used an almost reverent tone when he said this sentence: “Whether it is Queen Medusa or a Wolf King, they can only summon a handful of lower rank demon beast to their side, right?”

Medusa nods in affirmation.

“Then this thing is different! Its summoning ability is able to disregard all class differences!” QQ’s voice became emotional: “In other words, even if it was a dragon..... It must still obediently become this red hair creature’s subordinate!”

Du Wei, Hussein, Gargamel, and even Medusa all had the color of their face change multiple times!!

A summoning capable of disregarding all class differences?!

And faithful to death?

This is simply too horrifying! This isn’t a summoning skill, it’s outright slavery!



## Chapter 216 “Disregard!” (Part Two)

Queen Medusa suddenly took several steps backward like she was very afraid of the thing before her.

QQ gently smiles: “It’s alright Miss Nicole; you don’t have to worry about being called upon. As long as this Fire Fox remains alive, this guy can’t summon another subordinate.”

Afterwards, QQ’s tone began to get serious: “It is precisely because of this strange ability that every magician in our era would so painstakingly seek them out! For a powerful magician, they can form a soul contract with it and once that happens, the individual can even call upon a dragon to do its bidding if the conditions are met.....”

While Du Wei had his jaw drop with disbelief, QQ was slowly sighing: “Master Du Wei, if you are willing, you can immediately sign a soul contract with this guy and make him your pet. At that time, you can tell it to summon a dragon..... Then according to the contract, you will have a dragon at your disposal!”

Hussein suddenly cuts in: “Magicians with Dragon pets isn’t that rare, right?” Du Wei also nodded in agreement. Let’s not forget, even our little Vivian and her sister Joanna are outfitted with dragons.

“If it was just the average dragon then it wouldn’t be much.” QQ shows a look of disdain: “However, according to my knowledge, those mages that is known to have tamed a dragon is only capable of ordering some water or fire dragon..... But then, what about the higher ranked dragons? Back in Aragon’s era, there’s been a rumor that a powerful magician was able to use this guy to summon a mighty gold dragon! Some even said this guy is even capable of calling a divine dragon, of course, this is all based on the assumption that you can even approach a divine dragon.”

Looking at all the shocked expression etched into the faces of everyone in this room, QQ made a lovely smile: “Now then, wouldn’t you consider this guy to be invaluable? The only pitying part is that even back in Aragon’s era, this red hair guy is already rumored to have died out.....”

Du Wei suddenly gasped for a deep breath like he was having trouble breathing: “No wonder ... .. That Shaman King would go through so much trouble to find this guy!”

Gargamel suddenly began to laugh out loud: “It seems you really are in luck this time by having this precious demon beast fall into your hands. Once you sign a soul contract with this guy, you can kill this Fire Fox and go call a dragon to your side!”

Du Wei never was the type to be good, but this time around, his cunning smile looked absolutely insidious.

“You mean ... .. Dragon? Isn’t there a great opportunity just around the corner?!”

Capital of Desa province, Loulan City, also known as the City of Miracles.

Spring of the year 961 is finally here and it is also precisely in this season that this newly built city became vitalized with energy. Through the spreading of its fame, more and more outsiders are beginning to visit this place.

Aside from its location being closer to the frontier and the continuous growth of its population, Loulan city has now become a major focal point in the Northwest trading route between the empire and the prairies.

In particular, the one year tax free benefit set out by Duke Tulip was exceptionally attractive to the passing trade caravans. As the market grew due to the large influx of merchants, the businesses around the city also flourished, especially the pubs around the area.

Adding in Du Wei’s own business, Loulan City soon became an important commercial hub for the frontier.

According to Philip’s calculations, if not for Du Wei tax exception, just a quarter’s tax revenue alone could have brought in 100,000 gold coins.

On this morning in the biggest hotel of Loulan City, an unusual guest made an unexpected appearance. With a hat far higher than that of a magician, the guy’s robe was so long that it was dragging along the floor. For the passersby’s that

saw this strange phenomenon, they wouldn't be able stop themselves from worrying over whether the guy would trip over his own robe.

"Good afternoon Sir." One of the waiters in the hotel immediately walked up to greet the strange person. Although the guest was wearing strange attires, but this is the frontier of the Northwest, what kind of strange people have he not seen yet? With a polite and professional smile, the waiter said: "How may I help you?"

The strange visitor had strange yellow eyes and if one were to take a closer look, the onlooker would undoubtedly gasp a deep breath.... The reason is because unlike an ordinary humans round pupil, this person's pupil was vertical like that of a snake or a reptile.

"I need some wine, the best wine in your cellar." The person's voice sounded a little dry and it was clear he wasn't very familiar with the official language of the empire. However, the Northwest is a place where a lot of people carry a strong accent gather, so it wasn't much of a shock to the waiter. What did surprise the waiter though is the pieces of gold the new guest threw out!

Yes, it's real gold! And not the universally used coins of the Empire, but real gold chunks! Our waiter could hardly believe his eyes as he tightly squeezed the chunks of heavyweight metal in his hand. Just from the weight alone, the waiter can already tell there is at least 10 gold coins worth of gold in his hand!: "Dear guest..... You....."

This strange guest didn't seem to mind at all. What is usually an ordinary face highlighted a peculiar charm when he smiled: "The extra will be your reward..... I'm an outsider and the reason I came here is because of the rumors surrounding this so called city of miracles. Think you can help me resolve some of my curiosity?"

"Of course!" the waiter readily agreed, and his enthusiasm quickly went up 10 fold: "Honored guest, you are not the first foreigner to be interested in this Loulan city. You know, this city was a the result of our lords amazing abilities..... In merely three months, this city was raised from the grounds up. I truly can't think of a proper word to describe how great the Duke is."

The guest only smiled without any signs to give away his thoughts: "Oh, if so...

... I've heard that the Duke conjured up a lot of green giants to help build this city, right?"

"Yes!"

"Can you give me a bit more detail?" The guest seems to be even more interested.

The waiter was somewhat embarrassed. Regarding this topic, he had already boasted about it multiples times over and over again in front of previous guests, yet, in front of this mysterious customer, he had the instinctive feeling that he shouldn't be exaggerating like before.

"This ... .. Dear customer, the event is absolutely true. When the Duke showcased his miraculous powers, he didn't simply just build this city; he also created a harvest miracle. Through that unbelievable harvest, everyone in the Desa Province wouldn't have to worry about their food supply for the entire year. Then there is the magnificent feat of raising this city. The Duke managed to call forth an entire group of green giants to help in the construction. Did you know? A boulder that would usually take 10 hulking strong men to carry can easily be lifted by a single green giant..... My god can you imagine the scene at the time?! From the mouth of a craftsman present that day, he told me he was like in a trance every day because he could hardly believe his eyes!"

The guests nodded: "Those Green Giant, can you explain their features?"

"This ... .. I don't know, after all, I wasn't present there that day. You see, I didn't lie.... But from what others say, these green giants were originally trees in the surrounding environment. Perhaps only the gods would know what kind of magical spell the Duke used to turn those trees into living creatures." After a pause, the waiter suddenly lowered his voice to a whisper," I almost forgot to tell you ... .. I've also heard that during the construction project, the Duke not only raised some Green Giants, I heard the ... .. Duke also conjured up something even more amazing to help."

"Oh?" This guest seemed to be even more intrigued: "What are you implying?"

"I heard it was ... .. Dragons!" The waiter gave a mysterious look.

Upon hearing this word, the guest sparked a subtle anger across his eyes like he was full of disdain towards what the waiter just said: “All right, thank you for your time, but I still have a problem. While I was in town today, I saw a notice at the gate. Can you tell me what is written on it? I’m still not very familiar with your texts yet.”

“Oh! You mean that notice?” The waiter’s spirit suddenly light up again: “That is the current hottest news making the rounds because that is a command issued by the Duke himself. Since three days ago, no vessel is allowed through the lake in the coming month. I heard that the Duke intends to create another miracle! Although we don’t know what it is, but we all know the Duke is not an ordinary person! Right now, everyone is quite eager to see what surprise he will bring us next.”

The guest seemed to sneer at the explanation: “If so, the Duke isn’t in the city at the moment, right?”

“Oh, I heard his lordship left a few days ago and is heading for the lake.”

“Thank you.” The guest stood up and threw several pieces of gold into the waiter’s hand again: “Thank you for your time. From what you told me, I’m even more interest in this Duke of yours.”

Once out of the hotel, the guest turned into a small alleyway to only disappear into thin air without any trace of his existence.

Father warned me to be careful of the powerful people surrounding this Du Wei, especially that Queen Medusa. But now that I’m prepared.... Humph-humph!

Du Wei, your head is mine! I’ll use your head in exchange for the chief’s position!

## Chapter 217 “A Pretentious Prick” (Part One)

Wide and vast, even the light reflecting off the surface is as smooth as satin. No matter where you search in the Desa province, only at this Loulan Lake will one find such attractive greens. Filled with Poplar trees on top and lush shallow grass on the bottom, only here will one not be plagued by the piercing winds of the Northwest.

It was supposed to be nothing but wilderness, yet on this spot; a taste of the southern fertile lands can be felt. Best of all, the large lake is comprised entirely of freshwater and abundant with fish, both a rare commodity in this barren landscape.

However, just a few days ago, an order came down from the Duke himself that none is to fish or sail on this lake in the coming month. Normally what would be a bustling scene of boats moving about is now replaced by a serene and peaceful image that could calm even the hardest of hearts.

Under this blue sky filled with the blazing red evening clouds due to the setting sun, Du Wei is the only person that could be found here.

Floating atop of the lake water, he used ice magic to create a circular ice disk covered in thick leather pads so he could relax on it with ease.

Considering Du Wei's magic ability at the moment, he would normally be unable to pull off such a feat due to his lack of magic powers. Nevertheless, his ability to manipulate magic far exceeds those of his level because of the magic research he stole from the academy. In addition, Alley taught him a magic array that allows him to continuously infuse energy in his spells.

Placed under this ice disk of his is a six pointed star diagram with a magic crystal at each star point. By doing this, a constant stream of magic energy will continuously flow into his little ice island and keep it from melting.

With his black robe fluttering in the wind and the reddish hue of the setting sun, Du Wei looked like someone out of this world. Accompanied by a bottle of fine wine next to his body, anyone seeing this would certainly be envious.

Letting a relieving sigh, Du Wei reached out a hand for the bottle and lets out a satisfying tone as he sipped away at the wine: “Amazing.... Aigh, why didn’t I think of this sooner after coming to the Northwest for so long?”

With that, he suddenly started to rummage through his gown as if searching for something. The reason for this is because he redesigned the storage bag given to him by Gandalf into a pocket for his wizardry robe.....

“Hmm, just like Doraemon.” Du Wei laughs at himself for what he has done.

(Anyone that doesn’t know what Doraemon is can just look at the blue cat picture on my main page)

What he pulled out is an instrument. Spanning a meter in length with 18 strings, the entire body is a dark red shade.

Even if he gathered all the musicians across the continent, it is likely not a single one of them would recognize this thing because the object in his hand is a zither!

This instrument is something Du Wei made by having several luthiers craft it for him. Originally, the Roland continent never had something like this because the majority of the string instruments are only comprised of harps and *etc.* Through his continuous effort in explaining the features of a zither, he finally managed to create three to five models. Out of the batch, he only took the timbre model because he thought it was the most beautiful.

At this moment, Du Wei straightened his back and started to gently caress the strings. Through the movement of his fingers, a series of long notes began to break out into the world.....

In order to explain why he would know how to play this stuff, we would have to go back.

In his previous life, the entrance exams for the educational institutes’ could literally leave anyone speechless. It should have been only a paper exam to test one’s knowledge, but by hiding behind the hollow slogan of “quality education”, the higher ups came up with something called a beauty specialist. If one manages to land such a title, the person in question is rewarded with extra points in the examination process for universities.

(For anyone that doesn't know, entrance exams for universities are done nationwide in china and the points you get decides what grade of universities you are allowed to apply.)

Under this fine-sounding name of “overall development”, the threshold was thus raised even further. For something like music, unless you are placed in the regionals top competition, you can absolutely forget about getting bonus points in your examination results.

Yet, Du Wei just so happens to be an oddity in his past life. Since he was little he was forced to learn the zither by his parents, nonetheless, he inexplicably landed a spot on the top three and was thus awarded bonus points in his overall university entrance scores. Through the extra boost, he even managed to get into a very good university.

It's just that zither's are something too time consuming. Unless you put in the effort, it's impossible to play it well. Despite the elegance of this instrument, there really isn't that many around even in his past life that could truly understand its beauty.

After being forced to learn it since he was small, Du Wei never really went back to it after his university years..... The reason for this is due to the reception from the girls. Unlike the zither, the playboys in his class only need to learn the guitar for a few days before running off to impress the girls in his dorm. Worst of all, these guys would even be rewarded with a ‘flirtatious scholar’ name, so how can Du Wei put up with such humiliation?

Have you ever seen someone standing outside a girl's dorm playing a zither?

Of course not!

If he really did such an outlandish move, others might really call him an idiot.

Its true Du Wei held some hate towards the zither, but even so, during New Year and other festivals, he would still bring it out to practice once in a while. He may have been forced to learn it, but this habit has already become an undeniable part of his life.

So why did Du Wei suddenly revisit this part of his life and go through so much trouble? The answer is simple: the first dragon that's supposed to be



coming for him is on its way!

According to the news brought back by Hussein, this eldest son of the dragon patriarch is equipped with immense magical talents and is well versed in draconic magic. However, his weakness is actually very easy to spot and that is:

He's pretentious.

Pretending to be something you are not is fine if you can pull it off, but if you don't do it well, then you are nothing but a pretentious prick.

Despite his many merits and great lineage, this dragon prince seems to be extremely obsessed with music. From rumor, he even copied his father and quietly sneaked into the human world. Visiting every famed musician he can find, this dragon became fluent in just about every instrument there is in existence. In particular, he is exceptionally skilled with the strings.

The Prince's fascination with music can be regarded as an anecdote within the dragon tribe and is even said that music is his life. Humans and dragons are biologically different because humans are born with five fingers while ordinary dragons like the green and red variants, only have two claws at best. Even for the dragon king known as the gold specie, they only have four claws! Yet fate likes to play games. In music, four fingers just so happens to be the perfect number to play the harp.

From what is known, the dragon tribe is stuck guarding the north from the exiled races because they are being punished by god. Whenever a member of the exiled races attempt to cross over into the south, the outcome would always result in bloodshed.

In the midst all the death and cold, this dragon prince somehow perceived a glimmer of understanding that only he can grasp. Due to this, he would often sit on top of the iron mountain and look towards the south as he played the harp. Entranced by his music, his peers eventually gave him a nickname "King of the harp".

Among the Dragon race, this eight-fingered harp king is not an entity that would make every dragon yield, but he most certain can earn their respect.

## Chapter 217 “A Pretentious Prick” (Part Two)

Under the setting sun, Du Wei closed his eyes like he was in deep thought for a good while. Then without any sign, his hands began to move to create a fluttering flurry of melodies.....

After years of not playing, he would of course be a little rusty. Even so, it didn't take long for him to pick it all up again. With each pluck, pinch, glide, hook, and roll, the stirring sounds of the instrument in his hand began to waft out into the whistling wind. Neither too harsh nor too soft, anyone that listens to this unique melody would secretly begin to get excited!

This song “Fighting Typhoon” is one of the top ten classics and is also one of Du Wei's favorite tunes. Unlike most songs played on the zither, this tune is more befitting the harsh landscape in the Northwest.

Continuing at this momentum, Du Wei only stopped when he finally finished the last note with a hooking motion of his finger. Like a general at war, Du Wei lets out a powerful laugh as he gulped down a mouthful of wine: “Since a guest is here, why not speak up? Or is it because my music is too hard on the ears that you won't talk?”

This small little question seemed like an understatement, but it is at this moment about 10 meters away, the space in front of Du Wei began to twist apart. Slowly, a figure emerged from the distortion. With a faint surprise on this visitor's face, this newcomer's voice sounded like he couldn't believe what he was seeing: “Eh? To be able to see through my draconic stealth spell, your dukeship sure is amazing.”

Du Wei's face remains unchanged at the sudden remark, but his eyes gave off a strange subtle complexion.

The hell ... .. You really thought I could see through your stealth spell?

Du Wei began to laugh inside at the outcome.

The truth is he never had such abilities; he's only putting on an act.

Unlike the artistic and elegantly cool look he gave off, Du Wei had already sat

here on this ice block for three full days and night. Inwardly, Du Wei was screaming torture!

By now, the frost chilly under his butt had long numbed his lower half. If this dragon continues to delay his arrival.... Du Wei fears his anus will really grow some boils at this rate!

As for how he saw through the dragon's stealth, it's all nonsense!

The truth is Du Wei would sit on this ice block and play the zither numerous times. Every time he did, he would recite the same enigmatic speech. If he had to count the number of times he did this little show, it would already be in the hundreds.

Sure enough, Du Wei finally succeeded!

"This young Duke ... .. Is not so simple!" This is the first impression Du Wei gave the dragon prince.

"What is the instrument in your hand and how come I've never seen it before?" The Dragon Prince earnestly eyes the zither in Du Wei's hand.

Du Wei makes a charismatic smile like he was a true artist: "Just a little toy I made to amuse myself. What do you think, is it acceptable for the ears?"

The Dragon Prince's face became startled.

He made it?"

With his interest in music, this dragon prince can't be fooled. Whether is it the movement of the fingers or the melody of Du Wei's music, everything about it has already matured to the point of being a unique entity.

And everything was created by this kid? Even for a music genius like him, known as the most talented dragon musician, he could hardly be compared to this youngster!!

Du Wei's ass is already frozen, but his face remains unchanged and kept up with that fake smile of his. Then out of nowhere,

he gently laughs and made one powerful stroke on the strings to create a short but warlike hum: "Oh respectful guest's movement is hard to catch, but your murderous gaze cannot be concealed from the melody....."

With that, Du Wei suddenly jumped up and pulled out a long sword from his magic pouch.

Dragon Prince grimly smiles. Despite seeing the sword in Du Wei's hand, this dragon prince did not take it to heart because even if an army shows up, it is nothing but a blimp in this dragon's eyes. Yet, this music addict couldn't help but feel slightly disappointed.....

Dragon Prince: Aigh, such tolerance and temperament. When he unintentionally heard this "Fighting Typhoon" song while secretly lurking nearby, he couldn't stop his heart from aching with a sense of loss.

Although Du Wei's skill with the zither is already quite rusty, but the song he played just now is considered a masterpiece of the classics, more importantly, the zither is something this world has never seen before. Therefore, even this music crazed dragon can be so easily mesmerized by his performance.

"This youngster may be an enemy, but such character and style...." Even for a dragon like him that has lived for over 300 years, he couldn't help but loosen his hostility by a few notches.

Yet, after only a few words, this Duke can so easily ruin the mood with that sword. Inwardly, this dragon prince was frowning with disappointment: "And here I thought he was better than this. No matter. This way around, I won't feel so guilty about taking his life."

His facial expression changed to show a faint spec of killing intent. However, just when he wanted to speak, Du Wei suddenly raised that sword of his.....

Click!!!!

After a cold swift slash, the once beautiful zither is now broken into two pieces. Letting out a sigh, Du Wei then threw the broken instrument into the Lake.....

Seeing this, Dragon Prince became surprised and anxiously asked: "What are you doing, how can you so crudely destroy such a magical musical instrument?!"

Instead of rushing his answer, Du Wei turned around and responded in a cool manner: "Music is like the heart. If tainted with a stain, it will lose its clarity.....

Aigh, my instrument may be good, but it was dirtied by your murderous aura, so how can it ever make a good sound again?!"

Once he heard the youngster's word, Dragon Prince turned ghastly pale like he had committed the greatest sin in history. With shame in his eyes, all his senses of wanting to kill this young Duke is now completely evaporated....

Compared to him ... .. What am I?

Unlike the miserable thoughts running through the Dragon Prince, Du Wei was in fact laughing through the roof: "Oh Dragon prince, i got you now! HAHA?"

## Chapter 218 “Take A Guess.”

With his hands clapped around his back, Du Wei got up without facing the Dragon Prince. Like this, he was wide open for an attack from the behind because the distance between the two is only 10 meters. With the strength of this dragon, it would undoubtedly only require a single strike to take his life.

But facing Du Wei's charm and artistic style, Dragon Prince couldn't help but feel too humbled to do such a despicable act.

Compared to the elegance of this young Duke, his own action thus far is too murky. Then thinking about how he caused the destruction of such a fine instrument, the Dragon Prince's heart began to ache uncontrollably.

Unable to bare it, Dragon Prince made a deep apologetic bow: “Duke, because of my arrival, I've ruined your precious instrument. I am truly and deeply sorry..... Please excuse me.”

Well, this Dragon Prince really is someone of fine taste. After being fooled by Du Wei, all his will of completing this mission is now all but dead.

Aigh, what's so great about being the chief ... .. I don't care. It's such a shame this person is the enemy of our dragon clan. Even if I don't harm him, he will still die by my brothers hands.... What a shame!

Thinking of this, Dragon Prince wanted to leave with a dismal expression on his face. Despite being the eldest among the dragon princes, the character of this dragon is that of a free soul, a mere title of chief cannot shackle his will.

Just as he was about to leave, Du Wei suddenly stopped him with a shout: “Honorable guest, hold on.”

“Eh?” Dragon Prince turns around to face Du Wei.

With the same pretentious smile: “You think you can just walk away like that after ruining such a fine instrument?”

His sentence truly is ridiculous to the core. It was he who took the sword out, it was he who smashed the instrument into pieces, so how can he so

shamelessly blame it on the dragon prince?

Yet, it is exactly this type of personality that the Dragon Prince accepts!

(Talk about it nonsense much?)

Once he heard this, the Dragon Prince became utterly ashamed: “This.....”

“Humph” Du Wei seems to smile but did not: “You intentionally hid yourself to observe me, and there’s the killing intent coming off your body.... I’m guessing you came here with ulterior motives today, right?!”

Unable to retort, Dragon Prince could only mutter his next reply: “Then what should I do? I have some treasures on me right now, why don’t I give them to you as compensation?”

Finishing his words, Dragon Prince then pulls out a “longan” sized jewel that extruded a slight fluctuation of energy.

Note: Longban is a fruit commonly found in china.

“This is a water repellant bead.” Dragon Prince whispers, “I got this after slaying a giant turtle 200 years ago in the Eastern Sea. This type of giant turtle is one of the largest creatures in the sea and in order to produce such a bead inside its body, the creature must have lived over 3,000 years. While you are in the water, you can forcefully push the water aside to create a space devoid of liquid. If your magic is strong enough, you can even have tens of thousands of people travel with you under the sea. As for the value of this thing, even I don’t know. However, while I was traveling around the world 300 years ago, one of the humans I had dealings with offered me millions of gold coins to purchase it off me. Of course, I refused him.....”

Not waiting for the Dragon Prince to finish his words, Du Wei already cut in with a cold mocking laugh: “Are you

here to insult me, or to insult yourself?! Whatever, although you were eavesdropping on me with ill intent, but I thought you were better than this since you were able to understand my music..... Yet you actually brought out something like this to measure my music? Humph!”

The way Du Wei spoke sounded like there were infinite regrets in his words:

“To an average person, I wouldn’t trade my music even if they offered me immense wealth. But to the right person, I wouldn’t mind gifting it for nothing. Never mind, you can leave! It was my folly to think you are not one of those mundane creatures of this world!”

Despite being accused by Du Wei’s outlandish words, Dragon Prince not only didn’t get angry, he actually felt guilty about his own actions.

That’s right! Such an amazing instrument, how could he have possibly have been so foolish to put a value on it?

Thinking back to the times of how he only had the chance to play his music in front of those dragon warriors up at the mountain, a sense of loneliness began to fill the Dragon Prince’s heart.

And now seeing this human before him, a strong sense of goodwill began to sprout inside at a rapid pace.

Suddenly, Dragon Prince chuckles aloud before speaking in a sincere tone: Duke, you’re right, I’ve offended you!”

With that, Dragon Prince casually tossed the priceless bead into the lake like he was throwing away a piece of trash.

Subsequently, Dragon Prince deeply bows again: “Duke, I won’t hide it from you. I originally came here today with ill intent against you, but now, I no longer have such thoughts. Your character and charisma has deeply impressed me and I’m deeply regretting my actions of ruining your great instrument. In order to show my sincerity, I will do one specific task you ask of me!”

Only like this did Du Wei finally show signs of happiness. Facing the Dragon Prince, he chuckles once and began to pat the leather pads covering the ice block: “It’s rare to find a friend that understands my music. Fortunately there is wine here and with such nice scenery, why don’t you sit down and share a cup with me.... Consider this the compensation to me!”

Hearing this, Dragon Prince began to greatly admire the person in front of him. Gently flying over, he sat down without hesitation and began to dig into the fine wine: “Good wine! From where I’m from, there isn’t a wine comparable to this.”



Then facing Du Wei, he asked with curiosity: “If you knew I wanted to harm you, then why didn’t you use that promise to ask me where I’m from? Aren’t you worried about these things?”

Du Wei was inwardly snickering: I already knew your origin, so why should I ask you dumbass?

Unlike his true thoughts, Du Wei slowly sat down with his head facing the sky: “Look around, a person in this world is like the cloud in the sky. All its actions are beyond its control. Whether it idles or moves will depend entirely on the wind. Humph, you kill me; I kill you, all of this is for the mundane, so what is there to ask?”

With that, Du Wei suddenly turns around with open arms to look at the Dragon Prince, face donning a strange smile: “Look at me, I am a Duke. Not only is the scenery you see around us belongs to me, the entire Northwest is mine! I’m a lord of thousands with absolute authority here, but no matter how glamorous I am right now, none can escape death! Once I’m gone, the vast stretches of land here cannot be taken with me to the coffin! If it’s like this, why don’t I just focus on the immediate gratifications before me?”

At this point, Du Wei lets out a loud HAHA laugh. From the Dragon Prince’s hand, he grabbed hold of the wine bottle and took a sip of the liquid inside: “I don’t care whether you are here to kill me today or not, nor do I care where you are from. I only know you are a bosom friend right now! After drinking this wine, we will go our separate ways. If you want to kill me in the future, then go ahead. Whether you kill me or I kill you, that is for then to decide. I just know right now you are sitting beside me here to share in this bottle of fine wine.”

Impressed by Du Wei’s frank words, the Dragon Prince’s heart began to shake with so much uncertainty that thoughts of aiding Du Wei surfaced in his mind.

Dragons are extremely proud creatures to begin with, so the fact that he can sit next to Du Wei and share in a drink is a miracle in itself. Seeing how the wine in the bottle is coming to an end, a flash of conviction crossed the lizard’s eyes. Without delay, he stood up and slowly spoke: “Duke, even if you don’t ask me, I must say this. After today, you still have a month of security before another enemy shows up. I’m afraid the next one to come see you won’t be so easy to

mingle with!”

Du Wei laughs out loud: “You don’t have to worry, I Du Wei, is not someone so easily bullied. Regarding your goodwill, I have already accepted it!”

Dragon Prince repeatedly shakes his head: “The next one to come find you are certain to be my brother. This brother of mine only cares about the objective when he does things. Hence, the reason why I hate him the most because he doesn’t care what means he use. Since I hit it off with you so well, I cannot watch you die like this..... Let’s do this then, I will stay in the Northwest for the coming days.....”

Regardless of whether Du Wei will accept his gift or not, he pulls out a crystal ball and places it in front of Du Wei: “Duke, you may be a genius among your peers, but my brother isn’t so easy to deal with. He’s well educated in the art of martial skills and is a fierce warrior.... In addition, due to our lineage, he has an advantage over everyone on this continent. As long as you smash this crystal ball to the ground when you meet him, I will know immediately. At that time, it will only take me a short time to get to your side to save your life.”

With that, Dragon Prince stood up and sighed: “I’ve spent most of life up on that mountain and never knew there would be such an amazing person like you. It’s truly a shame I cannot come out often, otherwise, I can share a joyous drink with you more often! Nevertheless, the harvest from this trip is enough to sooth my heart. Even if I return to the mountains, I won’t feel so lonely like before.”

After that statement, Dragon Prince floated up into the sky and transformed into a gigantic gold dragon! Flapping his enormous wings, he began to soar through the sky in the general direction of the North.....

Quietly watching the Dragon Prince disappear before his eyes, Du Wei slowly began to reveal an expression of pity.

It was at this moment, not far from the Lake, several figures slowly emerged from the bushes. Of course, these people are Vivian, Hussein, and Queen Medusa because they are the most powerful people Du Wei had access to right now.

This move of his may be tricky, but there is a risk to it and more importantly,

he's not entirely confident the dragon won't just outright attack him. As insurance, he secretly had these three lie in wait to ambush the enemy if anything happens.

Based on their powers, the dragon shouldn't be able to sense their presence as long as the three didn't move.

Hussein looked confused as he frowned at Du Wei: "Why didn't you make your move? I think the dragon already lost his hostility towards you at that moment. If you brought out that pet of yours, there would have been at least seven to eight chances to pick up this dragon."

Sighing, Du Wei only shakes his head as he raised his head to look up at the sky: "I was only putting on an act, but he is truly a man of fine taste. I may have scammed him into admiring me, but the truth is I admire him even more! Compared to him, it is I who is truly a man of low standing. Anyways, he already left me such a big gift, so let's save the move for the next dragon."

After a pause, Du Wei began to mock himself: "I may not be a good person, but I still have a bottom line."

Hussein also began to admire Du Wei for his words, but after a second, Du Wei's fox tail began to leak out.

Grinning, Du Wei squinted his eyes as he spoke to Hussein: "I say my Saint Knight, you can swim right? I've firmly memorized the spot where the water repellant bead was tossed, if you don't mind, can you go grab it? That baby is worth several millions of gold coins easy!!!!"

Once his words came out, Hussein could not help but roll his eyes back in disbelief.

Unlike Hussein, Vivian still had a pair of innocent eyes as he looked at Du Wei. To her, every move of his is the right one and should be taken for granted.

As for Medusa, even she was sighing in pity. Under the setting sun, this snake woman remains as beautiful as ever even when she shakes her head: "Is this the so called human nature....."

Giving Medusa a glance, he didn't care as he laughed: "Miss Nicole, I promised to teach you human nature when I brought you out of the valley, but

due one reason after another, I didn't have much chance till now. Since there's time today, I will teach you a lesson in human wisdom!"

"What?" As expected, Medusa began to ask.

Du Wei laughs in a he-he manner as he explained: "Don't pretend to be good or pure, if you do, you will either be hit by lightning or be played by others.

Then he paused to let his words sink in: "These words may sound crude and vulgar, but at the same time it's not. The good and pure never have good endings, remember this."

Medusa was expressionless. Who knows if Du Wei's word left her speechless with anger or is it because she really grasped onto something.

As for Vivian, she suddenly asked with a question mark on her head: "Zhuang ... .. Zhuang... .. What does it mean?"

This girl is still young, so she is still too embarrassed to truly utter a vulgar word like "zhuangbi" from her mouth.

Note: zhuangbi is the actual word that is used for pretentious in the previous chapter and this one. Unfortunately, English doesn't have a direct translation for this slang so I can only use the closest word to it.

Du Wei smiles Hey-Heyly as he stroke his chin back and forth. Like a wolf watching little ride riding hood, his eyes circled around Vivian like a prey has just appeared: "My baby, you don't need to know this kind of stuff for now.... If you want to know, I can slowly teach you later on in private."

How can our naïvely innocent Vivian pick up on Du Wei's perverted thoughts? As a reply, she only sweetly smiles with a nod.

Hussein coldly cuts in: "Enough with the nonsense. You have only one month left to prepare for the next one. Do you have any plans?"

Du Wei laughs Hey-Heyly again: "Take a guess."

# Chapter 219 “Provocation”

Despite repeated delays, spring is finally upon the Northwest which signals the start of another busy season drill for the soldiers.

Since the Roland Empire was founded through military strength, it's no surprise that the first emperor Aragon would establish such a rule of enforcing an annual spring drill.

In order to ensure that the Empire's army does not fall into disuse, the imperial army would all go through this each year.

Though this iron clad rule was gradually abandoned after the end of Aragon's era to the point where there are points in history that the imperial army had never done a single exercise in over 10 years, this quickly changed after Augustine the 6th took the throne. Since then, this once long forgotten rule was hence forth strictly enforced.

After all, the Augustine dynasty is only 200 years old and through this period, there had been a number of small scale regional conflicts.

In particular, one really has to thank the current emperor for this. Though Augustine the 6th is more of tyrant than a wise ruler, but at least in his reign, the military showed an unprecedented focus on improving the soldiers' combat capabilities.

Although Augustine the 6th did quite a lot of ridiculous things in his reign like: wasting the empire's resource on a civil war in the Northwest, building a massive fleet to conquer the Southeastern Sea, but it's undeniable that thanks to his effort, the average fighting strength of the army is by far the strongest in the past hundred years.

With the first gust of spring breeze, the great army of the imperial empire begins to march!

Through the provincial decree set out by the wartime period, the two provinces in the Northwest naturally falls under the rule of the Northwestern Army. Despite the fact that they no longer takes order from central command,

the Northwestern Army never once abandoned the tedious task of going through the spring drill.

What's more, this annual spring drill is a perfect opportunity for the Northwestern Army to showcase their might. By putting up a tough stance, not only can they deter the central command from making any rash decisions, it can also act as a political chip when negotiating. As such, the Northwestern Army would always send out their most powerful and highly trained units during this mobilization.

Of course, this is also to guard against the central command in case there are any worrying movements.

Worth mentioning is that during this exercise, the central command would also pay particularly more attention to the Northwestern army's movement.

Who wouldn't be worried when a 200,000 strong army marches at your doorstep?!

Hence the reason why the imperial high command would mobilize large numbers of royal elite guards to the bordering province in the west – this acts as insurance in case the Northwestern Army truly rebels.

Likewise, the Northwestern Army would also do the same and station their strongest unit in the Nuling Province. On the surface, they are training, but in reality, they are there to confront the royal guards in case the high command takes this opportunity to enter the Northwest.

For the Northwestern army, the annual spring drill may be a worrisome matter, but over the years, things have always been at a stalemate due to the indecision of the high command.

Over the years, the aggressive and non-aggressive parties in the capital have been arguing about this matter over and over again.

Those in the aggressive camp are usually the newly appointed generals. In order to protect the authoritarian rule of the empire, these young generals would always advocate that the answer to solving the crisi

s in the Northwest is through the use of force.

Although the non-aggressive party can be quite hateful at times, one can't blame them. Among these people, there are many that truly cared for the wellbeing of the empire. In their argument, they analyzed the current financial situation of the empire and came to several conclusions:

One being the empire barely manages to subdue the Northwestern Army. If that does come to pass, the natives living in the prairie will take this chance to invade the empire. At that time, where will the empire get more troops to fend off those hundreds of thousands of prairie wolves?

Another scenario is that the prairie natives don't take this chance to invade..... Then the problem left is the troops, where are they going to get so many soldiers? The best choice would naturally fall upon the capital defense garrison stationed in the capital. In theory, the capital's regiment, formerly known as the 'Thorn Flower Regiment', should be more than adequate in going up against the Northwestern army in terms of equipment, but what about after the war? After solving the problem in the Northwest, the military might of the emperor would become unstable. At that time, there's no guarantee the other army corps like the Northern Army stationed at the frozen forest wouldn't rebel? Even if that doesn't happen, what about the powerful lords scattered across the empire?

There's no such thing as a gun in this world, but the people of this world at least know a regime is only as good as their biggest weapon.

If the central high command becomes weak due to the civil war, the situation may become lethal when another problem arises, hence the reason why the soft stance against the Northwestern Army.

Unlike the problem faced by the lords in the capital, this occasion is actually a great opportunity for Northwestern Army to reap more benefits:

The iron clad rule of the Empire states: during the annual spring drill, the resources used can be directly taken from the local government. Afterwards, the local cities will be compensated through the yearly funding allocation.

Regarding this issue, Governor Bohan did have quite the headache when coming up with a solution. Nevertheless, after thinking it through, he came up with the perfect plan of emptying all the warehouses several months prior to the spring drill. This way, the locusts known as the Northwestern Army wouldn't

be able to tap into this resource.

Over the years, the comical act of one hiding and one robbing would always play out several times in the Northwest.

But this year, Du Wei would break this routine!

Under the afternoon sun, the defense garrison of Loulan City is already standing by for orders.

Since yesterday, his lordship the Duke had already handed down the order to limit access to the city by closing the gates completely. Seeing this, the traveling caravans would all make a detour to the nearby towns to replenish their supplies before moving on.

But for those unwilling to take the detour, they would take refuge in some of the nearby villages.

When an overcasting shadow slowly appeared over the horizon, the soldiers standing guard on top of the wall was soon hit by an intense thundering sound of galloping horses.

For those veteran soldiers atop of the wall, it didn't take much for them to estimate the number of riders coming their way. With no less than 20,000, the other party is like a tidal wave charging towards the city like an unstoppable force. Forget the overbearing atmosphere the enemy gave off, just the dust alone is enough to block off the entire sky behind them!

In merely a short period of time, the large number of cavalry riders was already at the city front with only a mile of land between Du Wei's forces.

Unlike the regular soldiers of the empire, these riders were all outfitted with black armors etched with a insignia representing the Northwestern Army. Looking at the banner, this 20,000 strong force should be a complete cavalry unit.

Despite being in such close vicinity to the city, these soldiers showed no signs of relenting; instead, they were blatantly organizing themselves into attack formation!

Within this unit, the blowing of horns were endless with no end in sight. Then



under the instruction of the waving flags, the soldier columns split apart to reform into a siege formation!

Knowing this, someone had already ran into the castle to report this to Du Wei. Despite the urgency outside, Du Wei only replied with “I know”.

The truth is Du Wei’s wrath was boiling over, but he didn’t show it because his anger was being suppressed inside.

As early as three days ago, the Northwestern army had already sent someone over to inform him that they will be using the area around his city to do their spring drill. To top it all off, the messenger uttered this sly remark before he left: “The army will be here in three days.”

Such a move almost made him flip out on the spot, but through sheer will, he managed to suppress it.

Why the third day?

The meaning behind the message is that before he even received the news, the army was already on their way!

The alleged messenger is nothing but a farce. Before the owner even knew, you are already coming. The meaning behind this is simple: you better agree to this, even if you don’t, you still have to agree!!

After listening to the report right now, Du Wei immediately dressed himself to go outside. When he was choosing his outfit, he actually hesitated for a second. The reason is because the outfit he chose is not the magicians robe he usually worn, nor is it the nobles attire he had in his wardrobe, it is a set of armor. Like the overly exaggerated armor worn by Rolynn in the capital, this set of armor can be called luxurious to the extreme, but here’s the important part, it was much more practical for real life combat after making some improvements.

Du Wei is tall to begin with, but due to illness in his childhood, his body looked much frailer compared to other kids. Nevertheless, after practicing the Stars Dou Qi martial movement set, his body has already started to improve a lot over this period.

And now under the effect of this fierce looking armor, our Du Wei here is finally starting to look like a handsome young general like his father once was.

With one order, Du Wei along with Old Smoke and his bodyguards all headed out of the castle for the city gates.

## Chapter 220 “Bottom Line” (Part One)

Standing atop of the city gate, Du Wei peers down at the 20,000 strong enemy regiment. With flags flying everywhere, his hand inherently squeezed tighter against the wall despite having a poker face.

This is provocation, a blatant provocation!!

Since the day he stepped into the Northwest, he already knew he had to grow and one of the things he learned is the different formations used by the army.

With only one look, he can already tell the enemy is blatantly putting up an attack formations for a city siege!

“Dadaneier.” Du Wei suddenly utters this name out.

Dadaneier is standing just behind Du Wei because he is the commander in chief of the city defense garrison. As a former warrior of the Lister Household, how can he restrain the anger swelling up inside his heart? With a face full of anger, he immediately replied with a whisper when he heard Du Wei’s call: “Your honor.”

“Have someone raise the flag and see what they want!” Du Wei coldly snickers.

Not long after the signal was raised, one of the deputy commanders under Dadaneier was already back to make a report: “My Lord, they want us to open the gate and hand over a part of the city wall so they can use it for their training exercise.....”

Without even finishing his words, the messenger found himself unable to speak after seeing how livid Du Wei was.

Du Wei sneers in a “Hey Hey” manner: “Hand over a part of my wall for their exercise? Humph, good! They must want to tear down my wall in the process. What a good army!”

“My Lord ... .. How should we reply?” The Deputy Commander quietly asks.

With a deadpan face, Du Wei coldly said: “Don’t bother with any crap, just

raise the flag and tell them: NO!”

With that, Du Wei left his attendants behind to climb the wall tower.

Northwest Army, do you really think master here is so easily bullied?

Du Wei sneers inside.

You wanted money and food before, fine, I pay. Yet these bastards dare poor salt on my back! If the Northwest Army didn't let those prairie wolves in, how can a thousand strong cavalry unit reach Cow Tongue village?

Testing my bottom line? Fine, I will show you what is called a “bottom line”!

Once inside the defense tower, Du Wei did not show any humility and sat directly in the middle of this quiet meeting room: “Dadaneiers, how much soldiers do we have inside the city?” Du Wei asks Dadaneiers that was sitting across from him.

“A regiment of 4,000 people ... .. Their combat capabilities? The majority of this regiment is made up of the people you freed from Sin City so their capabilities aren't a problem. As for cavalry's..... General Longbottom's regiment is well trained but their numbers were never filled with only 2,000 people. But.....” Dadaneier seems to see through Du Wei's inner temper, so he inherently whispered his next words: “Your honor, if you really want to start a battle, cavalry riders aren't any use in a siege battle. Also, the enemy riders vastly outnumber our own. Even though General Longbottom's warriors are strong, but 2,000 people cannot fend off such numbers.....”

These words may be a bit disrespectful to Longbottom, but this general 250 isn't unreasonable. Despite being in the room the entire time, he managed to keep his silence up till now: “The Northwestern Army may be strong and hard to deal with.... Unfortunately, their numbers aren't little either, but if you give me 2,000 more people, I can bring my people out to raid them before they gain a p

roper foothold outside. After such a long trip from their stronghold, their combat strength is still unstable, so now is the perfect time to strike..... Sir, if you we wait any longer, the battle ahead will become even harder.”

Du Wei suddenly smiles as he looked at Longbottom: “My General ... .. I'm

just asking. Who said we must fight? They are after all an army of the empire. From what I see, they can't afford to actually fight and are only here to threaten us. Other than giving us a hard time, I'm certain they are using this chance to test my bottom line."

Longbottom bellows out a laugh at Du Wei's explanation: "This is only natural ... .. But this time around the Northwest army really went all in. From what I can tell, this 20,000 strong regiment is likely the elite units inside their ranks..... With no reason to be here, they must have another objective!"

This time, Du Wei's current Chief of staff, Philip spoke up instead from the side.

After a year of baptism in this barren landscape, this youngster has now shed away his juvenile temperament from his handsome face and became steadier in his appearance:

"My Lord, I've thought up a possibility."

"Say it!"

"I've heard the Northwestern Army's general Rugaard is a loyal admirer of Marquise Lister..... Just a few days ago, our relationship with the them is still fine, but after your honor's coming of age ceremony, their attitude immediately changed towards us."

The moment this came out, everyone in the room went dead silent. Even though they may laugh and joke during their meetings, but this subject is after all Du Wei's personal matter.

Narrowing his eyes, Du Wei sighs: "Philip, there's a point in what you said. Heh heh ... .. Marquise Lister, you really brought my quite the trouble!"

"This is just one reason." Philip rolls up his sleeves: "My lord, I may not be fluent in military tactics, but even I can see the other party is trying to encircle the city. I'm afraid they won't actually fight. After all, the Northwest Army has no intention of really rebelling against the empire for now, but..... If they can keep us here for a certain amount of time, then it will be a great embarrassment for us! If word spread you were locked inside your own city for ten days, everyone will call you a coward that can only hide like a turtle!"

The moment his words ended, Dadaneier suddenly cried out in anger: “Philip! Who is a coward?! As a aid to his excellency, you dare verbally insult his lordship!”

Instead of getting angry like Dadaneier, Du We only waived a hand to settle his friend down: “Dadaneier, Philip is only making a metaphor, but he does have a point. I highly doubt the Northwestern Army will really besiege us, but if they really do lock us inside our own home for ten days, then I really will lose a lot of face if word spread!” Pausing, he looked at Philip: “Dadaneier is not aiming at you so both of you shouldn’t take things to heart.”

Calm and steady, Philip took one step back and politely replied: “Yes.”

After waving the refusal flag to the Northwester Army, the enemy showed no movements for the next hour. Nevertheless, their ill intent was obvious to everyone.

Although the other party did not directly attack, but soldiers under the Tulip House did not show the slightest sign of letting up!

Despite the Northwest army’s arrogance, all rational indicates they won’t actually rebel. After all, they’ve been good for all these years, so why would they suddenly change out of nowhere? Moreover, the timing isn’t right.

However, the enemy is still outside their gates, so they can’t just overlook such a large force at their doorstep.

As time pass by, all Tulip soldiers were standing by ready for order atop of the city wall. Surprisingly, the only one not keeping busy is Du Wei. Sitting atop of the city gate, he coldly stared down at the enemy army not far outside his capital.

This Cavalry Regiment truly deserves their reputation of being elites. Despite their large numbers, they showed no signs of being disorderly as they quietly confronted Du Wei’s force outside the city grounds.

As the sun reached over the western part of the sky, Old Smoke that was behind Du Wei suddenly turned pale. When this loyal follower wanted to warn his lord, Du Wei was already up from his chair looking out at the far off landscape.....

Over the horizon, a thin continuous black line was dominating the scene. With a thick “clacking” sound, it is the noise of armor scraping against each other.

With large shieldmen in front, Pikemon’s in the back, the main infantry soldiers of the Northwestern Army are following further behind. Then at the very end of this large force is a unit of long bow archers numbering around a thousand strong.....

As the old saying goes, once an army is over ten thousand strong, even the sky will be covered in their might. This lineup is literally the main five elite regiments under the General Ruugard of the Northwestern Army!!

Seeing the arrival of the vast numbers of infantry soldiers, the already arrived cavalry riders standing put outside Loulan City suddenly bellowed out an earth rumbling cheer. Waiving their flags and lances in the air, their voices continuously chanted the slogan: “Long live the Northwestern Army!”

## Chapter 220 “Bottom Line” (Part Two)

Despite the ruckus made by the new arrivals, this large force suddenly went silent upon reaching the outer perimeter of Loulan City.

Like this, the tension between the two opposing forces created a suffocating atmosphere that easily muted the average soldier.

And the side to shatter this awkward silence was indeed the Northwestern Army. Splitting apart in the middle, the archers furthest in the back stepped forward and began drawing their longbows aimed straight at the city wall!

Seeing this, the Tulip defenders standing atop of the ramparts all had their faces turn pale. Regardless of their reaction, they all took haste to man their shields at the order of their commander.

The only one to remain indifferent to all this was Du Wei as he continues to sneer down at the enemy.

Sure enough, these archers lowered their aim away from the main city. Instead, their volley ended up landing around 20 meters away from the city wall. Like a barricade, the ground was thickly dotted with arrows.

Subsequently, as if on purpose, the entirety of the Northwestern Army began to let out an unbridled laugh at Du Wei and his forces up on the wall. Hearing this, everyone except Du Wei became infuriated with anger at the mockery.

Many of these soldiers under Du Wei were supposedly at the top of the pyramid stack, so it's no wonder their pride wouldn't accept such insult especially when they consider the enemy an entity below themselves.

Once the first round of volley landed, the archers retreated to only leave behind a forest of arrows. Then in front of the Tulip defenders, the Northwestern Army began to brazenly dig out trenches and chop down trees to build their camp!

It is also at this moment the Northwestern Army sent out an infuriating flag signal.



When the Deputy Commander under Dadaneier got this message, the guy seemed quite adamant about reporting the message based on how flushed his face was.

“Tell me.” Du Wei waived his hand to indicate it was fine.

Taking a deep breath, this deputy commander grits his teeth: “My lord, they said.....” His voice seems to be mixed with some fury from how hoarse it sounded: “They said.... The third Calvary division and the five infantry regiment of the Northwestern Army are hereby claiming the land outside Loulan City for their annual combat drill. This order shall prevail over any other regulations based upon wartime regulations, and if any local dignitaries or residence of the empire were to disobey this order and impeach upon this area, they will have every right to slay the offender based upon royal decree....”

After hearing this, Du Wei not only didn’t get angry, he even laughed out loud as he pointed at the forest of arrows on the ground: “So they are saying the line of arrows over there is the border for the restricted area..... And unless we quietly stay inside the city, they will kill any one of us if we tried to break out, right?”

“..... Yes, that’s right my Lord.” The face of this deputy commander looked like he was about to bleed blood from how red it looked: “When did we ever take such insults! Your lordship, you only need to give the order and I’ll take my men and charge out!!”

Du Wei only smiled as he patted the shoulder of this officer: “No need to be impatient. They may have the empire’s law on their side, but that doesn’t mean I can’t retaliate. Humph, always playing the wartime regulation hand, do they think I will just put up with it?”

After a pause, Du Wei lets out a slight laugh: “Alright, send the orders out that none are to leave their post and to keep the gates closed

. Didn’t they want to keep us inside? Humph, 20,000 Calvary riders and 20,000 infantry soldiers, fine, they can torture themselves out there if they want!”

Once he said this, Du Wei waved his hand to dismiss the officer.

The others inside the room didn't quite understand the Duke's meaning. In their mind, they were all thinking: "Are we really going to endure this?"

Then again, right after the officer left, Du Wei called for someone to summon the magic apprentices.

As per his instruction, all 28 magic apprentices came before him: "I'm guessing none among you can use a flying spell yet right?" Du Wei casually asks this.

The magic apprentices all looked at each other in confusion. Indeed, they are unable to conjure up a flying spell in their present state.

Du Wei contemplated: "If so, I want you guys to immediately put on your magicians robe.... Once done, go stand atop of the rampart and remember, look as lively as possible, the more striking the better!"

Subsequently, Du Wei called over the leading figures of this internship course – Old Alley's two disciples.

Unlike the bootleg magic apprentices, these two are genuine grey robed magicians of the seventh rank.

Aside from the two, he also called for little Vivian.

"In a little bit, you three don't need to do anything other than hover above the city sky with a flying spell." Du Wei lets out a sinister laugh: "While you're up there, I would ask the two of you good sirs to cast a little light magic. It doesn't need to be anything amazing like an offensive spell, just try to make it as extravagant as possible in order to have a strong impact."

The relationship between Du Wei and these two disciples of Old Alley isn't bad, so it didn't take long for them to agree.

"Vivian." Du Wei took one look at this silly little girl: "Do you know any kind of spell that would look compelling but is in fact harmless? For instance: a bright ball of light or something to scare someone off?"

Vivian nodded, not sure whether if she really understood his meaning: "I ... .. I know a bright blessing spell that can increase the courage of our men while they are within its range, is that ok?"

Du Wei satisfyingly smiles: “Very good!”

Subsequently, three figures began to rise into the sky upon Du Wei’s order – Vivian in the Middle while Old Alley’s two disciples flew by her side.

Under the eyes of tens of thousands of soldiers, the trio gently hovered above the enemy’s head while each wearing their respective robe of grey or white.

Despite her age, Vivian is truly a genuine white-robed Grand Mage, a representation of absolute power that must never be trespassed!

Floating in the air, Vivian gently swirls her hand around in a circle and began to chant her spell. Before long, a golden six pointed star symbol appeared below her feet and from it, the brilliant light it gave off soon enshrouded everything in the near vicinity.

Old Alley’s disciples may be old, but anyone with a brain would get the hint by now. Like Du Wei instructed, the two also began to chant their spells aloud in cooperation with Vivian’s maneuver.

It’s one thing to have a single mage, but to have a few dozen?

Standing atop of the rampart is a full lineup of white robed magic apprentices. Of course, the average soldier in the Northwestern Army doesn’t know they are just there for show, so the presence of these fledglings is like a fierce beast staring down at their miniscule self.

Seeing this scene, the eyes of the generals in the Northwestern Army all showcased a strong sense of surprise!

So many wizards?

Ignoring the three in the air, why is there so many over at the rampart..... One, two, three ... .. ! Why is there so many?!!

At this time, Du Wei already took advantage of this time to call over the soldier in charge of waving the signal flag: “I have something to say to the other side, but the meaning is a bit complicated. I like to know if the flag can help me convey it.”

Watching the Duke, this soldier excitingly replied with a wide grin: “My lord, there’s absolutely no problem!”

“Good!” I say, you convey!” Du Wei turns around.

“To the Northwestern Army: In the name of the imperial magic academy, I hereby claim this land on the basis of the imperial code for the training purposes of the magic apprentices in our custody! Three hours from now, we will be testing a large scale offensive experiment! Anyone nearby is advised to step back in order to avoid the blast! Indicated by the special imperial code for magicians, we are not responsible for any fatalities or injuries caught by this test!!”

Once this message was sent out through the flag, the people over at the Northwestern Army numb with shock!

Large scale magic experiment?

What the hell is this?

From the way it sounds, it seems to be something very dangerous thing.

Looking up at the three soul reapers hovering in the sky, and then glancing up at the line of mages standing atop of the rampart, anyone not mentally challenged would be sweating down to their knees!

Looking down at the enemy, Du Wei coldly laughs inside: “Oh Northwestern Army, didn’t you want to test my bottom line? I fear it’s you that cannot afford to try! Humph, let’s see if you really have the guts to rebel!”

# Chapter 221 “The Length Of A Arrow’s Throw!” (Part One)

Du Wei is gambling!

Gambling the Northwest Army won’t actually rebel in front of him and besiege his capital.

No matter how he looked at, the conditions isn’t right for them to make their move, this is his belief.

But seeing a 40,000 strong army standing at his doorstep, there must be some other reason behind their actions because such a force is already one-fifth of the entire Northwestern Army!

What are they plotting?

By the time the sun reached over the northwestern part of the horizon, the giant army down below finally made their move.

Like workers ants, the soldiers that had just finished assembling their camp began to tear everything apart piece by piece. Then with numerous carts, all the wood that were chopped down from the nearby forest were quickly removed, all the while under the careful protection of an infantry unit standing by to keep Du Wei’s forces from coming out to raid them.

With all the tents removed, a cloud of dust was kicked up by thousands of soldiers as they methodically stepped back.

Seeing this scene, even Du Wei standing atop of the rampart was secretly relieved.

It seems he made the right call with his gamble!

As expected, the Northwestern Army isn’t ordinary. Even with such a large force, their formation was structured and clean as they leisurely organized themselves in their retreat.

It was at this moment, a squad separated from the main body and the one

leading in front is flying a black flag. Embroidered with a gold emblem in the middle, this is the “infamous Gold Fire Black Flag” of the Northwestern Army.

The Northwestern army likes to use black flags for their banner and is even known to have the nickname “black flag army”; however, to be able to hold a gold fire flag, that person should at least be a general in their ranks.

Sure enough, the dozen or so heavily armored riders came right up to the city wall. With the flag bearer in the middle, the rest encircled this person like he was the leader. Before long, a deep voice thundered out from this individual: “Direct subordinate of General Rugaard, Major General Guhuaduoluo of the Northwestern Army, Duke, please respond!”

From his appearance alone, this person should be about 40 years old. Though he looked smart and tough, his long nose was an exception because what should have been a handsome face is ruined by the crooked nose. Then there’s that armor.... Pure black like the night, it’s clearly made out of black iron of extreme purity. Aside from this, the spear he carried behind his back looked like a cross, but unlike the holy relic shape you get from the Christian cross, this spear gave off a reddish hue like it had drank too much blood.

While Du Wei assessed this self-proclaimed Guhuaduoluo person, Longbottom suddenly came up from behind and said: “Humph, it’s this Guhuaduoluo guy again.”

“You know him?” Du Wei smiles surprisingly.

“Of course.” Longbottom licks his lip with his tongue as a gleam of killing intent crossed his eyes: “This guy is one of my old acquaintances! Whenever I return from the prairie with my men years ago, we would always get into trouble with his men. Even if we didn’t fight a hundred times, we must have at least brawled somewhere close to that figure. This guy isn’t much, just very cautious in his methods. Because of this reason, it’s not easy to get any advantage out of him.”

Du Wei laughs with delight: “Oh, he’s a careful type eh? If so, things will be easy then!”

Truthfully, Du Wei was afraid the guy before him is a reckless buffoon that would disregard ev

everything. Since this guy is known to be rational and dispassionate, then things are much simpler to handle.

Standing atop of the city wall, he coughs once to clear his throat before leaning out to peer down at this Guhuaduoluo: “General Guhuaduoluo, I am Du Wei, also known as-Rudolph by my title name.”

Guhuaduoluo looked grim as he gently thumped his chest: “Duke, I’m afraid I cannot properly salute you while on horseback. I’m here to ask your lordship why you decided to choose this land for your experiment despite it already being taken by the Northwestern Army for their annual spring drill..... Although the military and magic academy isn’t part of the same command chain, but we must at least reach to the same conclusion.”

Du Wei lightly spoke his next words: “And General’s meaning is?”

Guhuaduoluo immediately replied: “The annual spring drill is an iron clad rule of the Empire; this part cannot be overridden no matter what! Our Northwestern Army is just following this law. After coming all this way, you can’t expect us to just pack up and leave based on one word from your lordship, right?”

Without even trying to be polite, Du Wei openly reprimanded the guy: “General Guhuaduoluo, you need to be reasonable!! Even if your army traveled from afar, it’s merely eighty something Li from your headquarter to here. Do I need to remind you that the magic academy is in the capital? If your army can’t go back, then do you expect these wizards here pack up their bags and head back to the capital which is hundreds of kilometers away?”

(500 meters = 1 Li)

Guhuaduoluo became speechless.

The status of a Magician in the empire is beyond compare, yet he’s asking dozens of magicians to move aside for his men? Unless it’s absolutely necessary, no one in their right mind would dare go offend a magician, much less 30 something mages.

And ... .. Prior to coming, General Rugaard clearly gave the order not to fight! Especially the “no” word, the general emphasized that part very clearly without

any chance for confusion.

Thinking things over, Guhuaduoluo cries out loudly: “Duke, the Northwestern Army’s already noticed you of our coming three days ago. Though these distinguishes Mages are not subject to imperial law, but there should still be order in who comes first! Such flagrant violation of military regulation just won’t do!”

Instead of playing into the other side’s hand, Du Wei simply became unreasonable as he bellowed out a laugh: “General, I show deep empathy towards your opinion..... But I must make one point clear! I may be the lord of this land, but doesn’t mean I’m confident in ordering these magicians. As you know, magicians are known to act based on their preference and neither do I have the power to constrain them to my will..... Moreover, it doesn’t look like their tempers are exactly on the good side. If we infuriate these esteemed guests and your men end up getting hurt in the process, I can’t shoulder the responsibility. And..... Even if the matter is taken to the court, I highly doubt even the high command back at central will actually go confront the magic union, right?”

Guhuaduoluo is frowning now because he really didn’t know what else to say when this Duke keeps using the “magicians” shield.

After all, if they really end up in a conflict with the magicians, they won’t have anyone to go reason with. It’s well known that even the royal family is unable to suppress the magic union, let alone the Northwest Army. Win or lose, the one to suffer in the end will just be themselves.

Thinking up to here, Guhuaduoluo simply kicked the ball back to Du Wei: “Duke, you are a lord of the empire and the master of this land; above all else, you are also a magician. In this case, what’s your view in solving this problem?”

He’s already made up his mind by now. If this young Duke really keeps using the same excuse and demand his soldiers to retreat, then even if the situation deteriorates into a battle, then so be it!

Du Wei smiles and said, “Since your army already sent an emissary to inform me three days ago, I can’t make things too difficult for you. Let’s do this then. Since I’m a member of the magic society and a dean of the magic academy, I



should also bear some responsibility for this situation. Fine then, I'll give you some face..... My demand isn't too high, as long as your army retreats back to the length of where my arrow lands, then that's good enough!"

The length of a arrow's throw?

Contemplating this idea, Guhuaduoluo is still somewhat skeptical. How far can one arrow be? Even a powerful archer can only shoot a couple of hundred meters at best, so let's not mention the giant military crossbows that can shoot up to 1 kilometer.

General Rugaard's order was just to encircle and not fight, so even if he does move back 1 kilometer, it's not like they can get out even if they fly!

The Northwestern Army is well aware of how many soldiers there are inside Loulan City. At best a few thousand troops, so what can they possibly do, right?

Remembering these points, Guhuaduoluo made a smirking smile: "Alright, let's do as your lordship say! I'll have my men move back 500 meters!"

"Hold on!" Du Wei suddenly exclaimed: "Dear General, I said a arrow's throw. Whether it is more or less, we will have to see after I give it a try. I will personally make the shot and the length of my shot will be the standard!"

Guhuaduoluo is relieved. This Duke may be a powerful Magician ... .. But archery is all about arm strength! It's well known mages are physically weak, so how far can this kid shoot?

It's a shame Though ... .. This General is destined to be eat his words.

# Chapter 221 “The Length Of A Arrow’s Throw!” (Part Two)

After both parties came to an agreement, Du Wei suddenly chuckles sinisterly. Then with a single swing of his body, he jumped atop of the ledge with ease! His martial skills may be average, but he did in fact train his body with the Star Dou Qi martial set for a long time now. Whether it is his flexibility or bodily strength, it is already very good even compared to a skilled master.

Clad in a suit of silver armor and a fluttering red cape etched with the flaming Tulip insignia, it’s truly difficult for anyone to find any fault with Du Wei’s current appearance. Like a knight in shining armor, he only needed to move his hand a little to awe the onlookers with his dashing appearance. Under the guise of a brilliant light from his hand, the form of a peculiar shaped longbow appeared out of thin air!

Looking at the contour of the bow itself, it was similar to that of a crescent moon in the sky. With two transparent crystals embedded on both side, this strange bow even had a set of sharp dagger like barbs at the two corner ends!

This is obviously the Nirvana’s bow that nearly defeated the infamous Green Robed Gandalf back in the coup!

Let’s not mention how gorgeous looking this bow is, just the height of it alone is enough to match Du Wei’s if he stood it upright. For all the onlookers, whether it be friend or foe, they were all astonished by Du Wei’s grand gesture.

Above all else, Guhuaduoluo had his heart sink like something bad is about to happen.

Du Wei wasn’t skilled in archery before, but ever since he got his hand on this amazing bow, even a fool would do everything they can to master it.

What’s more, this Nirvana’s bow is no ordinary weapon. When it comes to archery, the main trait needed to master this skill is sharpness of the eye and arm strength. Yet it just so happens that this bow is a weapon tailored made for magicians. Without any need to rely on arm strength, the user only needs to

control their magic to drive the arrow.....

This being the case, it's perfect for Du Wei since his magic level is already well above the norm!!!

As for sharpness of the eye, it's even easier.... Mages can use "eagle eye" to sharpen their eyesight to the level of a hawk, thus making him a better shooter than any mundane marksman out there.

During this one year in the Northwest, Du Wei had been secretly training with the Nirvana's bow, and now, he finally gets the chance to use it!!

With the bow in hand; Du Wei only needed to lightly tap against the string to stir up the power inside the energy crystals. In a blink of an eye, a subtle silvery arrow appeared on the spot where his hands were.

Just as Du Wei was about to draw the bow, he suddenly lowered it again. Turning his head around, he faced Old Smoke: "Old Smoke!"

"Yes my Lord!" Old Smoke immediately stepped forward.

"Are you brave enough?" Du Wei lightly asks this.

Puffing out his chest, Old Smoke replied without the slightest sign of hesitating: "I am!"

He's someone that already had half his feet in the underworld, what else is there to be afraid of?"

"Good!"

Du Wei laughs out loud with delight. Without any indication, he raised a hand and tore off his cape and tossed it over a spear held by one of his defenders: "Old Smoke, in a little bit, I will make a shot. When I do, you are to take that spear with my cape on it and use it as a marker for where my arrow lands!!"

Old Smoke loudly acknowledges the command. Swiftly moving his legs, he took the spear off the soldier's hand and solemnly stood behind Du Wei.

"General Guhuaduoluo, watch carefully!" Du Wei lets out a cold sneer. Gently lifting one foot up, he suddenly made a 360 degree spin to land atop of the pilaster. Pushing his body backward as he drew the bow, he looked like he was about to lose his balance at any moment.

This move of his truly is difficult to the extreme!

With two fingers hooking onto the string, Du Wei takes in a deep breath.....

Yunnn ! ! ! !

In one loud yunnn, a blinding light from the bow dazzled everyone's sight. Without any chance for others to adapt to the piercing light, a meteoric arrow came flying out of Du Wei's location and into the sky!

With a trailing light tail, this mysterious ball of energy easily bypassed the soldiers down below and into the far off distance.....

Stunned beyond reason, the 40,000 thousand strong army all stood there speechless, unable to believe what they were seeing.....

As for Guhuaduoluo, he can only feel the beads of sweat slowly dripping down his forehead!

This ... .. What kind of bow is this?!

How far did that arrow go? Just thinking of this, Guhuaduoluo realized he didn't even want to go down that path.

Getting off the pilaster with a simple jump, Du Wei casually returned the bow to his storage ring with a simple command. With that done, he turned towards Old Smoke and said: "Old Smoke, go now. Mount your stead and go make my mark!"

Pausing to let his words set in, Du Wei suddenly laughs maliciously:: "My shot is a bit far..... But don't worry. Old Smoke, I will wait for your return before having dinner."

Unlike the happy attitude up top, Guhuaduoluo was in a complete mess when he heard Du Wei's antics.....

Wait for him to come back for dinner?

How fucking far did his shot go?!!!

Subsequently, Du Wei turns around to face Guhuaduoluo that was standing down below. Unlike before, Du Wei's expression this time around wasn't so friendly: "General, a promise is a promise. Please have your men retreat back to

a arrow's length of space!"

Pausing, Du Wei suddenly gave a loud order: "Pass on my order as Dean of the magic academy! In one hour's time, the land ranging from below the city wall to my arrow is marked for indiscriminate assault!!"

When his words went out, it resounded through everyone's ear, especially the last phrase "indiscriminate assault".

Bellowing out two booming laughs, Du Wei walked away without turning back.

Oh Northwest Army, you want to play hard ball with me? Fine, I'll be even more ruthless!

# Chapter 222 “Alpha’s Heart” (Part One)

After drinking a cup of tea, Du Wei gently puffs out a sigh.

Seeing how unhappy Du Wei looked, Philip whispered by his side: “My Lord, are you worried about the Northwestern Army not retreating?”

“Worry?” Du Wei raises an eyebrow at the question: “What is there to worry about? Don’t fret, they are certain to retreat.”

Sure enough, when his words just ended, Dadaneier burst into the room after slamming the door open: “Duke, the enemy is retreating!”

Du Wei nods in acknowledgement: “I understand.”

Subsequently, the guards outside followed in to inform Du Wei that Madam Lister is requesting an audience.

Du Wei was startled. In collaboration with his expression, Philip quickly dodged his head away from Du Wei’s line of sight to leave only him and Dadaneier to the matter.

What’s she doing here?

Du Wei frowned with displeasure because this Marquise truly is a hassle. Since his birthday, this women somehow managed to comfortably settle down in his home without his agreement.

So troublesome..... It’s not like he can just kick them out when the other party didn’t say they want to leave yet.

During the Northwestern Army’s encirclement, Du Wei was even worried that things will get dangerous so he specifically ordered a unit of soldier to standby at the castle for their safety.

Thinking it over, Du Wei can only cave in with a sigh: “Let the Marquise in then.”

Upon hearing this, Philip quickly made himself busy and left the room. While Du Wei had a depressed look on his face, Dadaneier was delightfully smiling the entire time.

It can't be helped. Dadaneier is after all a former retainer of the Lister Household, it's only natural he would root for his former lord and master. It's not like it's a bad marriage arrangement if things does work out, right?

Moreover, the Marquise is the definition of a goddess in this warrior's heart, so everything the Marquise does is the right thing to him.

When the Marquise walked into the room, her eyes showed a blatant concern for Du Wei's wellbeing. From her plain wardrobe alone, it's obvious she came in haste after learning of his return. Despite the lack of accessory and makeup, her face was still as stunning as ever that even Du Wei's heart skipped a beat upon her entry.

And in the back, Angel and muse was following closely behind their elder sister. Angel's face may be showing a hint of apathy, but through Du Wei's sharp sense of observation, he can tell she was forcefully putting up the act due to the constant glances she was giving him.

As for Muse ... .. This kid is now much more honest compared to before after experiencing Du Wei's brutality. With his little head always lowered to the ground, it looked like Muse didn't want to make any eye contact with him.

"Your dukeship..... " Madam Lister gently smiles to show her goodwill: "I've just heard the Northwest Army was trying to besiege the wall and that you even made a personal appearance at the tower. I was so worried about you.... But seeing how good you are now, I'm relieved."

Letting out a Haha laugh, Du Wei replies with haste: "The Marquise is too humorous! The Northwest Army is still a Corp of the empire so why would they make things difficult for me? This is merely the annual spring drill."

Hearing these deceiving words, Madam Lister's face went dark. From her beautiful face, a hint of resentment exuded out of her watery eyes as she whispered her next words: "Dadaneier, could you leave us alon

e for a minute, I have something to say to the Duke in private."

As a former retainer of the Lister Household, Dadaneier naturally complied and made a slight bow before leaving.

With the exit of Dadaneier, the marquise slowly let's out a faint sigh. Anyone

that can have the luxury of listening to this delicate yearning voice would no doubt think of a maiden's cry that could melt a person's heart. Leisurely, she came up to the Du Wei's side and whispered this into his ear: "Duke, are you still putting up a guard against me?"

Du Wei hastily shakes his head in denial: "Don't be silly madam, how can you think like that?"

"Excellency." The Marquise made the resentment in her eyes very clear now: "Do I really need to say it? This occasion of encircling the city is already excessive; in fact, it's only one step away from open rebellion. Anyone that's not blind can easily see you and the Northwest Corp is not of the same mind. So, is this stuff you're spouting a way for you to ease my worry? Or..... Is it to fool me?"

Being stared at by such a stunning beauty is really making Du Wei uncomfortable. If he said he's not tempted right now then he be lying.

Let's say if, if the location and his identity were to be changed, then he would no doubt want to have a go at this ambiguous love game. Indeed, such a rare creature is not something a regular man can resist.

Let's say a one night stand for example; he would undoubtedly break his heads out if that's what it takes to get a chance at her.

However, being captivated by her outer beauty is one thing, but falling in love to the point of marriage is another!

Hesitating slightly, Du Wei sternly spoke his words to build up some courage: "Madam, you're overthinking it. The stuff I said just now is to ease your worry. A mere force like that is not enough to intimidate me. Let's not mention rebellion, they won't even....."

At this point, Du Wei smiles with full confidence in his eyes as he timely tapped the table before him: "Even if it's true they are rebelling, this City of Miracle won't be taken down by merely 40,000 troops. I already have plans in place so Madam, you shouldn't worry."

Compared to his previous unfamiliar tone, his words right now sure is different.



Hearing Du Wei's explanation, Madam Lister immediately went from worry to joy: "Since your lordship have plans in place, then I won't ask for more. It's just that today there were so many startling stories floating around..... If you don't mind....."

Suddenly taking out a strange translucent object from her bosom, Madam Lister gently puts it on his desk: "This thing is an heirloom of my household, but it's nothing extraordinary. I know the night in the Northwest is bitterly cold, so I ask you to always keep it by your side. When you go on patrol around the wall tonight, this will keep the sand and cold from reaching you."

Just as he was about to speak up in protest, Mrs. Lister suddenly cuts in: This is a token of my appreciation, please accept it."

Du Wei originally wanted to push the object back with his hand, but when he did; his hands felt something soft under it. Looking down, he quickly realized it was Mrs. Lister's delicate slender fingers. Creamy and soft, Du Wei involuntary shook his hands backwards at the sensation. What was supposed to be a gesture of rejection has now turned into a motion of acceptance as he pocketed the object: "I will definitely wear it."

Unbeknownst to Mrs. Lister, when she does smile, her face somehow changes to that of a young maiden instead of middle aged woman. Therefore, when she shyly smiled at Du Wei's willingness to take her gift, a halo of girlish charm was oozing out of her pinkish cheeks at that moment.

As for Angel that was standing in the back, she somehow managed to keep her silence through it all by biting her lips. However, she did turn back to give him another glance before leaving.

"Du Wei ... .. Your excellency." Muse was the last to leave, but when he did, he left these words: "Sister and I were watching you from behind when you were up at the rampart."

"Oh?" Du Wei picks his brow up.

"You ... .." Muse hesitated for a tad bit before whispering his words: "You..... The way you shoot is really cool!"

At this point, Muse's eyes suddenly rattled with panic as he hurriedly added in

another sentence: “Ah, hmmm ... .. Angel told me to tell you this.”

With that, he hastily ran out to chase after Angel.

Du Wei sighs heavily .....

Women’s are hard to swallow, but beauties are even harder to digest.....

At his own thought, he pulls out the translucent crystal from his pocket and clasps it in his hands. From it, a slight warmth was slowly flowing through his palms.

## Chapter 222 “Alpha’s Heart” (Part Two)

By nightfall, those down below finally came back with a report that the Northwest Army has retreated to a distance of 10 Li.

(1 Li = 500meters)

The truth of the matter is that the arrow fired by Du Wei is exactly 10 Li’s out, no more no less. Lucky Old Smoke, he was exhilarated by the experience of being pursued by tens of thousands of soldiers.

Prior to this, he truly thought he was dulled to anything that could possibly happen in his life, but this experience has invigorated his pride that he once lost!

Following this young Duke really is sweet!

Now, Du Wei can be certain he has figured out the limit of the Northwest Army.

However, he still doesn’t know what the Northwest Army want. There’s no way they are here just for dinner after traveling so far.

The matter of patrolling the city is not something he’s going to get involved, so his destination for the night is the castle, or to be more precise, the yard in the back of the castle grounds. This is something Du Wei arranged. Exactly like his father’s study room, this place was specifically made to replicate his old home using the same furniture’s.

For this reason, Du Wei made it clear to all personal in the castle that none is to enter this place unless they were explicitly allowed to.

Going into the study room, he lightly closed the door behind him to enter this empty coldness known as his father’s room.

Like he wanted, there are no servants here to cater to his needs. Lighting up a lamp, he then pulled out a bottle of wine from the cabinet and began pouring himself a cup on his father’s desk.

One cup after another, it didn’t take long for him to finish half the bottle. By

now, he can faintly feel his eyes getting heavy as he puts the cup down.

Almost as if it was timed, a gentle knock came from outside the door.

“Come in.” Du Wei said this in a low and tired voice.

With the door pushed open, a warrior disguised in black came in.

What should have been a handsome gentlemen’s face is now marred by several small scars. Despite the blemish, this person not only didn’t lose his charms, he looked manlier than ever.

Of course, the new entry is none other than Alpha.

When he first came into the room, the first thing Alpha noticed is where Du Wei was sitting and the bottle of wine sitting on the desk. To this loyal retainer of the Rowling Household, this image is like a tidal wave of memories blowing through his mind.

Whenever he would finish a mission back in the old days, Raymond would always smile at him like what Du Wei is doing now in the study room and say:

“Well done Alpha, come and have a cup with me.”

Although the person before him today is even higher in status than Raymond  
.....

Although the teenager before him is the flesh and blood of Raymond.....

But Alpha still can’t help but feel a glimmer of sadness from all this.

In fact, ever since he did as Raymond instructed and stayed by Du Wei’s side; he just can’t stop the wavering feeling spinning in his heart.

Du Wei’s Tulip Household may be recognized as the inheritor of the now perished Rowling Household, but to him, a forever loyal retainer of the family, it’s just not the same! He had sworn allegiance to Raymond, and now that even his lord and master have fallen, his soul just feels..... Empty!

“Uncle Alpha.” Du Wei’s smile on his face truly is genuine: “I was just thinking you should be back around this time.”

Alpha’s face was showing signs of fatigue due to the mission he was secretly given. Prior to today’s even

t, Alpha snuck away several days ago and traveled for thousands of miles to scout the terrain. Even with his immense strength, such mileage is enough to even strain an eighth level warrior like him.

“Young master.” Alpha nodded: “I brought back the information you wanted.”

Du Wei’s focus turned serious as he straightened himself.

This uncle Alpha definitely has the skills! Unfortunately, because he is father’s confident for way too long, Alpha wouldn’t be able to become his for real. Therefore, Du Wei can only use him for intelligence gathering in the background.

Besides being extremely tough and strong, his means of doing things are secure and clean like that of a well experienced master. While Alpha was working under his father, this person was in charge of a powerful force in the darkness. For this reason, Du Wei can rest assured whenever he hands a mission over to him.

“Say it.” Du Wei takes in a deep breath.

“I was 300 miles out from the city. From East to West, I made a full circle to assess their movement and noticed they had a secret group mixed in with their main body! Around five to six thousand, these people may have hidden themselves well, but there’s no mistake, the mysterious group is from the prairie.” Alpha explains this seriously.

Du Wei became shocked.

People from the Prairie?

What the hell is the Northwest Army trying to do?!!

“Long before they reached the city, the group separated and into lots of smaller teams. Since I wasn’t able to observe all of them, I only tagged one of their teams and determined they are looking for something!”

Du Wei’s eyes lit up with realization!

“While I was stalking them, I overheard them talking. I may not be very fluent in their language, but I was able to make this much out, their numbers are no less than 10,000! What’s more, one of the guy said as long as the Northwest

Army is trapping us in the city, they can freely search the land!”

Du Wei impatiently asked for more: “Do you know what they are looking for?”

“I don’t know.” Alpha shook his head: “But I vaguely heard them saying something like..... The Shaman King’s command or something.”

Du Wei didn’t want to talk anymore.

The Shaman King’s order?

What, it can’t be they are here to look for that red hair monster, right? Then again, that thing really is invaluable; no wonder the Shaman King is so persistent!

Hey-hey! What a good Northwest Army! Not only did they help outsiders, they even brought them to my doorstep and let them search my place?!

Oh Rugaard ah Rugaard, what benefit did you get to let the enemy the enemy into our border?

Damn traitorous rebels!

If you were to just be your traitorous rebel, I sir here wouldn’t get involved, but you just had to go and do it, you just had to get me involved!

As Du Wei was getting all upset over this, Alpha suddenly whispered, “Young master, if there’s nothing else, I’ll see myself out.”

“Wait!” Du Wei looked up at this veteran that had carried him in his infant years. Pointing to the wine bottle on the table, he smiled and said:

“Well done uncle Alpha, come and have a drink with me.”

With those words, Alpha suddenly shook a bit! From his numbing eyes, a wave of emotions finally flowed out.

# Chapter 223 “Knights Of The White Feather”

## (Part One)

Carrying the glass of wine personally poured by Du Wei, Alpha became a little lost in thought as he watched it.

..... Hmm, have a drink with me.....

Have a drink with me.....

The one that used to pat his shoulder and say these words.... Where is that person now?

Likely back in the Rowling Castle and slowly withering away.....

Yes, that's right.

In the midst of mediocrity, he's withering away like a old man.

When thinking of this, Alpha suddenly had the urge to smash this glass of wine into the ground!

He wanted to laugh, laugh out loud, laugh like a madman!

The mission that he once vowed to protect.... Is no longer around!

The family that he would even sacrifice his life for..... Is also gone!

The one that he offered up his life to serve.... Is also no more!

Also ... .. The one that could once upon a time order him to die with a single command..... He is also not of this world!!

Earl!! Raymond... ..

The you now is probably sitting in the Rowling Castle's study room. With your knees curled up in a blanket and a fire stove in front to keep you warm, the biggest decision to come your way in a day is likely what is for dinner that night or if It will rain tomorrow.....

Hilarious!!!

(Alpha's words)

But the most hilarious part is not just you, but I, Alpha!!

More than 40 years of my life, more than half of my life was contributed to this mission! But in the end .....

I'm still climbing through this mountain ..... But what about you Earl Raymond?

You've left!!

What a joke! What a hilarious joke!!

If so, then what am I? What is I, Alpha worth?

What happened to the young passionate hope you had? Yes, you failed, so you left.

But what about me? Am I able to leave?

At this moment, Alpha's heart felt unusually tired.

Softly sighing, he retracted his staring gaze at the wine cup and juggled it down in one single gulp.

..... So..... Be it.

At his own words, Alpha suddenly raised a smile of self-mockery and fatigue.

I already lost my life's goal, so even I don't truly know what I'm supposed to be doing right now.

The only thing I can do now is continue to carry out the last words given to me by that person before he left, that is until..... I meet my death.

Gently putting the glass down, Alpha nods at Du Wei before trying to take his leave.

"Please wait, uncle Alpha." Du Wei suddenly calls out to the old captain.

Stopped in his steps, Alpha faces Du Wei: "Is there anything else, young master?"

Du Wei takes in a deep breath as he looked at this handsome middle-aged knight. Inwardly, his heart was plagued with unease because from the man's eye, he can see there was an unshakable hollowness..... In fact, there was a hint



of death in the corner!!

“Uncle Alpha.” Coming out from behind the desk, Du Wei walked up to the captain: “I believe we never had a proper chance to have a good talk since we left the capital. I remember back when I still young, you held me.... At that time, you were by far the most powerful warrior that i knew of and the most trusted guardian of the family.”

Somewhat smiling, Alpha replied in a low voice: “Young master..... It was my duty.”

“Can’t be that simple.” Du Wei shakes his head, his voice deep as he spoke: “I know that ever since father

disgracefully retired, you’ve been very depressed ... .. Have you already lost all hope in the family?”

At his question, Alpha remained quiet without saying a word.

Seeing this, Du Wei slowly continued his speech: “Everyone right now calls me ‘Duke Tulip’ to the point where even my name has been changed to ‘Rudolph’ on the official records of the Empire. However..... I there’s one thing I want you to understand, my last name is Rowling! Not ‘Rudolph’!!”

Despite his clear stance, Alpha still didn’t speak.

“Uncle Alpha, I know you’re very disappointed in the family.” Du Wei uses his most sincere voice as he said his next words, “But did you know? I promised my mother that as long as I’m around; I won’t let the Rowling Family line end! Although everyone calls me by ‘Tulip’ or ‘Rudolph’, but I promise you this, one day, I will have the Rowling name stand on top of this continent once again!”

Despite seeing Du Wei’s determination, Alpha’s eyes showed no signs of volatility. Hesitating for a moment, this middle aged knight asked: “Young master, when you first returned to the Rowling Plains, what scene did you see?”

Du Wei became startled at his question.

Right then and there, images from two years ago began to flash across his mind: from how he was casted out of the capital to the celebratory cheers of the family retainers and the escorting Calvary riders.

Remember back then, all the cheering troops had already tossed away their discipline while galloping back and forth between his carriage. It wasn't just the underlings that were like this because even the leading figures only watched it all happen with a genuine smile on their faces!

Everyone was filled with heartfelt pride on their smiling faces, everyone were throwing their hats in the air while they shouted: "Home!! Rowling men are back in their own land!!"

This feeling is a sense of belonging to the family. An honor, a genuine sense of pride burned deep into their blood!

It was to the point that even Marde, this normally low keyed caretaker, would use a seriously stern tone to speak with him: "While we are back at home, you must call yourself a person of the Rowling Plains and not some citizen of the Kurt Province!"

That occasion is the first time Du Wei was shocked in this world and also the first time he was infected by the cheering cries of his homecoming. Listening to the joyous voices from outside the carriage, even his once long dormant emotions began to surge out of his heart at the thing called "home".

All of it, all the glory, all the gathering, all the love, all of it comes from one name:

Rowling!

Think back to that scene, Du Wei suddenly felt like he can relate to Alpha's thought pattern.

"Young master." Alpha whispered, "Maybe you are too young and could not understand the meaning of the Rowling name for our age group. Back when the family first collapsed, the entire plain was filled with cries of weeping and sorrow. Then when the time came for the forceful disbanding of the Rowling army, some of the most loyal of knights went as far as committing suicide, just so they can accompany the family into the coffin."

Du Wei had his jaws dropped because he could not say anything in return.

Alpha gave Du Wei a deep bow, his face full of emotion:

“Perhaps it’s somewhat absurd for me to say this with my status ..... But my heart is like this. In the deepest part of me, I already feel I am a part of the Rowling family..... My father, my grandfather, my great-great grandfather are all loyal members of the Rowling family!! For people like me, I’ve always been taught to be loyal to the family. My mission is to always defend the family honor, even if it means i have to offer up my life and blood! When necessary, I won’t hesitate for a moment when challenging a enemy! My life and family are all intertwined with the family, so much so that even my children and their children will always continue down this path.... But then one day, everything changed! The tie that has kept my life going is suddenly cut apart with a knife! My mission, my glory, my loyalty, everything is wiped away. Young master, my life may have been saved, but my heart is already dead.”

Du Wei only quietly looked at Alpha.

“Though.....” Alpha slowly lets out a long breath:

“Although, young master you are aspiring to revive the family ... .. Though you are a person of the Rowling family, but..... This may be difficult for you to understand. Your title may be higher than that of your forefathers and your influence may supersede them, but..... Forgive my words, in my opinion; you cannot represent the people of the Rowling Plains as you are now.”

“..... Why not?!” Du Wei’s voice became a little hoarse.

“Because your current title is ‘Duke Tulip’ and not ‘Earl Rowling’! Because your territory is the Desa Province and not the Rowling Plains! Because your capital is established next to this Loulan Lake and not next to the Rowling River!” At this part, Alpha held nothing back to deal the final blow: “For an old aristocratic family like the Rowling Household..... Tradition is above all else!”

“But I will do my best to recover it all!” Du Wei clenched his fist tightly: “Someday, I will take back the Rowling Plains! Retake the Rowling River! Re-established the Rowling Army! Uncle Alpha... .. If you fall now, who am I going to look at to help me rebuild? While I may have a lot of men under me now, but the only one that is truly from the Rowling Family is only you!!”

Looking at how Alpha was keeping his silence, Du Wei followed up with another sentence: “... .. Didn’t father task you to stay by my side just so you can

help me one day?”

“Young master!!” Alpha’s eye seem to suddenly burst out in flames..... Is that anger?!

“Young master!” Alpha’s voice seem to suddenly turn cold: “Don’t refer to your father and I because in my mind, the real count Raymond of the Rowling House is dead! The one alive back in the castle is nothing but a husk that has lost its soul!”

Du Wei was astonished. Never in his mind would he think Alpha would hold such resentment towards his father!

He ... .. Isn’t he absolutely faithful to old Raymond?

“... .. Why?” Asked Du Wei.

“Because he’s not brave enough to die, instead, he cowardly survived.” Alpha slowly spoke his words: “With the fall of the family ... .. I rather have the Earl accompany the family into the grave! At that time, I will also follow him into the afterlife. This way, i won’t have to see him slowly wither away into a mediocre old man like he is doing now! When the coup failed, I could have risked my life to escort him out of the capital! Once back in the Rowling Plains, we can reorganize the army and fight another day! But he chose to surrender! He thought he can preserve the family this way and avoid any more bloodshed. Let me tell you, he’s wrong! Raymond is wrong!!”

Alpha’s powerful anger seems to have caused his emotions to run loose because a powerful layer of Dou Qi has emerged around his body: “When we Rowling people lost our soul, lost our honor and dignity..... This humiliation was worst then death!! Raymond was mistaken, he was wrong!!”

Seeing Du Wei’s look of surprise, Alpha reacted like he was stabbed with a deep sense of pain. Converging his body’s focus, the Dou Qi that had leaked out slowly dispersed: “Young master, please forgive my behavior..... I believe in your determination and sincerity, but right now, I just can’t see a single ray of hope!”

“What ... why ... Why no hope?” Du Wei frowned.

“You!” Alpha suddenly sneered: “You’re already a Duke with a province as your territory... .. If so, what excuse are you going to use to take back the

Rowling Plains? Whether it is a regent or an emperor, none will allow their subjects to rule over two territories at once! What is a family? Its land and people! For hundreds of years, how many generations of people have lived in the Rowling Plains? How many of us have grown up drinking the water of the Rowling River? Even if one day you did truly raise the Rowling Flag on top of the Desa Province..... I will still not recognize it as the true Rowling House!! The reason is no other, this land here is not the Rowling Plains, and above all else, the people here is not from the Rowling Plains!!!”

Du Wei was finally defeated.

Giving Du Wei a glance, Alpha suddenly bends down on knee with a hand across his chest: “Young master, I fully understand your ambition, but I really don’t see a glimmer of hope. Maybe your achievements will be far higher than your ancestors and that your name will forever be etched into the history books, but no matter how glorious your deeds are; it cannot hide one fact and that is: the real Rowling Family no longer exists.”

After saying all this, Alpha no longer spoke as he turned around to leave the study room.

# Chapter 223 “Knights Of The White Feather”

## (Part Two)

After a long period of silence, Du Wei finally lets out a deep sigh because he knew the words coming out of Alpha were true.

Even if he did in the future raise the flag in the Northwest..... But can it really be regarded as the Rowling House?

What truly made up the Rowling House is the hundreds of thousands of people living in the Rowling Plains, that is the true Rowling House! Not the Desa Province..... The two cannot be intertwined!

It would appear he had taken his promise of restoring the family honor too lightly... ..

If he wants to truly restore the Rowling House, then he needs to take back the Rowling Plains, take back the hundreds of thousands of real Rowling citizens! ...  
... Ha, as if Prince Son would agree to such arrangements?

For this night is a long one for Du Wei... ..

Despite the setback, Du Wei did not let himself fall into depression because by dawn, he had already livened up his spirit to walk out of the study room.

No matter what the future holds, the problems placed before him now should be his main concern.

40,000 Northwest soldiers are only ten miles away from his city. Then there are the 10,000 Prairie wolves creeping through his territory.

Being a Lord, the Lord of this land, Du Wei cannot allow such a thing to take course!

Convening everyone to the city wall, Du Wei looked out into distant and could easily survey the entire enemy camp with his Eagle eye.

In a single night, the Northwest army managed to finish setting up camp ten miles out.

“Taking advantage of the darkness, I sent some brothers out last night to gather intel on the enemy.” Longbottom curls his lips downward: “Those bastards got even more soldiers again. Last night, large amount of supplies were delivered to the main body along with reinforcements. According to my calculation, the amount should be enough to let 40,000 people eat and drink for a whole month. In other words ... These guys want to trap us inside the city for a whole month.”

Du Wei laughs coldly at this: “They sure placed a big bet!”

Then he declared: “Gentlemen, I have some bad news to announce. I got reliable information that these people are here with ill intent! They want to lock us in here in order to cover up the prairie spies lurking in our land! There are at least 10,000 of them running wild!”

The moment his words rang out, everyone had their face change!

The one to react the quickest is Philip: “My lord! We have to send our troops out as soon as possible! Everyone knows how terrifying the prairie people are. They are a bunch of bloodthirsty wolves! If left unchecked, a pack of wolves like this entering our territory will bring great suffering and losses to the people of Desa Province! Burning, killing, looting, there’s nothing they won’t do!”

“But we don’t have enough forces.” Dadaneier frowned: “Your excellency, are you sure those prairie natives have decentralized their forces? If so, how are we going to find all those bastards when we only have a few thousand men’s here?”

Philip immediately became angry: “Dadaneier! Should we just watch these wolves run wild in our land? The ones to bleed will only be our citizens!!”

Dardanelle immediately argued back: “Sir Philip, that’s not what I meant! It’s just that I’m looking at it from a purely military standpoint. We simply don’t have enough forces to deal with the prairie natives because cavalry riders can only be dealt with cavalry riders, and our cavalry riders...&hel

lip;.”

At this point, he glanced over to Longbottom. The meaning behind his eyes was obvious to everyone: we don’t have a lot of cavalry riders!

For the first time ever, Du Wei started to question Longbottom's recruiting methods. The reason is no other, due to his overly high standards, Du Wei only has around one cavalry regiment for mobilization.

3,000 cavalry riders.

How is that number going to deal with 10,000 prairie wolves? Aside from being outnumbered, the enemy is moving independently in small groups!

Although Du Wei also supported Longbottom's recruitment method before, but..... Isn't the numbers too small? He's already been in the Northwest for over a year, yet, his cavalry regiment only numbers around 3,000 people while his infantry forces is at 16,000.....

"Ahem!!" Longbottom finally coughed up to talk.

The moment his cough came out, everyone nearby went quiet. After all, Longbottom is the only person that truly enrolled in the army. Whether it is Philip or Dadaneier, these two never actually had any real military experience.

"Gentlemen, I think the situation is not as bad as everyone makes it out to be." Longbottom eyes showed a glimmer of hope: "Don't forget, Knight Robert still has two infantry regiments outside!"

Knight Robert is in fact not within Loulan City right now. Being Du Wei's leading general of his infantry forces, Knight Robert nominally has a total of four regiments – 16,000 soldiers – under his command with the strongest standing by in Loulan City.

Then another regiment stationed at the former capital, Anglia City.

The remaining 8,000 people are scattered across the Desa Province to act as the local garrison forces.

Philip knit his brow as he brought his own worries forward: "That is right, but Knight Robert's two infantry regiments are scattered across the land. And ... .. Both regiments are a mix of veterans and recruits, therefore, their fighting capabilities aren't guaranteed. If they were to encounter the enemy without any preparations, they are likely prone to be swallowed up."

"But don't forget ... .. The prairie riders are also separated in their



movements.” Longbottom cries out: “Although they have over 10,000 people, but as long as they are broken up, then they aren’t as terrifying as they can be. Moreover, our troops are stationed across different towns. Based on Knight Robert’s cautionary personality, he would have ordered his men to be extra careful during this period due to Du Wei’s prior warning over the spring drill. Even if the prairie wolves want to attack, I highly doubt they will find much opportunity to sneak a blow to our forces if our men stay within bounds..... Of course, we can’t just sit back over this incident; nevertheless, I also don’t want everyone start assuming the situation is as pessimistic as everyone makes it to be.”

Du Wei pondered for a moment, as the Supreme Leader, he needs to make the final decision: “I trust Knight Robert, he is a trustworthy person. Under his leadership, I believe the prairie wolves won’t be able to get any advantage over him..... Our main concern right now is in finding a way to send our cavalry riders out! Otherwise, the situation will become even more worrisome if time continues to tick.”

Since the Duke made his decision, the following people had nothing else to argue about as they looked towards their lord and master.

“We need a way to get out.” Dadaneier spoke up: “It’s clear the Northwest Army is encircling us! Since they are colluding with the prairie natives, then they aren’t going to let our troops out of their circle. When Longbottom went out to scout last night with his men, the enemy countered with several parties of a thousand strong to keep a wary eye on them. If we were to break out of this, we might have to fight the Northwest Army for once!!!”

Du Wei took one look at the Dadaneier, then at the Longbottom, then at the other leading military officers present. One thing he noticed was their determination and eagerness that was plastered on his men’s faces.

“Fight head on?” Contemplating the idea for a moment, Du Wei was just about to give the order when Philip interjected: “Your excellency, maybe there’s another way.”

“Huh?”

Phillips smiled calmly as he spoke: “My Lord, you forget the Marquise is

currently inside the city. I've heard that General Rugaard is also a faithful admirer of her ladyship! Since this is so, I'm certain the army outside will be quite reluctant in blocking the Lister household's men."

After a pause, Philip grinned wildly: "When her ladyship came to visit this time, she brought with her the 'Knights of the White Feather'!"

Du Wei's eyes lights up with enlightenment.

Philip continues to chuckle: "Considering your friendship with the Marquise, I believe it won't be difficult to borrow the White Feather name from her. The only difficult part of this plan is likely outfitting our forces. As you know, the Knights of the White Feather are famed for their silver armor and white horses. It wouldn't be too hard to find the necessary armors from the warehouse, but the horses will have to be disguised with paint because we simply don't have that many white horses around..... Lastly, we just need you to go borrow the White Feather banner from her ladyship and the plan is a go."

"But ..... The Knights of the White Feather only came with a total of 200 people ..... And, as we all know, their roster only numbers up to 500 people. If we rush out with 3,000 cavalry riders in one go, anyone would know it's a fake." Dadaneier frowned with displeasure.

While Philip only smiled without speaking, Du Wei finished the answer for him: "This is not difficult to overcome! Every knight is allowed to have four squires to accompany him. As long as we keep the number at 800, the enemy won't know if it's true or not even if they investigate. Splitting our 3,000 soldier's apart into four groups, we can then head out in four directions. Humph, even if one group encounters an enemy unit, they won't be able to see through us....."

It's not like this world have telephones or mobile texting! Even if all four groups encountered the enemy, the other party won't be able to reach their allies to realize something was up. By the time they do realize, Du Wei and his forces would be long gone by then.

The only problem is ... .. He's going to owe the Marquise another favor!

As expected, the Marquise easily agreed to Du Wei's request without hesitation. In fact, she even offered to lend him the real 200 Knights of the

White Feather so that he can divide them into four teams. This way around, the chance of them being found out would become even lower.

In addition to this, Mrs. Lister puts forward a little request and that is to let Muse tag along on this trip.

“Muse is after the family heir. With him by your side, even if the army does intercept your group, Muse can step in to help defuse the situation.,,,,,,” At this part, Mrs. Lister curls her lip into a smile: “Even if General Rugaard were to be present, he would still have to give my family some face.”

Thinking over the request, Du Wei knows that it will be slightly inconvenient with the kid tagging along, but whatever.....! As a Mage with the strength of a sixth rank, how can he not handle a kid during a fight?

Philip is truly a capable guy. In the shortest period of time, he managed to gather enough silver armor and amassed enough painted horses for all 3,000 men.

Not even noon yet, the city gates to Loulan City all opened at the same time and from it, four forces of horsemen all rushed out of the capital in different directions.

According to the distribution order, Du Wei, Longbottom, Hussein each led their own respective group, but the last group lacked a proper leader. Although the last group had a captain of the cavalry regiment to lead it, but the guy's strength is limited. If they somehow encountered the prairie wolves..... There's no guarantee the enemy won't have a shaman in their mist!

Thinking it over, Du Wei called over captain Alpha to join the last group.

This way, all four groups will have their own powerhouse to standby for emergency. His strength may be only at the sixth rank, but Du Wei is confident that in the key moment, the dormant Semei will step forth to save him.

As for Longbottom's team, he may be strong, but he's not someone that could one man an army. As insurance, he specifically asked Old Alley's two disciple to join Longbottom and his men for this trip.

In Hussein's case, is there anything else he needs to say? As long as that old dragons doesn't show up, then there won't be anyone in this world that can

possibly harm our Saint Knight. Even if a shaman shows up, they better think twice to engage!

Captain Alpha's strength doesn't need to be questioned. As a eighth rank knight, there shouldn't be any reason he would be overwhelmed by a shaman without putting up a fight.

Then the only thing left to account for is the people left behind in Loulan City!

Dadaneier being the city defense chief, he will naturally be staying behind. As a precaution, Du Wei even called for Vivian and Nicole.

"Dadaneier, you already know about Queen Medusa." Du Wei shows a slightly awkward smile: "You should also know it's for the best not to expose her identity, otherwise, there will be big trouble! Unless you have no other choice like the Northwest Army laying siege, you must under no circumstances ask her to make a move, understand?"

Dadaneier is someone that experienced the frozen forest with Du Wei, so he is fully aware of the consequences. Inwardly, he was quite relieved to have this snake beauty standing by.

"What if the other side really attacked?" The one to raise the issue is Medusa herself.

"Then....." Du Wei coldly laughs aloud: "Then don't hesitate ... .. Kill!!!" Du Wei sighs: "Regrettable, Miss Nicole, your petrification ability may be powerful, but it's unable to deal damage on a massive scale..... When facing a powerful army, this part is not your specialty."

Beyond his expectation, Queen Medusa's usually indifferent face suddenly formed a smile. With her eyes still closed, she looked up towards the sky.

"Du Wei, you don't have to worry, I still have ... .. My hair. If necessary, I wouldn't mind turning the next ten miles around the city into a living hell."

# Chapter 224 “First Victory” (Part One)

Under the disguise of the morning dawn, more than 800 riders made their way out of Loulan City, each had their horse hooves wrapped in cotton cloth to minimize their noise.

Though the time of day is already considered dawn, the sun still hasn't risen yet, thus, making it the darkest part of the night.

While everyone is busy with their own matter, the overly tense Muse was riding right behind Du Wei. And further behind this kid are his 50 knights of the white feather, each firmly standing by to protect their lord at a moment's notice.

Everywhere Du Wei looked, all he can see is the endless flat wilderness shrouded in darkness. Seeing this, he inherently made a sigh.

It's no wonder the Northwest Natives can become a scourge for the empire. With an entire region comprised of flat terrain, perfect for horseback fighting, how can they not be a threat when every member of their people can become a soldier at a single call?

After their group traveled for about seven-eight Li's, Du Wei turned around to look at the general direction of Loulan City. Seeing how the darkness remained as quiet as ever, he can finally let his heart settle.

The reason for this is because he made a deal with the others. If by chance one of their groups were to encounter the enemy, the first priority is to ignite a signal flare into the sky. This way, even if they were caught, the unfortunate team can draw more attention to themselves to buy time for the other three to get away.

Prior to setting out on this mission, everyone had already come to a secret agreement to have Du Wei head for the safest direction they thought possible, which is to the South-East. Du Wei of course knew of their intent, but because he is the backbone of their operation, he can only silently accept their suggestion.

“My Lord, we should be out of the Northwest Army’s encirclement now.” An officer rode up to his side and said this to him.

This thirty something year old veteran of the army is supposedly a trusted drinking buddy of General Longbottom (also known as general 250). Back when Longbottom was demoted and jailed inside the capital, this guy was living a leisurely life as a landlord of a farm after retiring. However, with a single letter from his former commander, this veteran soldier immediately packed his bags and came running.

Prior to this occasion, Du Wei did have some interactions with this guy. Known as Guptad, he’s a fourth level knight that’s not known to talk too much. Oddly enough, the guy’s personality is very much like Longbottom and was even given the title of “mini 250”.

Du Wei hmm once before looking over at this mini 250.

“My lord, are we going to continue heading south?”

Snorting, Du Wei shakes his head: “We are looking for the prairie wolves, so why should we continue to head south; you want to find air instead? You are just like everyone else; thinking old sir here is a spoiled brat that needs protecting. Pass my orders down, we will all head north after the break of dawn, our destination will be the small town of Norrington where a infantry battalion of Knight Robert is currently standing by! And maybe along the way, we can hunt some prairie wolves.....”

Curling up his lips into a smile, Guptad only gave a single glance at Du Wei before quietly turning away to carry out his orders.

Following Du Wei’s command, the group turned around towards the North only to leave behind the somewhat greyish horizon that was soon to be enlightened by the sun’s ray.

When the first light sprinkled onto the ground, the leading scout that was slightly further ahead suddenly held in his reins to impressively stop his horse on

the spot. As the elite riders trained by Longbottom, this scout clearly had a good grip on his mount: “My lord, in front!”

Not waiting for Du Wei's reply, Guptad immediately ordered the group into full alert. At this time, the knights of the white feather also got into formation and firmly circled around Muse with the kid staying in the middle where it's the safest.

Still on his horse, Du Wei can see that not far into the distance, a dust of cloud was being kicked up and the faint sound of intensive horse beats was reverberating into his ears.

Guptad only needed to look once before calling out: "My Lord, it's the prairie wolves! There's no banner flying so there's no mistake about it!"

Du Wei's face sank a little. Narrowing his eyes, he readily cast eagle's eye onto himself and peered over at the hundreds or so prairie riders. Without any obstruction, he is able to get a very clear look at the enemy. Unlike the orderly fashioned cavalry knights of the empire, these people were all riding in a disorganized fashion with a scarf wrapped around their heads. Swinging their machetes in the air, these barbarians can't get any more threatening.

Like them, the other side seems to have also noticed Du Wei and his men. With a whistle, the prairie riders all stopped in their tracks while keeping a certain amount of distance.

Seeing this, Du Wei came down with a realization: "They must have mistaken us for the Northwest Army!"

Thinking of this, Du Wei immediately got an idea as he peered over at the Guptad. Just as luck would have it, this mini 250 here is donning a black cape like the Northwest Army. Stretching out a hand, he ripped it off and said: "Quick, tie this to the tip of your spear!"

As expected of a veteran soldier like Guptad. With only this little cue, he immediately understood Du Wei's intent as he yelled out his order with the spear raised into the air: "Disperse formation, let's not scare the prey away too quickly!"

From initial estimation, the other group should be numbering around 300-500 strong; As such, Du Wei's current force should be more than adequate in dealing with this party.

Leading with the black caped spear, Guptad rode in front to do his part in this little scheme. Fortunately, the prairie natives did as Du Wei expected and was easily fooled into thinking the cape was the banner of the Northwest Army. By the time the enemy realized things weren't looking right, Du Wei and his party were already 300 meters away from them, thus making it way too late to flee!

It can't be helped; Du Wei and his forces are all wearing silvery white armors, which is too different from the usual black gears donned by the Northwest Army.

Without hesitation, the toughly built prairie natives all let out a wolf like howl and began making their effort to flee. Using their amazing natural riding skills, they truly deserved the description of "going like the wind" from how fast they made the turn!

Seeing how easily the prairie natives fled with a single howl, Du Wei became infuriated: "God damn it! Aren't these guys famed for being brave and strong, why are they running at the first sight of us?!"

Guptad grunted: "My Lord, the blood running through these barbarians is as cunning as a wolf! They will only engage when the enemy is weak and retreat when the opposition is fiercer!"

This time around, Guptad no longer waited for Du Wei's order as he blew out a whistle. At his command, the 800 cavalry knights that came out with Du Wei all pulled out their scimitars and began charging forward at full speed.

Flying through the terrain, the land was soon marred with prints of horses galloping at full speed while dusts of clouds followed in their wake.

Out of Du Wei's expectation, the dozen or so enemy riders that were soon to be caught by his pursuing forces suddenly showcased a spectacular scene of horseback archery!

These prairie people truly are a tribe that grew up behind the backs of a horse. With only a slight move of their body, they were easily able to draw their bow to begin their retaliation despite riding at high speed.

"Spread!!!" Guptad is the most experienced so he knew exactly what is coming. Clutching the spear in his hand, he charged forward and forcefully



threw it at the enemy!

From the immense force of the throw, the spear looked like that of a shooting star by the friction created by the metal and air scraping together.

Not even letting the prairie rider that was furthest in the back of the pack to react, the spear easily pierced through the leather coating and went straight through the poor guy's body. Sadly for the first victim, his death meant nothing in stopping the raw propelling force of Guptad's spear because within seconds, a second victim was soon killed and impaled to the ground by the spear!

Yunn ~~~

In retaliation, a round of arrows came raining down from the air at the Tulip troops.

Du Wei's forces did in fact try their best in dispersing to dodge the oncoming attack, but the prairie natives were truly skilled because each one of the arrows was aimed true to their target.

Watching how the hundred or so spiked arrows were about to inflict heavy damage upon his men, Du Wei only let out a cold laugh in response. Then without any indication, he flew out of the saddle and began chanting some sort of magic spell with his arms opened wide.

Immediately, an invisible web rapidly spread out from his arm. Comprised of light and air, this web constructed out of Du Wei's own energy easily warded off the volley of arrows while in midair.

Laughing aloud at his own doing, Du Wei only needed to slightly flick his arm to toss aside the hundred or so arrows to the ground.

Watching how amazing their lord was, the Tulip troops were invigorated with fighting spirit while they cheered on with joy.

In contrast to the heavy boost to Du Wei's men, the prairie wolves were clearly shocked by this outcome. Like a scared pack of animals, all of them tightly gripped their reins and began fleeing at rapid pace without any will to stay.

## Chapter 224 “First Victory” (Part Two)

“Ziggy!!” While in the air, Du Wei suddenly bellowed out a cry: “All Hogwarts students are to heed my command! The target is in front, everyone, FIRE!”

All 28 magic apprentices were originally lagging behind everyone else, but when they heard the order from Du Wei, all 28 of them had their spirits livened up as they began their spell chant.

Although these students still can’t be considered a fully qualified magician, but a simple fireball is still within their means.

With a single “phoo” sound, countless flaming balls of light appeared out of thin air. The spells evoked by these students can’t be called magnificent by any means, but having such large numbers is still quite magnificent to behold!

For reasons related to Du Wei, this simplest form of a fire element spell is certainly the most practiced incantation within these students arsenal because even the ones that’s not majoring in the fire element can easily conjure one up with ease.

Like a dazzling firecracker, volley after volleys of fireballs descended upon the enemy without mercy!

Seeing how disorganized the enemy is now, Guptad lets out a bellowing laugh as he raised his sword: “Separate into two wings and make sure none gets away!”

As expected of a cavalry unit personally trained by Longbottom. Without any signs of misalignment, Du Wei’s forces easily split into two groups and charged towards the opposition in a pincer attack.

Knowing they could no longer escape, the 300 or so remaining prairie wolves revealed their ferocious side when they realized they were finally cornered. With a tugging turn of their horse, they were no longer fleeing; instead, they made a counter charge right at their pursuers for a final clash!

Under the overwhelming battle cries of both forces, the leading riders in front were already colliding against each other with Du Wei’s men coming out on

top! The prairie fighters may have been fierce in their final struggle, but the outcome was decided from the beginning due to the sturdier metallic equipment worn by the soldiers of the empire.

With a single charge by Du Wei's wave of cavalry troops, dozens or so of the prairie wolves were already knocked off their mounts from the impact. Despite already making the first clash, the leading Tulip troops showed no signs of slowing down; instead, they only called out for more as they charged forward even harder into the next wave of enemies. They knew they had the advantage, so with a few swings of their swords, countless enemy heads were flying across the air, which made the scene ever more gruesome!!

Through it all, this mini 250 Guptad was always leading the way in the front; as a result, his sight quickly fell upon the corpse impaled with his spear. Letting out a joyous laugh, he rushed over and pulled it out before charging right back into the heart of the enemy forces!

This guy really deserves to be called a fierce warrior because even an ordinary spear can become a terrifying weapon in his hands. With each enemy pierced by his spear shrouded in Dou Qi, the unfortunate victim would always have their flesh vindictively explode upon impact. With blood staining his face and body, Guptad's unsightly face is no different from a raging war god that strikes fear into his foes!

Both wings of cavalry riders have now surrounded the prairie fighters in a tight encirclement. Like sharp knives, every swing of their blades would always shred away a piece of the wolves' flesh, leaving no room for retaliation.

Approximately a tea pot's worth of time, the fighting finally came to an end to leave behind a mound of carcasses and the overwhelming scent of blood in the air.

Right now, many of the

Tulip cavalry knights have already dismounted, and one by one, they began to check the bodies of the enemy. For those that didn't die from their initial wound, these soldiers would quickly follow up with another stab to the vital spots to finish the deal.

Covered in blood, Guptad had fought so hard even his spear had snapped in

half, leaving only his nearly crippled scimitar in usable condition. Despite his gruesome appearance, his spirit was very good. He may have been the fiercest among all his peers, but that came at a price and that is a wound to his shoulder. Fortunately, Du Wei brought along the 28 magic apprentices. In no time at all, his wound was healed by a simple healing spell.

Going over a simple head count, all 300 or so prairie riders have been finished off. While Du Wei had 4 seriously injured and 10 deaths on his side (These numbers excluded the ones that received minor injuries and was quickly healed up by the magic apprentices), but such results were already brilliant by any normal standard when it came to warfare.

After Guptad made a victory report, he then ordered everyone to reorganize themselves.

And all the while, our little Muse from the Lister Household was always in the back where he was well protected by the White Feather Knights. What is usually a handsome face on Muse is now replaced with a ghastly pale complexion without any shades of blood. If not for his excessive pride, it's likely he would have already thrown up by now.

Seeing this kid's reaction, Du Wei knit his brows hard and wanted to go up and say something, but then out of nowhere, a loud piercing cry came out from a soldier standing further behind him.

Without any indication, one of the supposedly dead bodies on the ground had suddenly jumped back to life. Quick and fast, this deceitful person swung his blade against the panicking soldier's neck. Du Wei's men may have been very well equipped, but this meant nothing in front of this sudden attacker. In mere seconds, a raining fountain of blood was spewing out of the now beheaded soldier's body as it slowly fell to the ground.

The deceitful guy was obviously ready for this. After the initial strike, he only needed to make one long jump to make it to a nearby horse. Then with a hard kick to his newfound steed, this guy was able to smoothly break out of the encirclement and out of everyone's reach!!

This sudden turn of event caught everyone off guard. When the closest Tulip soldier came back to reality and wanted to make chase for the enemy, the

deceitful guy was already dozens of meters away.

“Damn it!!” Guptad was furious because he was already off his horse. Even if he were to mount his steed right away, there’s no way he can catch up to the guy now. Knowing this, Guptad did the next best thing that came to his mind. Without any word, he grabbed a bow and arrow off one of the nearby Knights of the White Feather.

Taking in a deep breath, he only needs to make a quick aim at the other person’s back before letting the arrow fly!

Woosh! !

Both accurate and fast, this shot was magnificent; however, the prairie guy was even better. While still riding at high speed, he only needed to spin his body around to accurately grab the arrow with his bare hands while it was still in midflight!

Guptad may be angry at this outcome, but he had to admit it: “GOOD SKILL!!”

Tossing the bow and quiver to the ground, he then picked up his spear and cast it out in one loud powerful throw.

Unlike his first throw when the battle first began, this shot was even more alarming. Filled with his fury, sparks of densely packed Dou Qi looked like it could break out of the spear’s tip while it was grazing against the air!

Despite the frightening attack aimed right at him, this prairie guy was in no hurry. Using the exact same arrow he stopped with his bare hand, he then pinpointed the spot where the spear is flying at and used the arrow head to brush against it when it came close. Using the momentum created by the recoil, he used his other hand to firmly take hold of the spear.

Once in the clear, this guy rode another hundred or so meters away before shouting back at everyone in a loud cursing voice: “Roland pigs only know how to fight with more numbers! Thank you for the spear, HAHAAH!!”

Hearing this, Guptad and all the Tulip knights were all fuming with anger, especially Guptad because it looked like he could burst his lungs at any moment from how hard he was puffing. Not only did this prairie guy kill one of his subordinates in front of him, he also deflected his arrow and spear, if this is not

a slap in his face then nothing is.

“Humph, let me see you take another one then.”

Du Wei suddenly coldly snorted. With the Nirvana’s bow already drawn, he lets the arrow loose all the while standing upright on his steed... ..

Whoosh!

Before the guy even had time to react, a silvery arrow had already penetrated into his back and in moments, he collapsed onto the ground!

How powerful is the Nirvana’s bow? Unlike an actual physical arrow, this shot is the result of a highly condensed form of energy created by Du Wei. Upon impact, the aftershock alone is enough to cause a flower of blood to come gushing out of the poor guy’s back and send him flying to one side for over ten meters. Lying there on the ground without moving, this arrogant prairie wolf is now like a dead fish, unable to move even if he wanted to.

Such power, anyone that witnessed Du Wei’s shot was left aghast.

“Quit standing there.” Du Wei lowered the Nirvana’s bow and lightly said, “I didn’t kill him ... .. Send someone to bring him back, humph!”

At this moment, the Tulip troops suddenly erupted in thunderous cheers, particularly the 28 magic apprentices. How can they not when their beloved Dean shows off his might?

Not very long after, two of the knights were already back with the guy in tow.

Like before, Muse was still surrounded by his guardians, but this time around, his face looked somewhat stupor at what he was witnessing. From the worship like gazes aimed at Du Wei to the unflinching coldness coming out of Du Wei’s eyes, all of this made Muse unable to explain the feeling that was growing inside of him.....

## Chapter 225 “Target, Anglia City”

Towards someone that had nearly caused the Tulip troops to lose their dignity, the soldiers would of course not be very kind in their manners. Dragging the guy back like a dead dog, this prairie warrior was then tossed in front of Du Wei.

How powerful is Du Wei's single shot now? Although his level of control is already at the point where he can decide the power output at will, he still can't fully dictate the aftershock from the exploding energy upon impact. Therefore, the guy's back was unsightly to look from how gruesomely blood and mangled his flesh was.

What should have been a layer of leather armor is nothing but seared remnants as blood continued to flow out of the wound.

With a yellowish brown type of hair, different from the usual native color, this guy on the ground was already unconscious. In order to get a better look, two of the soldiers crudely flipped him over to expose the offenders face..

With a fierce look, Du Wei instinctively made an “EHH??” sound.

The reason for this is because the man's facial features were quite different from what he expected out of a native from the prairie desert. With a wide forehead and a high nose, these traits are clearly different from the usually narrow forehead and flat nose he's seen thus far. This astonishing find was especially apparent in the guy's eyes. Although this person had his eyes closed, but from his face alone, Du Wei can tell the guy's lineage is not quite right.

In addition, the guy's skin was much whiter compared to the usual yellowish tinge....

Of course, the most outstanding anomaly was his other characteristics: a short beard, thick lips, and the nose and ear piercings.

Just when the two nearby soldiers wanted to kick the guy, Du Wei called out to them: “Stop the bleeding from his wound, I want to question him.”

Stunned by this command, the two soldiers was of course not willing as they

made a few grudging remarks; however, because it was a direct order from Du Wei, they can only comply. Turning the guy around, the two soldiers removed the remaining leather armor strapped to the guy's body and somehow managed to stop the bleeding with some medicine.

During all this, Muse was standing next to Du Wei so he was able to get a clear view of it all. Muse was already queasy to begin with, but the gruesome and bloody injury finally pushed him over the ledge. Crying out with his pale face, he then covered his mouth as he bent over to vomit.

Giving this kid a discontented look, he coldly said: "What are you afraid of! Listen up, in this land of the wolves; the more afraid you are of blood, the more afraid of death you are ... .. If so, you will die faster! Garbage!"

When Du Wei rudely called out at Muse, he really didn't hold back. For the Lister knights standing nearby, none of these loyal followers were happy when their lord was being bashed at. Regardless of the angry glares coming his way, Du Wei turns his focus back to the person before him: "Poor some cold water on his face and wake him up!"

Splash!

Picking up a water skin, one of the soldiers began pouring the cold liquid atop of the guy's face. No surprise, when the man regained consciousness, the first reaction he had was to jump up.

But who is Du Wei? Not giving the guy the chance, Du Wei accurate raised a leg and stepped onto the guy's chest to force him back down: "Don't move and don't struggle."

Nearly fainting at the immense pain, this guy amazingly managed to keep himself awake by sheer will.

"You are our prisoner now. Whatever I ask, you answer. If you resist or annoy me even once

, I will remove a part from your body! Annoy me twice; I will remove a second piece! I will continue to do this until there's nothing left to cut, understand?"

Upon hearing this, this person was filled with unruly arrogance as snorted.



Like his prisoner, Du Wei did not say a word; instead, he spoke with action. Pulling out a sword, the man before Du Wei suddenly cried out in pain because he had just lost a pinkie finger on his left hand!

Calm and cold, Du Wei spoke: "You are a warrior, so you should know a pinkie finger would not affect your martial arts; nevertheless, what do you think would happen if I cut off your thumb? I believe I don't need to say more, right?"

Letting a flash of bitterness cross his eyes, this man bit his lips as he replied: "I..... Understand!"

"Good, now tell me, where did your group come from and where are you heading to." Though Du Wei's smile was calm, but he was obviously giving off a dangerous vibe: "You can't lie to me. I'm sure you're aware of this already, but I'm a magician, I have hundreds of methods to force you to spill the truth, that's assuming I have to do that."

Sure enough, his words had the added effect. The guy originally wanted to spout nonsense, but when heard Du Wei's identity, a flash of frustration crossed his eyes. Coughing for a moment out of pain, he uttered his words in a low croaking voice: "We are the royal court's Gold Wolf battalion."

While the guy said this, Guptad quickly followed up with an explanation from the side:

The natives in the prairie follow tribalism, meaning the chief of the strongest and most powerful tribe can claim themselves royalty. During the court hearings, this certain individual can then order other various tribes to mobilize their armies at his will.

And without a doubt, the strongest and most elite warriors under the control of the royalty are the "Gold Wolf" battalion.

In general, the tribes living in the prairie plains will usually worship some kind of wolf or eagle for their deity god. For this reason, any entities that can carry the title with these names are extremely high in status. According to their tradition, there are four generals directly under the royal family that controls their own respective army: gold wolf, silver wolf, gold eagle, and silver eagle. Compared to the empire's army ranking, these four are equivalent to an army head like General Rugaard of the Northwest Army. For the Gold Wolf battalion

in question here, it's similar to a battalion that specializes in scouting and border patrol.

Du Wei made a frowning hmm sound to indicate he heard all this. Inwardly, he was really impressed right now. For a mere scouting team, the guy in front of him can show such outstanding skills in horsemanship and take on multiple attacks without any problems! If not for the fact that his forces had superior numbers and a lot of magic apprentices to help, it's unlikely his men can overwhelm the opposition.

Northwest prairie wolves, you really are amazing!

"Where did you come from and where are you going?" Du Wei asked again.

"From the lord of the great grassland and master all masters, we've come at his order to search for something." Gasping like he had trouble breathing: "Our 300 member unit was heading south because it's said that the thing we are looking for likes to stay near the mountain....."

"Humph!" Without any explanation, Du Wei went down with his sword!

Letting out a painful loud scream, the poor guy's left ring finger was chopped off by Du Wei's cruelty.

"Like I said, if you are not truthful, the one to suffer is only you!" Du Wei coldly reminded the guy: "Since you are a part of the wolf battalion, then your group must only be a scout team dispersed from the main body. Speak, where is your main army!"

Opening and closing his mouth back and forth, the guy seems to be having trouble deciding whether to speak the truth. Seeing this, Du Wei gave a forceful stare: "You already lost your pinkie and ring finger, do you want me to cripple your left hand entirely? Speak!!"

As a reply, this guy suddenly shouted back with energy: "Kill me; I'm a son of the wolf god! By insulting me, the wolf god will punish you for this treachery!"

"PAYY!" Du Wei made a disgusted remark: "What wolf god! You're a proper normal human being, yet you go and worship some animal god! I would love to see your wolf god come punish me. Even if he or she does show up, I'll turn that mutt into a fur coat!!!!"

With that, Du Wei's sword is now threateningly aimed at the man's face: "I'm going to count three times. If by then you still don't speak, then I'll cut off your entire left hand. One..... Two!"

"Stop, Stop!" The man suddenly exclaimed: "I'll speak, I'll speak!"

His eyes were filled with vicious poison as he bit his lips, "Our Gold Wolf battalion is about 60 miles from here and their destination is Anglia City to the North!"

When Du Wei heard this, he was immensely shocked: "What?" Anglia city?"

Since the man already popped the cork, he no longer had any reason to hold back.

"The Shaman King lost a very important magical beast and gave us 100 days to retrieve the damn thing.... Otherwise, the current prairie king can forget about keeping his throne. You people may not know this, but none in the grasslands can defy the Shaman King. As a result, our Prairie king made a deal with the Northwest Army and sent the Gold Wolf battalion out to complete this mission."

Both upset and angry, Du Wei questioned the guy some more: "Why Anglia City?"

"We suspect the magic beast lost by our Shaman King was captured by your Duke Tulip. After careful consideration, we came to the conclusion that such an important creature wouldn't be kept in your capital. In addition, we received news that Anglia City was heavily fortified and is restricting access to outsiders. Matching the time with when the Shaman King lost his pet and the time Anglia City was closed in, we believe it's highly likely the creature is hidden somewhere inside..... Even if the creature isn't there, it's likely the Duke hid something very important inside. If we can somehow take control of whatever is inside, we can then use it to exchange for the Shaman King's pet. From rumors, there's only 3,000 soldiers stationed there, such number is definitely no match for the Gold Wolf battalion!"

## Chapter 226 “Fight!”

This mind-blowing news is not to be taken lightly because Anglia City is in fact Du Wei’s lifeblood right now!

Turning the now abandoned city into a closed off factory, all his secrets like the artificial mithril, gunpowder, and flying broom are all manufactured inside this place....

Ignoring Gargamel, Seth, and Solskjaer that’s currently inside the city – his personal team of magic researchers – there is also Knight Robert and his four thousand strong regiment that was left behind by Du Wei.

If danger does arrive at their doorstep, Du Wei can already forget about relying on Seth and Solskjaer to defend the place. As for the former mouse Prime Minister, Du Wei is well aware this white robed Gargamel is only at the sixth rank in strength.

Let’s face it, if it wasn’t for the preservation of his rare transformation magic, there’s no way the magic union would have given him the title of a eighth level mage.

“Your Gold Wolf Head General is personally leading the assault against Anglia City?” Du Wei takes in a deep breath after asking this.

“Yes.” This person reluctantly answers: “General Gold Wolf head is a famed warrior of the royal court.”

“How many people did he bring with him?” What’s most concerning is this point, and the answer he got is absolutely depressing!

“20,000.” This man was able to see through Du Wei’s pale complexion so he followed up with another sentence to incite Du Wei even more: “20,000 of the strongest warriors in the royal court.”

Du Wei suddenly sneered at the guy’s trick: “You’re trying to lie again? I know for a fact that you only have a total of 10.000 that sneaked into our land!”

“That is only the first group.” The prairie man sneered back at Du Wei: “The

army head of the Northwest Brigade is a greedy and useless man. Our king only gave him some benefits and he easily let our vanguards through the Northwest Corridor. The job of us vanguards is only here to scout and harass the locals, and the second group is actually the main force led by General Gold Wolf Head himself.”

Watching the guy’s poisonous eyes, Du Wei was speechless to rebuke.

After a while like this, Du Wei’s lip suddenly curled into a grin: “You’re only a scout in the wolf brigade, how can you possibly know so much. Tell me, who exactly are you?”

The prisoner’s face immediately changed for the worst.

Du Wei laughed out: “Just seeing the way you caught the arrow in midair earlier indicates your skills are far superior to that of a mere scout.”

Realizing things are not going well, the guy’s expression turned even more grave as he bit his tongue, refusing to say another word.

Du Wei frowned as he gave this person a strange look over: “Why are you still trying to hide your identity? Such important military secret already gave you away.”

With that, Du Wei lifts his sword: “If you don’t speak up soon, I’ll swing down with my sword! Think this over carefully; do you really want to lose your life over this?”

Clearly struggling to come to a decision, the prisoner suddenly yelled out: “I fear no death; I’m just unwilling die like this without proving to those that looked down on me!”

Du Wei made an “Oh” sound as he retracted his sword: “Talk, who exactly are you?”

“You ... ..” When the prisoner’s eyes came into contact with his, Du Wei realized the person below him that was giving him such an intense stare was not someone that should be stepped on by him

like an ordinary captive. In fact, the impression he got right now was like a person that had just mistakenly stepped on a frog to only realize he had

stepped on a snake!

“If I tell you, will you let me go?!” This person unyieldingly bites his lip: “Will you let me leave? I won’t go against you; I just want to return to the prairies!”

“Let’s hear it, but I won’t make any guarantees.” Du Wei lightly utters this reply.

Looking at how this guy was still hesitating, Du Wei smiles and began to push the guy over the edge: “You are in no position to make demands because I’m the winner and you are the loser. Think things over, if you don’t speak, I will kill you. However, if you do talk, you still have the chance to live. I know you are a smart person, the choice shouldn’t be hard to pick, right?”

Another period of silence pursued. When Du Wei was about to lose his patients, this unruly man suddenly spoke up.

Inwardly, Du Wei was thinking: This guy really is stubborn. Why is he still keeping his mouth shut when he already revealed such important military secrets?

“I ... .. My identity is the 13th son of the King of all kings.”

Before the prisoner could even finish his sentence, Guptad that was standing nearby had already laughed out in mockery: “Even if you want to lie, at least make up a better excuse. From what I know, the prairie king only has 12 children, so how can you be the 13th prince? Even the old gramps did get another son right now; you can’t possibly be a newborn baby, right?”

When the captive heard the insulting words from Guptad, the eyes from this guy suddenly became infuriated like that of a dying wolf in despair!

“Everything that I said is true!” The captive grits his teeth so hard that drops of blood began to drip down the corner of his lip.

“Guptad, don’t say anymore and let him continue.” Du Wei suddenly came down with a thought.

“I don’t have the status of a Prince.” The eyes of this person carried a sense of madness: “Because I’m just an offspring of a slave that can’t be seen in public. My mother is a woman that was pillaged from the Roland Empire and was later

kept as a measly slave to sweep the king's tent. Although I have the king's lineage in my blood, but everyone just thinks of me as a dirty Roland pig! They despise me! Humph.... But when have I ever respected them, they're nothing but a bunch of idiots! Only I, have the purest of the royal bloodline and not some dirty lineage of some lowly Roland pug!!"

Hearing all this, Guptad became infuriated with anger as he stepped forward to send a kick at this impudent guy's face: "Son of bitch! How dare you insult the citizens of the Roland Empire when your mother is one herself!!"

"Pehh!" This guy spits out the blood bleeding out of the corner of his mouth. With a unrelenting gaze, this prairie mutt looked at Guptad with knives in his eyes: "I am a true descendant of the royal family! As for the slave woman that gave birth to me, she is nothing but a dirty slave! I'm a child of the wolf god. Unlike the others, the wolf god only borrowed the body of that lowly slave to produce me! I'm a purebred of the royal bloodline, not some disgusting Roland pig!!"

While this person said all this, his eyes betrayed a deep sense of pain and anger while his body numbingly trembled under Du Wei's feet.

As for Guptad that was standing nearby, this mini 250 wanted to move up and beat the crap out of this insolent jerk that would insult his own mother.

Knowing this, Du Wei only needed to casually pull Guptad away: "He's only a madman that is overly obsessed with this parentage. Let him go on." Du Wei says this to try to calm his subordinate.

The captive looks up and grits his teeth: "I was always the best! Whether it is horsemanship or martial skills, I was always above everyone else, but because of my lowly Roland blood, I could never get any recognition. While my brothers all received their own tribes and clansman, I wasn't even given my own tent and must live with the other slaves. When I finally grow up, I can only join the wolf brigade and climb from the very bottom!"

Having said that, his eyes betray a hint of madness as he stared whole heartedly at Du Wei: "You are the leader here! I'm telling you all this because I want you all to know I'm not afraid of death. I only want to go back to prove myself, I cannot die like this without doing anything!!"

Du Wei was silent for a moment because he really wanted to chop this guy up immediately with a cleaver. For a guy that would even insult his own mother, Du Wei feels like he would even sully his own blade by doing so.

Slowly but surely, the once tight grip on his sword began to loosen.

At this time, a sudden thought hit him in the head: “What’s your name?”

“Saladin!”

Hearing this name, Du Wei gasps for air.....

Desert madman, Saladin.... The learning of this name really sent waves through Du Wei’s heart.

This guy has both skills and courage (this can all be seen from how he played dead and stole a horse to flee), but above all else, his heart is already twisted to the core.

Du Wei is a firm believer that personality decides destiny. If he let this guy that has the heart of an evil snake, a mind of a crafty jackal, and a personality of a vile spider return to the prairie, this person will definitely rise to the top.

But the question is: does he want to give this person the chance?

Saladin ... .. Humph, this is also a famous name from his past life.

Hesitating for a good while, Du Wei suddenly started to smile wickedly.

Ah whatever.. ... Since he had already created a Captain Jack Sparrow, a George Bush ... .. What difference does it make if he makes another infamous Saladin.

(For those that don’t know this name, you can check it out by Googling the name or for anyone that played Age of Empire, it’s the desert campaign guy.)

Thinking of this, Du Wei’s removes his foot that was stepping on top of this person’s chest.

“Give him a horse, a knife, and a skin of fresh water.” Du Wei sent out these commands to his men. Turning around, he then coldly made a little laugh at this Saladin: “The opportunity is set before you, whether you can make it back to the grassland alive is all up to you. Let’s see if your so called wolf god will give



you such blessings.”

“My Lord!!” Guptad loudly objects.

Not waiting for Guptad to say anymore, Du Wei had already raised a hand to stop this mini 250 to go on.

“Listen up.” Du Wei thought for a moment and smiled playfully: “I’m quite interested in what you will achieve when you make it back to your grassland home. In order to see that day come to fruition, I will place a bet on you. When you need help, you can come to Loulan City and contact me.... Remember my name, I am known as Duke Tulip!”

With that, Du Wei pulls over Saladin’s hand and casually stops the bleeding from his wounds. At the same time, he also secretly wrote a symbol in the palm of Saladin’s hand.

This symbol is obviously a Chinese character from his previous life.

“I’ll give you another chance, when you need help in the future, you can send someone to Loulan City to seek me out if you are unable to come in person. As for how much assistance I will provide, it will depend entirely on my mood at that time.”

With that, Du Wei laughs as he gently sent a kick to Saladin: “Before I change my mind and decide to kill you, scat and move out of my sight!”

Giving Du Wei a deep look, Saladin turns got up and walked towards the horse provided to him. Before leaving, this prairie madman gave Du Wei a deep bow and said: “Duke Tulip, I will never forget your name! Whatever favor and humiliation you gave me today, I will be sure to repay everything I owe you in the future!

Watching how much struggle it was for this guy to ride the horse to leave, Du Wei can only sigh at his own doing.

“My lord! Are you sure it’s the right thing to do?” Guptad frowns as he watched the disappearing enemy that was far off into the distance: “I have the sinking feeling this madman is a danger to us all. Why won’t you let me kill him?”

Du Wei nodded in agreement: “Guptad, you’re right, he’s not only a madman, he’s also a poisonous snake and a conniving wolf.... Nevertheless, he’s a madman with abilities. Towards such a person, killing him is also a good solution, but then again.”

After a pause, Du Wei’s lip suddenly curled into a smirk like he was plotting something sinister: “What if we let this spark that could turn into a raging blaze back into grassland? When he does explode, what image can you see inside your head?”

Du Wei’s smile was so chilling that even Guptad was shivering in disbelief.

Subsequently, Du Wei pulls in his smile, in it’s place is a stern yet somber expression: “All soldiers’ attention, our next target is Anglia City!”

With that, he gave Guptad a glance: “Guptad, I have another task for you..... Among everyone here, your martial arts are the strongest. Also, I have no other candidate that I could use here. I’ll give you ten people and one day’s worth of time. Remember, only one day! I don’t care what methods you use, but you must locate the other three groups and have them charge towards Anglia City for rendezvous! I will wait for you there. Remember, my life is in your hands! If you don’t arrive on time, you can be ready to collect my corpse by then!”

Guptad became stern as he accepted the order. Without falter in his actions, this mini 250 swiftly gathered the necessary people and rode away to carry out his command.

After Guptad’s departure, Du Wei then mounts his steed to make his speech to everyone: “Listen up everyone! Awaiting us in front are 20,000 prairie wolves! 20,000 elite Calvary riders! I Sir here will be leading you all here to meet those bastard wolves. I won’t fool you, the chance of us dying from this encounter is extremely high, but even in death, I intend to drag those dead meats with me into the grave!! Is any of you afraid?!!!”

“No!!!!” The Tulip Cavalry all raised their sabers and began crying into the sky.

Du Wei’s face was stern with resolve as he turned to look at the Ziggy and the other magic apprentices: “What about you guys, are you afraid?!”

Leading all 28 magic apprentices, Ziggy and the rest gave Du Wei a deep

respecting bow, their voices filled with excitement and emotion: “Dean, since the day we stepped through the doorx of Hogwarts, we have already expected such scenes like today!”

After their words, all of the students suddenly shouted out in unison.

“Those that only know how to climb can take the other road! Those that fear death must not enter!!!”

Watching all of his subordinates before him, Du Wei suddenly tightened his reign as he screamed out: “Onward!”

Watching how organized his Tulips troops were marching, Du Wei looked up into the setting sky. Seeing the blazing red horizon, a sense of unwavering courage flowed through every part of his body.

Unable to stop himself, Du Wei suddenly had the urgency to curse out into the sky using chinese words: “Fuck your MOM, only the eager will win!!!”

“What is the lord yelling about?” the troops were all looking at their prideful Duke, unsure what was going on.

“Who knows ... .. Perhaps some kind of magic spell?” One of the riders replied to the question.

# Chapter 227 “Breaking Into The Camp Alone!” (Part One)

Riding for one full night and day, Du Wei gave the order down that none is to rest. Such a command may be a bit cruel to the soldiers that had just went through a life or death battle, but the Tulip troops still carried it out without any complaint.

“I know you’re all very tire, but I’m even more freaking tired!” Du Wei impolitely shouted this aloud so everyone can hear his voice: “Unlike you guys that received intensive training for this type of hardship, I’m only a frail mage. I’m not afraid to tell you all this, but my butt and thighs are about to burst into flames from how painful they are. However, my brave warriors.... In front of us are 20,000 wolves ready to devour our brothers and ravage our sisters! We must insist and ride on!”

Du Wei’s powerful voice ranged through the ranks of every Tulip soldier. It must be mentioned his voice really did carry a lot of weight. After practicing the Star Dou Qi martial set for the past year, his body is no longer as weak as he once was. Also, he had secretly used a wind based spell on himself to make his body light as possible, thus reducing the burden on himself.

The one that is truly suffering through all this is in fact Muse. Right now, this kid really wanted to cry out in pain because every fiber in his body was about to fall apart due to the excessive strain. However, Muse also knows that if he shows the slightest hint of weakness, this cruel Duke would not hesitate for even a second in tossing him aside.

“My Lord!” The scout furthest ahead pulled in his reign to retreat to the back of the pack for his report: “Behind this hill is Anglia City!”

“Send the order down that all personal is to reduce speed!” Du Wei wipes his sweat filled forehead.

So tiring..... Though he did cheat by using a spell on himself and his steed, but the friction caused by the saddle is killing his crotch and thigh.

It must be mentioned though that Du Wei really is blessed with good fortune. Despite the fact that the Gold Wolf General is personally leading his forces to assault Anglia City, there hasn't been any encounter with the other scouting teams along the way.

Such an outcome is more than welcomed because he's currently in a race against time. Before the enemy is able to block off Anglia City from any reinforcements, he must have his men enter the city for the impending battle.

The hill before him now is small, or to be precise, it's merely a mound in the landscape. Having most of his men stay at the bottom, he and several of the soldiers dismounted and made their way to the top.

Looking out from afar, Anglia City is right before his eyes!

Filled with stars in the starry sky, the contour of the crumbling city is easy to make out. Although he did make some repairs to the wall, but it's merely a band aid job to keep the slaves inside.

If Du Wei had to bluntly describe the situation from a military standpoint, then Longbottom's description of this place is perfect: "he could easily overrun this place with a single charge!" that's exactly what this 250 said.

When Du Wei first climbed up the mound with some of his men, the first reaction they had was a deep gasp of shock.

With Mount Kilimanjaro in the background, the land outside Anglia City is a vast stretch of open landscape! With more than 10 square miles of wasteland, the only exception was the gravel like brown bushes scattered across the ground.

It can be said that there is no better place for a force of cavalry riders to fight because the land has no obstacles to stop the charge.

And now, the vast stretches of wasteland outside Anglia City are occupied by the people of the prairie.

Unlike the well-built base camp with walled fences of the empire, these prairie wolves only had tents erected in their camping ground.

If Du Wei had to make a guess as to why this is so, it's likely because these

people didn't have any supply wagons with them.

Fortunately, the one relieving factor that eased his heart right now was the Tulip Flag flying atop of the rampart.

The meaning behind this is simple, the city still hasn't fallen yet and Knight Robert is still inside!

Showing a flash of hope in his eyes, Du Wei looks over to the other men by his side and said: "It seems we have to find a way through the enemy camp."

From the looks of things, the prairie natives seem to have no intention of stopping their continuous assault. It's almost like they knew Anglia City didn't have enough man power to fully defend itself.

Anglia City may have been the former capital of Desa Province, but the 4,000 men under Knight Robert is simply not enough to fully man the wall against 20,000 barbarians!

Standing atop of the rampart, Robert's face was clouded with gloom as he peered down at the blade wielding prairie wolves.

These people were already here since this evening. Upon arrival, these bastards didn't even give any indication of their intent and made a premeditated raid against the city. Deadly and fast, it was clear to Robert they wanted to finish this as soon as possible regardless of the casualties.

If it was any other general, the person in charge would have likely abandoned the place long before the actual siege took place. As to the reason why this loyal knight didn't give up was all due to Du Wei's words: "Listen Robert, the factory in the city is everything I have! No harm can come to the things here. Remember, I'm putting my lifeline in your hands!!"

From his lord's firm grip, Robert can feel the importance of his responsibilities on his arm. In order to not disappoint the faith placed on him, Robert had always kept a vigilant watch over everything, especially the defensive guards standing atop of the wall.

When he found out one of the soldiers were dozing off on the job during one of his rounds, Robert had this poor bastard severely lashed in front of everyone. Witnessing such a scene, many of the soldiers were inwardly complaining: "why

is he being so harsh when this city only has some slaves and a workshop, it's not like anyone is going to come to such a remote place when there's no valuables to take.

Other than always forcing the soldiers to be on alert, Robert also took advantage of the city's greatest asset: stones!! Anglia City may not have anything of value, but it did have a lot of rocks. Despite the complaints, Robert had his men litter the wall with stones of certain sizes to be thrown over the ledge in time of need.

Toward his over the top demands, it finally paid off on this day.

During the prairie wolves first raid against the city, the soldiers were able to discover the attackers much sooner than what a normal watch could have usually done.

In the first assault at noon, the prairie natives failed and had to leave behind 300 dead bodies in their retreat.

On Knight Robert's side, he lost 200 people with 300 injured.

In the absence of sufficient strength, Robert made a decisive decision and had the slaves mobilized to defend the city.

He didn't say much pretty words to persuade these slaves, instead, he only aimed his blade at the prairie natives down below: "You see those people? They are the wolves of the prairie! If they make it in here then all of you will be killed! I assure you, they won't hold back! I'm not asking you to help me defend this city, I'm asking you to fight for your own survival."

Luckily, Du Wei had treated these slaves well. Without much hassle or difficulty, these slaves consciously picked up a weapon and joined in the fray.

By the afternoon, the prairie natives had launched another three assaults; fortunately, each attack was beaten off through the combined effort of soldier and slave.

Nevertheless, the main problem was still placed in front of Robert: his main combat force had already loss a total of 800 soldiers, almost one fourth of his combat capability. As for the slaves, their injuries and death are especially high due to their lack of equipment and armor.

Taking advantage of the brief recess in the enemy's retreat, Robert gave the order to demolish large numbers of abandoned houses to use their door and walls as shields.

As nice as it was to have a brief period of relief from the continuous onslaught, the prairie natives seems to have no intent of letting Robert and his men recuperate. Detaching from the main body, two separate raiding parties were always attacking in rotation, leaving no time for Robert and his people to properly tend to their wounds.

Looking down at the fearsome enemy, Knight Robert is starting to get worried.

"Is the gate sealed off properly?" He turns to look at one of his subordinate nearby.

"Yes it is my lord." The person to reply is an officer of commanding rank: "We've sealed off the gate with whatever rubble or rock we can find!"

Sighing at the answer, Robert's face showed no sign of relief at the news because sealing off the gate is a last resort which he didn't want to do.

Due to the natural terrain of the Northwest, most cities in this barren land do not have a moat around the wall; therefore, the natives could easily charge right up to the fortification and begin their attack.

One of the methods to breach a gate is to send a team of death squad ahead of the main force. Using a special type of iron hooked arrow, the natives could then lodge the arrow head into the gate and tie the rope to their mount. Using the pulling force of dozens of horses, no wooden gate would be able to withstand such a pulling force.

During the first raid this afternoon, the other side did exactly just this and was able to breach the gate by ripping it apart from the hinges.

At that time, Robert and a brave squad of full armored soldiers took to the front and stood their ground at the enemies charge. Through much effort and bloodshed, Robert and his brethren's did manage to repel the attackers, but as a consequence, his only heavy armored unit was lost during this skirmish. What's more, a horrifying scene containing a mountain of corpse lay at the



entrance, which was the real reason the enemy had to back off.

After the crisis came to an end, Robert ignored the pain from his wounded arm and immediately gave the order to seal off the entrance!

This way around, the city seems to be safe once again, but this also means that any hope for help from the outside is cut off.

The reason is because even if reinforcement did arrive, Robert won't have a way to receive them into the city.....

Nevertheless, decisiveness is of utmost importance at the moment. If he had not blocked off the gate, the city might have already been lost by sunset.

Under the illumination of the twinkling stars, a sharp blowing horn sound came from the tents erected by the natives. Hearing this familiar noise made by their own people, the riders that were constantly harassing Robert and his men suddenly turned back.

"What are they doing?" Robert frowns at the sight.

The commanding officer nearby is a local of the Northwest. Thinking over the question, he looks up into the dark sky and said: "My lord, it must be midnight. The prairie natives have a custom where they burn the corpses of their brethren at this time. In their minds, they believe midnight is the time where the soul of the dead ascends to the heavens. During this period, they will stop everything and focus on only that .... I estimate we have about an hour before they resume their attack."

"An hour?" Robert lets out a long relieving sigh: "If so, we can finally rest for a bit."

"I don't think so my lord!" Contrary to Robert's expression, the commander had a look that was even worse than before: "I think we have an even bigger problem on our hands!"

"Why?"

The commander began to whisper his words, "I went to the prairie before and my father even participated in the war 20 years ago. If these people are willing to go so far as to stop fighting in the middle of a battle, then there is only one explanation!"

“Oh?”

The expression on this guy became very unpleasant like he didn't want to say the next part: “Within their ranks is a SHAMAN!! Only a shaman is capable of sending off the soul of the dead. Like the magicians of the empire, these shamans wield powers beyond our imagination.”

Robert could not say a single word. Turning to look at the tents down below, he could only smile bitterly at their situation: “Magicians.... Shamans..... GOD DAMMIT!! Why the hell did the shamans not attack us earlier with their main force this afternoon?”

In return, the commander shakes his head: “My lord, my knowledge is not complete, but I've heard the shamans are different from us because they follow their own set of strange rules. Unlike our magicians that can harm someone at will, Shamans will only retaliate under certain circumstances. This is especially true in times of war where they will only attack when the other side makes the first move. If a Shaman does kill someone without reason, it is perceived as a sin in their culture.”

“Strange rules.....” Robert's hand that was holding his sword tightens up a bit.

“My lord.” The commander suddenly made a pitiful laugh. Though this guy is not handsome by any standard, but his eyes were carrying a sense of determination: “I think by the break of dawn, the shaman will make his move... Whether we can live to see the next sunset is questionable at this point, but I do want you to know it's been a great honor to serve by your side and die under the Tulip Flag!”

Robert was silent for a long moment as he faced this usually quiet subordinate. Taking in a deep breath, Robert raises his own sword into the air and cried out in a loud voice: “Everything is for the family!”

“For the family!” This commander also drew his sword and gently tapped it against Robert's sword.

# Chapter 227 “Breaking Into The Camp Alone!” (Part Two)

In the eyes of the defenders, this hour seems to be exceptionally long, but at the same time, it was also very short.

Nevertheless, Robert knows that this time would likely be his end! Surrounded on all sides, he can't even send word to the young master of what is happening.

From the camp of the prairie wolves, the sound of numerous horns began to blow out. To the people down below, this may have sounded like a mourning call to the dead, but to Robert and his men, this was like an orchestra of death! The reason is no other, once these people finish their ritual, they would undoubtedly begin their next assault. And this time..... There will be Shamans in the upcoming battle!

Finally, with the end of the ritual, Robert inherently puffed out his chest. Maybe it was because of his agitation, the wound on his arm and shoulder began to ache again. From below his bandaged arm, blotches of blood began to drench out again, thus making it very uncomfortable for the loyal knight.

Ha! He's about to be a dead man already, why should he care anymore.

Knight Robert can only bitterly sneer at himself. Resting the tip of his sword to the ledge, rays of killing and death beamed out of his eyes.

With each buckling and clanking, large numbers of prairie riders marched out of their camp and filed into a somewhat orderly file. Then from the middle of the pack, dozens of bare-chested men carrying several huge stakes marched out of their ranks and began impaling their load into the ground.

These human tall stakes were all stationed outside of Robert's reach. Unable to have his archers shoot the bastards, he became perplexed at their intent.

But then the ensuing scene sent unbridled fury through every inch of Robert's body!!!

Slowly but surely, the prairie natives started to carry out large number of corpses from the back. With only a few glances, Robert could already make out these bodies were the corpses of his fallen comrades. The reason these corpses are in the hands of these prairie wolves is because they had fallen off the wall after being shot by the enemy arrow or killed by the sword.

Beside his own soldiers, there are also the slaves!!

Maybe it's due to the lack of ore and metal in the prairie, but after gathering up the dead bodies, the prairie warriors quickly stripped the dead of their worldly possessions. Left with only their natural born birth clothes, every single one of the corpses were left naked with their former armor being crookedly worn by their murderers.

Gathered up into a neat pile on the ground, one of the more bulkier looking native stepped out from the crowd and came right up to the corpses. Carrying a humongous curved blade, this individual loudly said a few words before doing something unimaginable.

From afar, Robert couldn't clearly hear what the guy was saying, but after the end of the speech, the rest of the prairie warriors all raised their own blades and began crying out like wild animals.

"What are they trying to do?" Robert's face went dark at what is about to transpire.

"My lord! They just declared ... .. The massacring of the city!" The nearby commanding officer grits his teeth as he explained the next part.

"Massacring the city!?"

"Yes!" This officer suddenly punched the wall so hard that drops of blood were dripping off his fist: "They..... They are going to erect HEAD SPIKES!!" After his word, stream of tears leaked out the corner of his eyes.

Not waiting for Robert to ask for more information, a loud booming roar came from the bulkier looking native. Like they had just received an order, the dozen or so ba

re chested natives all took out their butchering knives and began their job of decapitating the dead Tulip soldiers.

Before long, isles of spiked bloodied heads were laid out before everyone's eyes!

Such a move immediately sent fury and anger through all the soldiers up on the wall. If the gate wasn't already sealed, some of the Tulip soldiers would have likely rushed out to avenge their fallen comrades!!

It can't be helped. Even for the usually calm and self-controlled Robert, his eyes were bloodshot red with anger and due to the rage boiling inside; his somewhat handsome face become distorted. If not for the nearby commanding officer insistence to stop him, Robert might have already jumped down the wall to charge the enemy.

"My lord!!!!" The officer had veins popping in his eyes at this point: "My lord! This is a common trick used by the prairie natives to lure the enemy out into the open! We mustn't fall for their scheme!!!!"

Robert knew his subordinate was right. Letting out a frustrate roar at the people down below: "Beasts! A group of wild beasts! If I get a chance, I will have you all turned into head spikes!!!!!"

Like Robert, Du Wei was also watching everything from the distant hilltop.

Using Eagle's eye, he was able to witness the entire thing unfold like he was next to the event.

Though he didn't quite show the anger swelling inside but everyone nearby can tell their lord's body was trembling. Then when the part where the heads were finally impaled to the stake, an overwhelming chill erupted out of Du Wei's body. This was no magic, it was just pure hatred.

"My Lord ... .. You ... .."

Ziggy (the leader of the magic apprentices) tried to speak.

Turning his head, Du Wei looked over at this faithful student of his and said: "It's a shame you couldn't see what just happened.... I really don't know if it's a misfortune or a fortune that you didn't."

With that, he forcefully calms himself: "Gather up everyone, we will charge over!"

“We can’t!!” Ziggy immediately objected.

“What did you say?!”

Seeing the anger in Du Wei’s eyes, Ziggy suddenly had a chill run through his neck: “My lord, I was in the army for a while. In situations like these, the city garrison would usually seal the gate when they are vastly outnumbered! We are simply too few in numbers with only 800 riders to face off against 20,000 enemies. Whether we can pass through the enemy lines is one thing, it’s another problem of making it inside the city. If we end up being trapped outside the city with the enemy well on our heels.....”

Du Wei was silent for a good moment as he went over all the variables in his head. Without delay, he quickly came to a conclusion.

“Let’s do this then, I will charge into the city alone. I’m a magician; I can fly through the air and make it inside.....” Not letting Du Wei finish, Ziggy already wanted to object to this proposal; however, this kid was silenced with the murdering gaze from his lord: “Ziggy, this place is too close to the enemy camp so have them gain some distance, about two mile should do. By the break of dawn, Guptad should be here with reinforcements..... When I give the signal atop of the gate.... You and everyone are to charge out at the enemy, understand?!”

Hearing his orders, Ziggy still wanted to speak despite the consequences: “But my lord, you are only one person.....”

“I’m asking do you understand!!” Du Wei suddenly cried out this sentence, his eyes tightly aimed at Ziggy: “I’m the Duke, all decisions are made by me, now obey!!”

“My lord, you are the leader, the Duke, but....!” Ziggy continues to try.

“Ziggy, remember my words.” Du Wei takes in a deep breath before saying his next words very clearly: “There are things one cannot do..... But there are also some things one must do!!”

Just as the barbaric prairie wolves were celebrating under the gruesome presence of the heads spiked, a dark gloomy cloud was quietly drifting over their heads without anyone’s notice.

Suddenly, a loud boom like a thunder's strike came down from their backs.

BANG!!!

With a loud explosive sound, the sky above their heads released a burst of thundering strikes, all landing right at the heart of the native's camp.

In a flash, many of the tents succumbed to the rapidly spreading fire with numerous casualties caught in the blaze.

Riding on his brave steed, Du Wei stood alone as he charged at the enemy camp of 20,000!

Just now, the thunder magic he used is the highest fifth ranked spell of that element in his possession. If not for the magic ring on his finger which he can tap into for replenishment, Du Wei would have already been drained by his little stunt.

In the midst of the burning flames, many of the prairie wolves were already aware of the sudden intruder. Not needing any orders, dozens or so of the riders had already let their arrows loose in an attempt to kill the solo rider.

Facing the shower of arrows coming his way, Du Wei did not want to take any risk. With one hard tap of his feet against the saddle, his entire body was already high up in the air. With his arms opened wide, he began to chant his next range of spells.

Wrapped in a silvery glow, his open arms looked like he could embrace the entire sky itself! As the pressuring dark clouds moved in under his guidance, bolts after bolts of lightning began to spark around the looming mass.

"Die!!"

With one point of his finger, another bolt of lightning came hammering down at the thickest crowd down below.

In mere seconds, flames began embroiling the entire terrain!!

As if he was the very incarnate of the thunder god, Du Wei's musical hand seems to have the mystical power to control nature itself. So long as he wills it, bolts of lightning will continue to rain down at the enemy on the ground; this was the very impression the prairie wolves had of him.

Mixed in with the loud bangs, there would always be the screaming cries of pain and panic; What's more, mounds of burnt corpses would always lie in the lightning's wake.

After sending 10 consecutive strikes down to the enemy, a two meter ravine was blasted out of the flat terrain by sheer force that went dozens of meters deep. For those that were lucky enough to survive Du Wei's punishing assault, just seeing the aftermath of what he did sent shivers down their spines.

As expected of a fifth ranked thunder strike spell. Thanks to Du Wei's five colored magic ring, he was able to release such an intensive blow in one single go! Nevertheless, such a stunt had completely drained the ring's magic reserve he had so painstakingly built up. Under normal circumstances, Du Wei knows he would have already become a mummy by now from over exhausting himself.

Giving a quick scan of his effort, Du Wei believes the casualties should be no less than a thousand people. Satisfied with the result, he began heading straight for Anglia City's wall after drawing out the last remnant of energy from his ring.

Both angry and surprised by the sudden turn of events, many tried drawing their bow in an effort to shoot Du Wei out of the air. However, due to how high he was and the recoiling air blowing off his body, no arrow could even come close before being knocked off course.

Just as things looked like nothing could stop Du Wei at this point, a strange voice suddenly echoed out from one of tents on the ground. The way this voice sounded was almost like how a mage sounded while chanting a spell, but it was exceptionally slow and piercing.

When the voice reached Du Wei, his mind inherently became upset. Realizing this, Du Wei became shocked because out of nowhere, a huge blood-red flag suddenly appeared before his eyes. Panning dozens of meters wide, the symbol of a red skull is clearly imprinted on this thing.

A Blood Red Skull flag?

Hard pressing his body to a halt, Du Wei was barely able to stop himself from crashing into this weird flag.

Following a fragile intermittent sound, the strange voice seems to be able to



pierce right into Du Wei's eardrum without any way for him to defend himself.

"May I know which Magician of the Roland Empire made his presence today?!"

Before the sound could even die down, a white robed old man charged right out from the ground and came up to the same height as Du Wei in the air. With long grey hair, most of his face could not be seen, but Du Wei can make out one feature, this guy's skin was way too pale.

Like this, this person is casually floating atop of the blood red flag. Matching the red with the paleness of this old man, it almost gave off the vibe that this person is a ghost!

"I'm his grace's direct subordinate, Ivory Teeth shaman. Dear Roland magician, please state your name!"

State my name?

"Your MOM!" This is the only reply Du Wei gave.

## Chapter 228 “Surprise Attack”

Since Du Wei is already infuriated with these prairie natives, he would of course not be in any mood to answer this Ivory Teeth Shaman’s question.

Name?

What’s the point of being so fancy? Just get to the point and fight!!

After leaving the Shaman flabbergasted with his Chinese swearing, Du Wei took the initiative and made the first move.

Respected by all in the prairie and a white robe shaman directly under the Shaman King, his strength is undeniable to all his peers. Moreover, this Ivory Teeth Shaman is also a well learned scholar in all sorts of fields like: astronomy, geography, and medicine.

However, no matter how upright and knowledgeable this scholar is, Du Wei’s “Your MOM” – spoken in Chinese – is something he simply cannot understand. Just as this old man was thinking the name was very strange, Du Wei already launched a hail of fireballs directly at him.

Looking at the distance between the two, the gap can neither be called far nor close; therefore, is the only way Du Wei can sneak a strike into this hateful guy after exhausting his magic earlier to use the only trick left in his sleeve: GUNPOWDER!

Not saying a single incantation, Du Wei only needed to raise both hands to release dozens of fireballs in rapid succession.

By the time this white robe Shaman realized what was happening, the assault was already in his face: “Despicable!” This was all he could cry out in such short notice.

With that, this old man hastily waves his sleeves and began to slide behind the red skull flag under his feet.

Nevertheless, this despicable move of Du Wei’s is not so easily denied! The fireballs may seem simple at first but that’s not the case. Some are slower,

some are faster, some will change trajectory midway, and some will explode upon colliding with another.

So many changing variables isn't something easy to foresee.

Wave after wave, hundreds of fireballs has already surrounded the Ivory Teeth Shaman from all direction like fireflies in a wheat field.....

POW!

With a single flick of his finger, one of the floating fireballs suddenly exploded.

First is a mini explosion. Then like a domino effect, the rest of the flaming balls all exploded in succession to create a terrifying blast that soon enveloped the entire vicinity near the Shaman.

BOOMMM!!!

If time were to be slowed down at this moment, the onlookers would be able to see that the first flaming ball to explode is the one next to the Shaman's left rib. From the recoiling blast, several other fireballs soon followed suit and from it, several strange flaming chains appeared to tightly bound the Shaman on the spot. No matter how he struggled during that brief period, the poor Shaman just couldn't break free!

This move was created following the event where he had to face off against Green Robed Gandalf. After digging deeper and deeper in what he can do, he was soon able to come up with a myriad of changes by using some simple skills he had from his previous life..... Since Du Wei is from the 20th century, his favorite childhood game was tossing marbles during lunch hours. As anyone that played the game, it takes quite the skill to toss the marble to the proper spot, right?

With the sky lit ablaze, this white robed Shaman was instantly engulfed in flames.

Quivering with rage over his own folly, this White Robe Shaman never once thought Du Wei would be so despicable. Unlike this kid, he is someone that participated in the war 20 years ago and had even crossed paths with numerous white robed wizards of the Roland Empire. Compared to those people from the past, this kid doesn't have a single hint of a m

aster's style!

Fortunately any Shaman that came down from the snowy mountain – especially someone like him a white Robed Shaman – would have a lifesaving treasure on hand. With a single thought, the beaded necklace that was hanging off his neck instantly turned dark, and from it, a black cloud of air came gushing out of it to cover his entire body....

Nevertheless, the old man's attempt was still a tad too late.

Mainly because of how vile Du Wei's sneak attack was, the flames were able burn some important parts of his old body before the black cloud could fend it off.

Although the black smoke did form a transparent barrier to disperse the flames, but when it was all over, this old man was in so much pain that he nearly fell out of the sky right then and there.

Not only was his right arm completely blown apart, the flesh on both his elbows were incinerated to the point where even the white skeletal bones underneath could be seen. Aside from the charred remnants of his white robe, many other parts of his body received certain levels of burns that left it hard to look at without wanting to puke.

Both angry and afraid, Ivory Teeth Shaman kept questioning his own sanity at this moment. He was under the assumption a magician must say the incantation aloud in order to manifest a spell, yet this kid not only didn't say a single word when casting, he even started a fight without any forewarning.

Since he succeeded once, Du Wei became even more confident. Following his own "Kick you while you are down" logic, Du Wei pulled out two bottles from his robe and uncapped it. Unlike the previous fire element, he is using a water based spell this time to pull out the green liquid inside the bottles.....

And what is this green liquid? It is the corrosive mucus he saved from the corpse eating monster he slayed back in the frozen forest. Compared to a concentrated dose of sulfuric acid, this corrosive mucus is even more powerful because in one of the experiments he did back in his lab, a single drop of this stuff could even burn a hole right through a standard military armor!

Seeing how Ivory Teeth's figure was starting to emerge from the exploding lights, Du Wei couldn't afford to overthink this. In one single swing of his hand, the liquid was sent flying towards the intended target.

Poor Ivory Teeth, he was already a mess to begin with after being attacked in such an unexpected fashion; therefore, when he wanted to retaliate, the first thing to welcome his sight was some mysterious green liquid. From the foul smell alone, he can already tell this stuff is not something good!!

Without dallying about, he already had his body dodge to the side. Nevertheless, he was still too late like before. Though his main body was fine in the end, the green ooze still managed to cling onto his right arm's elbow. Although the pain alone from this repulsive liquid is enough to cause a regular person to faint away, but Ivory Teeth still managed to pull through because he knew that once this is all over, he can return to the snowy mountain and have his flesh regrown and reshaped using the secret arts of his people.

However ... .. Just when he thought everything would be alright, a strange and unexpected "buzzing" sound suddenly came from his elbow that caused his heart to skip a beat.

Finding his eyes turning dark at that moment, Ivory Teeth didn't need to think anymore and simply bit down on his tongue. With blood spraying out of his mouth, his sight immediately turned to where the green slime was on his elbow. What he saw next is the scene of his flesh and bone rapidly melting away like an ice cube dunked in a cup of hot water!

The shock this time around is no joke. Ivory Teeth may be able to regrow his flesh after expending some efforts, but if the bone in his right arm is gone too then he really will become a cripple. What's worse, not only did the slime eat away at his right arm's wound, the effects of the green ooze seems to be trending upwards towards his chest.

Gnawing his teeth with unimaginable hate, Ivory Teeth really wanted to ignore everything and get vengeance at the kid before him; however, reason still got the better of this old Shaman. Without any doubt or hesitation, Ivory Teeth used his left hand to reach up to his right shoulder and with a single hard tug; he actually forcibly ripped his right arm entirely off.....

Grnack!!

Under the crisp sound of bones breaking apart, a spray of blood rained down from the sky!

While this Shaman known as Ivory Teeth is suffering from immense pain, Du Wei instead had a grinning face of success. Taking the window of opportunity he created, Du Wei already had his sword drawn and was charging it right at the opposition.

Since Du Wei already succeeded twice, there's no reason he shouldn't keep going right? In fact, it wouldn't even make sense if he stopped now. He may have no prior experience in fighting a Shaman before but based on his impression thus far, these shamans shouldn't be much different from the magicians of the empire in terms of martial skills. Using the mithril dagger he got from the Lister Family, Du Wei intends to end it all with this thrust to the Shaman's heart.

Ivory teeth may be heavily injured, but his mind is still clear. Seeing how Du Wei was charging at him with a blade in hand, this old guy can already guess the kid's intent. Inwardly, Ivory Teeth was already filled with absolute hatred towards Du Wei. Not only did the kid sneak so many attacks against him, his right arm is even crippled for good. Even if he does make it back to the snowy mountain and heal his body, Ivory Teeth knows full well his strength will have to take a major blow due to his right arm's loss.

Thinking of this, Ivory Teeth suddenly screamed: "Despicable Roland men, die!!"

Grinning from corner to corner, this old guy not only didn't move back at Du Wei's charging dagger, he even moved forward to tightly grip onto Du Wei's body.

Poof!

Du Wei's dagger may have managed to pierce into Ivory Teeth's chest, but due to the rib cage's interference, the dagger somehow managed to lodge itself into one of the rib bones halfway in.

Instead of letting out a painful cry like one should in these situations, Ivory

Teeth only snickered a maddening laugh.

In Du Wei's mind, he knew something bad is about to happen if he leaves things be. Moreover, this old guy even sprayed his face with a mouthful of blood that left him worrying about its properties. If it was anything like his green ooze..... Just thinking up to here is sending him into a frantic state. Nevertheless, try as he may like, Du Wei just couldn't get this annoying old man off his body.

It was at this moment what he feared the most began to take place!

Unlike the weight of a regular old man, Du Wei suddenly found this Ivory Teeth to be exceptionally heavy.

At first he only thought this guy didn't fit his size, but it didn't take long for Du Wei to find something was amiss here because the word "heavy" doesn't do this thin old man justice. If he had to find a word to describe this, it would be a mountain!!

Though he didn't know the exact weight, but it only took one "pew" sound to reach his ears to make Du Wei realize he and Ivory Teeth is falling towards the ground at high speed.

Again and again Du Wei increased the power of his flight spell, but try as he may; it made no difference in their trajectory. At this point, Du Wei finally started to panic..... "This jerk, how heavy is he really? 1000 pound? 10,000 pound? Falling from such high altitude, even if I don't die, it's certain to cripple him!"

Not good, old sir here is heading to the grave today!

Just as this thought flashed across Du Wei's mind, a warm hand suddenly began pulling against his waist. Looking down, the first thing that came into Du Wei's sight was a flutter of silver hair. Seeing this familiar scene, Du Wei inherently made a curse: "Semel, you damn woman! Why the hell did you not come out sooner! You just have to wait till I'm about to die here!"

Semel was already holding onto Du Wei's back with all her might. With her hair and red robe fluttering in the wind, she could only utter these words with a serious face: "Stupid boy, shut up already... .. I ... .. I can't keep this up any

longer. This guy is too heavy!!”



# Chapter 229 “Semel’s Real Body” (Part 1)

Like this, the trio continued to drop out of the sky. Despite the constant struggle made by Du Wei and Semel, the two simply couldn’t stop this Ivory Teeth Shaman. Knowing this, the duo was even more terrified by their situation.

The spell from this shaman really is scary!

What Du Wei didn’t know is that this shamanistic spell used by Ivory Teeth allows him to call upon the nearby earth spirits to come to his aid. Once gathered, the body of the caster would then take on the properties of a whole mountain, so how can he not be heavy?

Even for Semel, her usually crisp and delicate voice took a turn for the worse when she shouted out aloud: “I got an idea!!”

With a silvery glow in her eyes, Semel somehow managed to change the direction in where the trio was supposed to hit to a spot where a large haystack was located – likely left in the enemy camp to feed the horses.

With a loud thud, the trio landed into the pile of straws like a meteorite smashing through the atmosphere. For Du Wei, this impact could only be called earthshattering because the first thing he noticed was the crackling sound running through his entire body. Who knows how many bones he broke in this fall.....

On the other hand, Ivory Teeth continues to tightly grip onto Du Wei’s body like an iron clamp, refusing to let go for dare life.

Who knows where Du Wei got the sudden surge of strength. Instead of moaning out in pain, the first reaction he got was to pull the dagger out from the Shaman’s chest and aim it straight towards the person’s neck.....

soooosss!!

With the dagger pierced into that frail flesh, a rain of blood splashed onto Du Wei’s face.

Knowing his end is here, Ivory Teeth had his eyes pinned onto Du Wei’s and

said this in his dying breath: “You will die under the blood skull flag!”

With that, all life left Ivory Teeth’s body to leave behind only a hateful grin.

Noticing the burden above his body was starting to lighten up, Du Wei mustered up the last of his strength to push the load off of himself. Feeling the sharp pain that followed, Du Wei can already speculate several of his bones were broken.

Then abruptly, everything in the surroundings changed to a crimson red like he was in a sea of blood!

And within this sea of red, a pair of dark wide eyes was floating there across from his sight which was filled with the flavor of the person whom summoned it.....

After being stunned for a second, Du Wei immediately regained his thoughts because the image before him is clearly the blood skull flag!!

Even before death, this bastard just had to release the blood skull flag to trap him and Semel inside it.

Du Wei would of course understand the danger this flag posed and sure enough, he immediately sensed the pressure that came with it on his body.

He originally wanted to stab his dagger into this annoying flag, but when he did try this little stunt, a sensation like an electric shock ran through his hand from the dagger’s handle upon impact. Quickly letting the dagger go to protect his precious hand, Du Wei found that he did succeed in stabbing his intended target, but in the end, his efforts did nothing to change the problem at hand. Melting away like cheese, the mithril dagger known to be exceptionally durable was quickly integrated into the blood skull flag and leaving behind in its wake is Du Wei’s somewhat charred hand.

Right now, Du Wei as a whole was covered from top to bottom in this blood skull flag. Knowing this, Du Wei began to curse: “Fuck, what the hell is this accursed thing?!”

“Blood skull flag.” Semel was also standing up no

w, and due to the limited room in this enclosure, Semel’s body was up tight

against Du Wei's.

Flicking up a brow, Du Wei cried out: "Quit it with the useless words, of course I know it's the blood skull flag, but what exactly is this thing....."

Speaking up to this point, a light fragrance suddenly wafted into his nose that caused Du Wei to jump out in realization. Giving Semel a weird glance, Du Wei is certain this smell was coming off from this woman. Then adding in the scene from earlier where Semel used her hands to help push his body in midair, he can only come to one conclusion: "You..... You have a body?! You have a body now?!"

This shock is no small thing because Semel was originally a magic creature that had no physical form. Yet, she not only has a physical body now, there's even a sweet fragrance coming off from her?!

Semel coldly looks at Du Wei like she was looking at a fool: "You think this is the time to discuss such a thing?"

Listening to Semel's tone, Du Wei suddenly had his emotions sink because her voice was very strange.

The truth is that ever since he came into the possession of this magic creature, there had always been many many secrets surrounding this woman. At the beginning she was only an illusion that could teach him star magic and would sometimes tease him with those pair of legs of hers. However, with the passage of time, she abruptly revealed her magical powers in the frozen forest and even managed to duke it out with Hussein for a good while.....Such a task is not something a mere illusion can pull off.

And it is exactly from that point on where things started to change. Though she would always come out in the critical moments to save him, but once it was over, she would forget the whole ordeal and would even make him describe the entire story to her.

Then later when she met Gandalf (the white one), her personality completely changed. Not only did she stop responding to his calls, the number of times she appeared before him nearly went to nil.

It was as if the air surrounding this magic creature was starting to slowly

change into the real Semel recorded in history.

As for the magic illusion that would flash those pair of legs before his eyes, she was starting to fade away like she was being overshadowed by the new Semel.....

At this moment, Semel's face was serious and her eyes carried a sense of majesty that left Du Wei somewhat displeased by how he was being looked at.

Giving this woman a deep glance, Du Wei thought: "she couldn't really have become the same Semel recorded in history, right?"

However, this moment is not the time to ponder over these issues because the blood skull flag was starting to tighten up around the two.

It was clear Ivory Teeth had used his dying breath to amplify the blood skull flag to a bigger size. With the death of the caster, this ominous flag began to shrink again and tighten its grip.....

"So hot!" Du Wei frowns: "The inside here is starting to get searing hot!"

Grunting, Semel suddenly floated up to grab at the flag. From the palm of her hand, an obvious layer of transparent ice had formed to counteract the heat; however, the attempt was for naught. With a thin layer of white smoke, Du Wei can only hear the painful cry of Semel before finding her retreating in haste. Then with another glance, the layer of ice had already melted away without any sign of it ever being there.

"This thing wouldn't really melt both of us in here, right?" Du Wei smiles wryly at his own words.

"I think this thing is similar to the empire's death magic. Like how a dark mage would use a dark crystal ball to absorb the souls of the dead, this flag might be trying to absorb us like that too." Semel's expression was dark and gloomy: "Do you have any means to break it? Try your thunder strike spell."

Du Wei bitterly smiled: "Sister, look at where you are standing! There's not a cloud in sight, how do you expect me to call down a lightning strike?"

Little by little, the flag continues to encroach against its prey. Seeing this, Semel suddenly took a step back. With her arms open wide, she wrapped her

body around Du Wei's to shield him from danger.

"You!"

"I what!" Semel looked cold: "I'm a magic creature and this body was only created by me for this situation. As long as you live, I live!"

Letting out a long breath, Du Wei suddenly found his back being pushed at by two soft mounds. Noticing his body was having a reaction; Du Wei had to keep reminding himself that this woman is the Rowling House's ancestor so stop having such wild thoughts!!

Though he was thinking this, he still couldn't stop himself from gazing back at Semel. When his sight met with the woman behind him, the first reaction he got from her was a wide stare and an angry bashing: "You..... What the hell are you fantasizing?"

Hearing this, Du Wei only then remembered this woman can read every inch of his thoughts, including the perverted ones he just imagined!

## Chapter 229 “Semel’s Real Body” (Part 2)

With one strong wake up call, Semel’s body began to gradually show signs of weakening. Surprised by this, Du Wei inherently looked towards her back where it was touching the crimson flag and saw that it was fading into transparency.

“Don’t worry about me. As long as you don’t die, I won’t die..... It’s just that this body I so painstakingly created will become useless so soon..... Hurry and take out that bow of yours and shoot this damn thing!” She urged him in a hurry.

After a pause, Semel then suddenly curled her lips into a smile: “Boy, you better not have any more funny thoughts like just now when I show up in the future, otherwise, I will break those legs of yours!”

With that, her body finally dissipated into nothingness after shattering into numerous glitters of light.

As for what’s happening outside in the enemy camp, these brutish savages were all rejoicing with great pride. Earlier when Du Wei single handedly charged into their ranks and decimated their companions with the lightning strikes over their heads, these natives were already infuriated by this. Then just when they thought the lone attacker would get away from their hands, their own white robed Shaman finally took action and flew into the air to stop the assailant.

Towards these prairie natives, a Shaman’s status is not only mysterious and powerful, they symbolize hope. Now that the very figure which represented all this decided to make his move, these natives would of course believe the assailant is doomed for sure!

Nevertheless, the situation quickly took a turn for the worse. Not even a few rounds had passed; Ivory Teeth was already finished off by Du Wei. One really has to pity this old guy. If it was just a comparison of strength between Du Wei and Ivory teeth, Du Wei would without a doubt be no match for this old Shaman. It’s just that Du Wei’s ability to pull off sneak attacks is simply too extraordinary. Even during the fight with Gandalf in the capital, Du Wei still managed to almost come out on top so how can this Ivory Teeth not suffer at

his hands?

Seeing their own Shaman and the enemy falling to the ground together, the prairie natives immediately swarmed to their location. But unlike the victorious scene they had so hoped for, these natives only saw the crimson flag covering the two.

Falling into disarray, the native army was only able to suppress the chaotic situation thanks to their leader's might.

“Scatter! Scatter!! Surround the Blood Skull Flag!!! Don't let that guy get away!!! No one will be able to flee from the Blood Skull Flag!!!!”

Under this order, the prairie natives fanned out to form an enormous circle with the flag in the middle.

Riding a black steed, this dominating figure of the native army is not only majestic looking in the way he held his head high, he even wore an armor that was extremely rare even in the Roland Empire: an armor made of pure gold!!

Due to the lack of mineral deposits in the grassland, the majority of the natives could only wear some form of leather armor, thus making their defense very weak. To be able to wear a full set of metallic armor, they can only be of senior general rank or higher.

Therefore, one can only imagine how high this person really is when his armor is made out of pure gold.

Needless to say, this person in question with his signature gold wolf helmet is the leading general of this attack – Gold Wolf Head General of the royal court!

“Surround the blood skull flag! He won't get away! Cut the bastard's head up and turn him into a spiked skull!!!” Gold Wolf Head General's roar was like a wild animal. In

mere moments, all the native soldiers were obeying his orders without any sign of confusion or panic in their ranks.

As such, when they saw how the blood skull flag was shrinking in size, these barbarians were all grinning with contempt because in their eyes, none will be able to escape the deathly grip of the crimson flag, even if the person in

question is a magician of the Roland Empire!

However, just when Gold Wolf General thought all will end as predicted, his smile suddenly petrified like something unimaginable just happened.

Instead of continuing to shrink in size, the blood skull flag covering Du Wei suddenly began to swell up like a hot air balloon. In no time at all, the size became so large that the nearby natives instinctively took a step back from where they stood.....

Beating like their hearts were about to explode, every native at that moment was thinking: Can it be this magician of the Roland Empire.....

Just when they wanted to doubt this idea, a loud yet clear noise inside the crimson flag completely shattered any fantasy these natives still had lingering in their minds.

**BANG!!!**

In the very next moment, a subtle gold light almost the size of a needle penetrated out of the rapidly expanding balloon!

Like the sun's ray, this light soared into the sky and continued to go at a speed like it could pierce the very heavens itself.

Then almost immediately, a series of cracks began to form around the small needle hole on the flag..... With an ear piercing boom, the balloon like flag finally shattered into hundreds of pieces!

For those unfortunate enough to be too close to the source, they were sent flying out of the crowd from the violent aftershock of the explosion.

Once the wave finally dissipated and the smoke cleared, the only figure left standing at the epicenter is the one and only Du Wei. With his bow in hand, Du Wei had one of his feet atop of the Ivory Teeth's lifeless body!

Standing proudly, he gave every single one of the surrounding natives a victorious stare. Then without any sign, he bellowed out three big laughs: "Humph, what shaman, what blood skull flag, it's nothing much!"

Once he said this, he scanned the audience like his gaze could zap them like ants in a thunderstorm.



As if taken aback by his eyes, the natives instinctively took two steps back like their life depended on it.

In their minds, these natives only had one thought:

Impossible! Impossible! Not only was a white robed shaman so easily killed, the sacred blood skull flag was even shredded to hundreds of pieces! This guy.... Is he even human?!

Though Du Wei may be laughing on the outside, he is in fact so weak that even standing is difficult for him. Feeling the pain in his chest, he didn't dare delay his departure as he took to the sky and went straight for Anglia city's wall.

Despite watching Du Wei leave before their very eyes, these natives didn't even make a peep. Instead, their focus was solely aimed at the already deceased Shaman lying there on the ground.

Then out of nowhere, Gold Wolf Head General suddenly had a burst of cold gleam spewing out of his eyes. Grabbing his lance, this great general then jumped atop of his steed without mounting like he was readying his body for a powerful attack. Almost instantaneous, a searing flame erupted from the spear just right before he shot it out towards Du Wei in the sky!

Du Wei would of course hear the piercing sound of the spear coming up from behind him while in midair, but due to depleting both his magic and physical strength, he was unable to dodge this frightening strike..... Moreover, this Gold Wolf General is one of the strongest warriors in the prairie. An attack infused with the full might of this individual, how can Du Wei possibly dodge it in his current state when he can barely keep himself afloat?

Though he did his best to move his body in the air, Du Wei in the end simply couldn't avoid being hit. Fortunately he did manage to avoid the fatal parts and had it pierce through his shoulder. Like a bird that had lost its wings, Du Wei began to stumble at first before finally falling out of the sky.

Good news is that Du Wei was already above the city wall when this happened.

Bad news is that when he came crashing down, he ended up breaking several stones along the way when Knight Robert jumped up to elevate his fall.

“My lord, my lord!!!” Robert heavily shook Du Wei in an attempt to wake his lord. As for Du Wei, he can only feel how life drainingly painful his shoulder was.

When he finally opened his eyes, the first image Du Wei saw was the emotional expression coming out of Robert’s face. With his heart sinking, Du Wei cried out: “Lift me up, fast!”

“My lord, let me send you down to rest!” Robert begged.

“Help me up!!!” Du Wei growled in a low voice: “I am the leader. After being shot out of the sky, the morale of our people will be gone if I don’t show myself!!”

With that, he suddenly bit his teeth. Who knows where Du Wei got the strength, but with one breath, he managed to stand upright with one of his hands leaning against the wall. As he peered out into the general direction of his attacker, it was obvious to him where this Gold Wolf General was located among the flames based upon the brightly lit gold helmet he wore.

Mustering up his immense spirit, Du Wei straightened his body and began to loudly scold at those down below: “Who was the bloody bastard that attacked me from behind?! If you got the nerve, come out and let old sir here have a look!!”

Seeing how this guy was clearly shot down by his spear, Gold Wolf General was somewhat perplexed by how this person could still stand there and scold him in such a booming voice. Nevertheless, he is still the strongest warrior in the royal court. Riding forward to leave his men in the background, he snapped back: “Listen up boy; I am Gold Wolf Head General of the royal court. If you got the courage, report your name!!”

Laughing out in response, Du Wei gave Robert a signal by tilting his head a little. Taking the hint, Robert immediately shouted back with the loudest voice he could muster: “Foolish barbarians, this is the famous Duke Tulip and the youngest most talented magician of the empire!!”

Once Robert’s word ranged out, many of the defenders finally learned of the Duke’s arrival. Due to the darkness of the night, most of the people atop of the rampart simply couldn’t see what was happening out there other than the constant explosions running across the enemy camp. It’s not like everyone can

just use eagle's eye like Du Wei you know.

And now that Du Wei's identity has been made clear, the defenders were only silent for a moment before breaking out in a full blown cheer.

The Duke is here! The Duke is here to save us!!

Unlike the rising moral of the Tulip defenders, Gold Wolf head General's expression can only be called dark. With a trace of worry in his eyes, he asked again: "Oh! So you're the Duke of Tulip?"

"Aigh!" Du Wei suddenly sucked in a deep breath. Slowly, he took out his Nirvana's bow and aimed it right at the Gold Wolf Head: "The one that assaulted your men was I. The one to kill your Shaman was I. Just now you attacked me from behind, for that, I should just kill you here and then. However, I believe I've already seen enough blood today so I will let you live for now. As a little interest, I will let you have a little taste of what is to come tomorrow!"

With his words coming to an end, a silvery light came flying out from his bow and flew straight for Gold Wolf General's direction.

Before one can even react, the gold wolf helmet that was made out pure gold was knocked out of the wearers head by the powerful force.

Pang!

With that sound, the helmet was already on the ground.

Running a sea of cold sweat on his back, Gold Wolf Head General never thought this Duke could be so skilled. He is known as one of the strongest warriors in the prairie and his archery skill is top notch, but even he could never pull off such an amazing shot from such distance.

If that kid had shot his vitalss instead of the helmet.....

Just thinking of this left him scrambling to hide. In a low and somewhat panicking voice: "Retreat, retreat back to camp!!"

Watching how the native army was retreating, the Tulip defenders were all cheering aloud with great joy.

Like them, Du Wei could almost finally let out a sigh of relief.

The truth is he really wanted to finish off the enemy general in that one shot too. It's just that due to his lack of energy and a painful wound on his shoulder, just the feat of knocking the enemy's helmet off is a miracle in itself, let alone actually hurting the guy.

With a face as white as a sheet of paper, Du Wei barely manage to keep himself standing as he made a few steps down the stairs with the help of Robert by his side. Nevertheless, he soon found his body going numb as his consciousness slowly began to fade away.

Both sharp and quick witted, Knight Robert immediately moved up to block off the onlookers' line of sight with the help of the surrounding guards.

Gasping for breath, Du Wei whispered his last words: "Fast.... Take.... Take me to Solskjaer's place..... Hurry!"

With that, he finally fainted away as his head tilted to the side.

Right before he fainted, Du Wei only had one thought running through his mind:

Damn it, a hero really isn't easy to be! If there's a next time, I definitely won't pull another one man charge into the enemy camp thing again.....

Being emotionally moved, Robert hurriedly ordered his men to send Du Wei down.

All the while the defenders were still waving their banners as cheers run rampant.

"Long live the Duke of tulip!!!"

"Long live Tulip! Long live the Duke!!"

In tonight's darkness, the Tulip flag finally bloomed under the burning flames!

# Chapter 230 “Anglia City’s Secret!” (Part One)

Du Wei didn’t know how long he was unconscious for, but as a magician, his mental control is much higher than others; as such, he already reminded himself to wake up before he fainted away.

For this reason, the night didn’t even come to an end when he awoke.

Though the pain on his chest has eased by quite a bit, he still found himself suffering from immense dizziness when he tried moving his head.

“You be smart not to move and don’t try to think of what’s going on.” Gargamel’s voice could be heard from the side.

This little mouse once again transformed into a tall demi human mouse. If he were to show off this form to the others inside the city, the onlookers would do doubt die from shock and fear.

“My head is aching really badly.” Du Wei moaned loudly.

“This is normal.” With a cup in hand, Gargamel slowly forced fed the content into his mouth.

Du Wei frowned: “SO BITTER! ... .. What is ... .. Hmm, why do I smell a hint of ice berries in this stuff? It can’t be you are feeding me this stuff?”

“It’s just some drug ... .. I intentionally added in some ice berries to the concoction. You know it as well that ice berries will not only help ease the pain, it can also stimulate the recovery of one’s mental stamina. Although this stuff is heavily abused..... But don’t worry; I diluted the concentration to a level where it won’t harm you.”

Putting down the cup, Gargamel then grabbed a towel to wipe away the dregs that was clinging to Du Wei’s mouth.

“When will I recover?” Du Wei impatiently asked this question immediately.

“I must warn you my Duke, my little genius magician!” Gargamel’s voice

carried a tone of mockery: “First rule in the magicians’ guideline: “No magician is to ever deplete their magic under any circumstances. Otherwise, you will die a very ugly and horrible death. It can’t be you don’t even understand this simple rule, right?”

Du Wei gave a bitter laugh in return: “Of course I do.”

“Don’t think I’m joking around.” Gargamel seriously warned him: “For us Mages, our mind is the very root of our powers. If you overdraw on this source and exceed your limits, then problems will arise in your brain..... I know for a fact that in history there has been madman’s that drew on their magic excessively to the point where their very sanity was broken, do you want to become an idiot like them?”

“But I also heard overdrawing my powers will turn me into a human jerky.” Du Wei curled his mouth

“That outcome is the worst result.” Gargamel angrily scolded him: “Which would you like, become an idiot, or become a human jerky?”

Du Wei shrunk his neck in: “I don’t like either option.”

“Then listen to me and don’t try to overdraw your magic from now on. It was very dangerous this time..... If not for the rainbow colored ring on you..... You would have already become a human skeleton that was wrapped in a layer of skin.

After giving out a long sigh, Gargamel stared down at Du Wei ... .. This scene really was funny: not only was a giant mouse staring at you, his eyes even carried a little hint of reproach and pity.

But Du Wei could not laugh because he can sense the seriousness in Gargamel’s words.

“Right now, you are everyone’s leader.” Gargamel shrugged: “Whether we like it or not, this is the fact: you’re our head! A lot hinges on the

fate of your body, I, Hussein, Vivian, Queen Medusa... .. And those men of yours ... .. If something were to happen to you; the whole operation will become a mess. At least think about everyone else when you go on your little adventures even if you don’t care about your life,.”

After taking in the medication infused with a hint of ice Berries, the effect was very obvious. Before long, Du Wei's headache was already cured and as he struggled to sit upright, he was surprised by what he noticed when he touched his ribs: "My ribs?"

"Don't worry; I didn't have you drink the water from the fountain of life." The mouse shakes his head: "I'm quite capable in using some basic healing spells, though it's not very powerful, but a few bones is still within my reach."

Managing to climb down from the bed, Du Wei places his hand on the bed side to steady himself: "What time is it now?"

"If you go up to the window, you will see that the sun has just risen."

After a pause, Gargamel's tone suddenly became low: "Du Wei, I must apologize to you ... .. Even during the natives' siege, I couldn't do anything to help."

Du Wei waved his hand back and forth: "I understand ... .. There's no way you can go outside the way you are now."

Humans are one of the most brutal creatures in this world, especially towards extraterrestrials. If a humanoid mouse like Gargamel ran out all of a sudden, there's no doubt he would have been treated like a monster and caused a panic..... In the worst case scenario, he would even incur hostility from their own side!

The truth is that the only ones to know about Gargamel's existence are the members that had participated in the Frozen Forest adventure.

In addition, there is Solskjaer and Cosette inside Anglia City that knows of Gargamel's existence. For someone like Solskjaer that has followed him from the beginning, Du Wei already considers this magic genius a core member of his crew. As for Cosette.... Du Wei already used some underhanded methods to cheat this guy out of the magic union, even if the big headed genius doesn't want to, he has no other choice but to follow him till the end at this point.

This production base may be managed by Solskjaer and Cosette on the surface, but in truth, the two must constantly seek out the opinion of this mouse. Gargamel is after all a genuine magician that has been educated in the

proper format of magic. Even if the two geniuses have talent in the field of magic, experience is something that can't be replaced; moreover, Gargamel's level is still much higher than the two in reality.

“Soon my transformation magic will advance again.... At that time, I should barely be able to take on a human form..... Taking that opportunity to drink some of the water from the fountain of life.....” Gargamel pulls the curtain apart. As the sun's ray lit the room, he then turns to one side to blow out the candle: “I will be able to become a human again, but then my transformation magic will have to take a beating again.”

Du Wei sighs at the information: “Enough, let's not talk about all this. There are 20,000 prairie wolves outside, let's think of a plan to repel these savages away first..... I believe it wouldn't be wrong for me to assume you have some kind of surprise waiting for me, right?”

Du Wei blinked and blinked.

Hearing this, Gargamel nodded: “Yes... .. That stuff is already completed and the first batch is ready to go. Solskjaer and I tested it ourselves and felt it was pretty good. But you know, this kind of stuff is very consuming on the ‘water of aging’, especially when some of the saplings would wither away before we could force it to grow. My god..... If not for the special spring water in our hands, I'm afraid that even the richest emperor out there would not be able to afford such a thing.....”

Du Wei smiled: “Let me have a look.”

Turning around, Gargamel ran over to a corner of the room and flipped over one of the floor boards to reveal a secret tunnel underneath.

Du Wei eyes widened at the scene: “My God, when did you excavate a tunnel here? Does it lead to the secret warehouse?”

“Yes, that's right.” Gargamel sighs: “Don't forget, I cannot go swaggering across the whole place as I like while I'm like this. Even if I do go out, it will have to be at night with my whole bodied covered from top to toe..... This is very inconvenient and that's when I thought about digging a tunnel. From our lab here, I can directly head over to Solskjaer and Cosette's room without worry.”



Walking over to the tunnel, Du Wei looked down and gave a wry smile: “How much time did you spend getting this large tunnel ready? There’s no way you could have asked the slaves to help so did you dig it yourself?”

Gargamel mysteriously smiled: “Don’t forget, I’m a mouse and the specialty of a mouse is to dig holes!”

The tunnel wasn’t too wide, but as they made their way down, there are several forks and turns on the path. Not only that, it was cold, wet, and everywhere one looked are the glimmering patches of moss littered across the walls.

This here is the original governor’s mansion of Anglia City. Though it has fell into disrepair, Du Wei can tell with certainty the mouse did not dig this tunnel. Even if there were an army of mouse at his disposal, they still wouldn’t be able to pull off such a big project like this tunnel!

“Where did this secret tunnel come from?” Du Wei was surprised in a way.

Gargamel finally smiled ... ... Coming from a mouse face, his smile just seemed very strange: “Alright, I admit this tunnel wasn’t dug by me. I did intend to dig a tunnel, but I only intended to make it big enough to fit my small mouse body. However, when I broke through the first layer under my room, I suddenly found myself in this underground tunnel. I was also surprised like you at first over how there was such a large labyrinth underneath the Governor’s mansion.... Maybe the former governor made it.”

Du Wei thought it over and decided to let it be.

This Northwest place, especially the Desa province, is the closest province to the desert prairie. All year round, this place is infested with bandits and the constant harassment of the native tribes, so it’s no wonder the locals would on a lot of occasions build secret compartments in their homes and cellars.

For this reason, it’s not that unusual to find some great houses creating some kind of secret rooms in their mansions.

It’s just ... ... Looking at all these forks and turns in this mysterious tunnel.... Isn’t this project a little too big for emergency use?

Du Wei also spent some time living in the old Governor’s mansion, but never

in his wildest dreams did he think there would be such a place under his feet.

Walking another 10 meters, what welcomed the two is a three way intersection. Seeing this, Gargamel smiled and said: "This place is way too big. To be honest, even I'm not all that clear about this place because I've only explored about half this place. Out of the three routes here, one leads to both Solskjaer and Cosettes room, the other to the secret warehouse. As for the last route, even I don't know yet.... Try to be careful as we walk, the floor isn't too safe so tread slowly."

Du Wei stopped in his track, his gaze serious as he looked at the mouse: "You said even you haven't completely explored this place. When did you find this place?"

"Uh ... .. About a month ago." The mouse smiled like it was no big deal.

Du Wei face became a little displeased:" Why didn't you send someone to inform me?"

Gargamel reacted like he didn't care. Using a sighing tone: "My little Duke, I've already had a look around and while it is quite big down here, there is nothing to be found..... I assure you, if I've found something like a mountain of treasure, you would be the first to know. From my view, this underground tunnel is nothing but a shelter made by the previous governor, no need to make a fuss about it."

Unlike Gargamel, Du Wei was shaking his head as he spoke in a stern voice: "Gargamel, you're wrong."

Suddenly taking a step backward, Du Wei then lowered himself to touch the ground and then listened to the subtle air currents. With that, he got back up and rubbed the dirt in his hand: "My mouse prime minister..... You really don't understand! Though you may be a magician, but it's apparent that you don't understand architect! My god, you actually thought this place was an underground shelter? I'm telling you now. Based on the architectural knowledge I have, this place is definitely not a simple place like a shelter!"

Stamping the ground a few times, Du Wei then said: "Did you notice? The floor here is not flat; instead, it's a subtle slope from high to low..... If not carefully observed, one will miss it! Whenever this is done, the intended

purpose is to prevent flooding in the tunnels. As the water flow from the high ground to the lower part, the tunnel will remain dry!” Pausing, he then pointed to a far off part in the tunnel: “You hear the sound of air moving? This shows there is an air vent somewhere, otherwise, a regular person will quickly suffocate after coming into the tunnel.”

He then points to the fork in front of them: “The most important clue is the amount of intersections. If you were to build a shelter, would you need so many forks and turns?”

Gargamel shrugged: “Maybe the builder was worried about the enemy entering this place and had them built to confuse the intruder?”

Letting out a smile, Du Wei didn’t want to keep going with Gargamel because discussing something like architecture with a mouse is not a good idea.

“Hey, you’re going the wrong way; the way we should be going is the left.” When he saw Du Wei heading to the right tunnel, Gargamel called out.

“I know, I’m just curious about this place.” Du Wei lets out a small laugh after saying this: “Come on, let’s have a look shall we?”

Sighing Gargamel can only cave in and lead Du Wei into the unknown.

# Chapter 230 “Anglia City’s Secret!” (Part Two)

Mouse’s speculation was justified. The secret tunnel was neither wide nor tall but at the very least it could fit two people through the tunnel even if barely. Continuing on into the tunnel, one will find that both sides of the tunnel were littered with cellar like rooms excavated into the walls.

“This here should be used to hide people.” Gargamel laughs at the conclusion.

“My dear mouse Prime Minister.” Du Wei snappily pointed to the egg like rooms: “Based on your opinion, how many people do you think these rooms can fit? 500? 800? Hell... If it was a place to take refuge, the less that knows about it the better. Why go through all this trouble? Can it be that even when taking refuge one must have separate rooms to sleep?”

Lastly, Du Wei measured the height of the rooms and was left with even more questions on his face: “My dear Gargamel! You must have been a mouse for far too long and forgot a normal person’s height. Take a look. Although these cellars are both deep and big in size, the rooms are not high at all! If an average man were to go into these rooms, the best they can do is curl up into a ball!”

After a pause, Du Wei looked back at Gargamel: “Also, aren’t you surprised? Despite walking for so long, do you notice anything?”

“..... No.” Mouse shakes his head: “There’s nothing here but empty space.”

“It is exactly the empty part that is weird.” Du Wei frowned: “This place is underground! Despite this fact, we haven’t come across anything after walking for so long. Normally speaking, an underground construction would be deprived of light, thus making it ideal for rats, snakes, and centipedes to live in..... But do you see a rat here? Do you see a single centipede or any insect for that matter? I’ve been observing this place very carefully; there wasn’t even an ant around. Don’t you find this surprising?”

Gargamel finally became speechless.

Coming to the end of the tunnel, what welcomed Du Wei is a wall.

“This is the end.” Gargamel speaks: “I’ve been here before and didn’t find anything. Do you want to turn back and have a look in the other direction?”

Du Wei did not reply, instead, he only stood there in silence while looking at the wall like he was thinking over some kind problem.

“Something is not right here.” Du Wei suddenly shakes his head: “Something doesn’t fit in here.”

Pointing to the wall, then to the tunnel behind him: “As we were coming here, I always felt this place followed the basic principles in architecture..... But here, the very end of the tunnel shouldn’t be blocked by a wall! Have a look, the ground may seem flat but is in fact a slope that is subtlety heading up. If this place was used to store things then this spot should be the highest point in this labyrinth. Since they built it like that, this spot should have been some kind of cellar or room and not a slab of wall.”

“Then..... What’s behind this wall? Can it be some kind of secret room?” Gargamel also became interested by this theory.

“We will know once we tear down this wall.” Du Wei smiles.

This wall in the secret tunnel was built using the dense rocks of the Northwest. For an average person, this job may pose some difficulty, but it’s another story for a magician.

Conjuring up a spell of the earth attribute, Gargamel easily tore apart this compact wall like it was made of tofu.

Once cleared, the first thing to welcome the two is a giant gust of foul smelling odor. W

hen Du Wei first got a whiff of this smell, he nearly fell backwards into a somersault by how disgusting it was: “My god, what is in there! Can it be a toilet?”

Like him, Gargamel also had a face like he would faint at any moment: “I fear the outhouse can’t even match this stink!”

Behind the wall is indeed a secret chamber. Since it was sealed for so long and

was suddenly reopened again, the stale gas pent up inside all gushed out at once when an opening was found, hence the reason for what just happened.

Not willing to go into the room in its current state, Du Wei with his nose tucked into his shirt hastily conjured up a gust of wind to blow away the remaining gas. Only by doing this did he gingerly walk in.

Pulling out a magic crystal from his pocket, he casually injected a bit of magic into the thing to activate it. Immediately the chamber was illuminated with light.

Under the effects of the light, countless dust particles could be seen in the air. As Du Wei looked around, he was taken aback by what he saw. And like him, Gargamel exhaled loudly from the back: “My god, what are these things?!”

Scattered across the ground are numerous corpses.... No, the correct wording is skeletons!

Who knows how many years had passed, the flesh on these bodies were already decayed to the point where only the bones remained..... Just thinking of the foul stench from earlier left both mouse and man wanting to puke on the spot!

As for the dust particles in the air, they were most likely the dried up flesh of these corpses after being left here to rot through the years.

Du Wei looked pale. If he wasn't forcefully keeping it in, he might really be puking right now.

Nevertheless, his curiosity still got the better of him. Steadying his breath, he leaned his body over to begin his examination of the bones.

Arguably, bones will still corrode with time even if it is stored away for many years! But these skeletons were exceptionally strange.

First up is their texture! Although some parts of the skeletons were a shade of black from oxidization, there is clearly a hint of metallic luster in them!!

Strange, how can the skeletons of a living creature have a metallic sheen?

Enduring the nauseating feeling inside, Du Wei tore a piece of his robe off to wrap around his hand. Then gently tapping the bones, he came to the

conclusion that these bones are exceptionally hard! If these were normal bones, they would be very brittle to the touch due to the loss of calcium,

It's no wonder these skeletons remained in such perfect conditions even after their flesh had rot away!

And the second point gave Du Wei the willies!!

These skeletons... .. Does not appear to be human!!

Or to be precise ... .. They are very close to being human-like, but not human.

For example: the skeleton before him may have the general outline of a human, but from their volume and height, these things were more like midgets.... Nevertheless, their bone structure indicates their bodily strength was above the norm.

Can it ... .. Be ... .. the dwarfs from those of legend?!

Then there are the other skeletons present. Their structure was very similar to that of humans, with the exception of certain isolated places such as teethes, head, and fingers.....

Glancing back at Gargamel, Du Wei found this mouse in a dull like state.

"Gargamel." Du Wei's smile looked like he could go through someone: "Do you know what these things remind me of when I look at them?"

"What?"

Du Wei takes in a deep breath:

"Do you still remember the strange creatures that were killed by the dragons atop of the Holy Mountain? Those half man half beast races that were exiled to the far off lands by god?"

Gargamel was speechless!

There is no doubt that ... .. these skeletons before the two is clearly the same stuff!

There are a total of six skeletons in the room. After checking them all, he found two of the skeletons were likely dwarfs based on their small statute with the remaining three looking like beastmen monsters.

But what surprised Du Wei the most was the last one and also the sixth skeleton.

“Oh god! Gargamel, come look! It’s a human, a genuine human!!” Du Wei screamed aloud. Stooping down, he kneeled beside the last skeleton lying there on the floor.

Based on the shape of the bones and the skull features... .. This is obviously a human skeleton! So strange... .. Why among so many monsters is there a human?

Stranger is that this human skeleton is tucked away from the rest as it huddled against the corner of the room. From its position, this individual was facing the corner and still maintained the posture of having its hands reaching out towards something.

Gently touching the bones, Du Wei was surprised to find that this human skeleton was just like the rest in how metallically hard it was.

He can still understand the weird biology if it was a monster, but a human? How did this individual become like this?

Du Wei just blanked out there as questions kept coming one after another.

Suddenly. Gargamel came over to Du Wei’s side like he had discovered something: “Du Wei, look! What is that on the wall!”

“Oh?”

Upon hearing these words, Du Wei’s focus unintentionally went towards the gestured location. He was careless before due to being overly excited, but with Gargamel’s reminder and the help of the illuminating light, he can finally make out the carvings engraved into the wall.

From the posture of this dead man, it’s likely these carvings were made by this individual.

Also ... .. These markings were quite deep. Since there’s no tool around, this can only mean this guy used his very own fingers to carve it out.

“The design.....” Gargamel’s tone suddenly became very strange.

Carefully staring at the patterns, Du Wei eyes was filled with complex



emotions running from surprise, fear, and curiosity.....

The reason is because this pattern is clearly a waving flag!

A flag with a ferocious skull that looked like it was grinning at its recipient!

Blood Skull Flag?!

The Shaman King's Blood Skull Flag?!

At this moment, Du Wei's heart was beating so hard it was like a drum roll. Why is the mark of the Shaman King inside the empire's land and in a secret chamber of the governor's mansion for that matter?

Can it be that this dead man here is a member of the prairie tribes, a shaman??

Then there are also the monsters here, what's the explanation for them?

How can there still be exiled creatures on the Roland continent?

In the end, a clue was finally located by Du Wei after pushing aside the deceased man's skeletal body.

Inscribed atop of a rock slab hidden underneath, several lines of texts were left behind.

From how careless these words looked, it was clear the person responsible for them was in quite a hurry. He's fine with it being a total mess to read, but how can someone write half his message in one unknown language and the other half in the Roland Empire's language? Clearly the writer was not of sound mind before his death. Thinking it over, Du Wei can only conclude the unknown part is the language used in the desert prairie.

The message is as follow:

"The last experiment was a success ... .. But the result also proved my failure. 'White River's Sorrow' (Mr. Blue Ocean's brother that was mentioned before), you were correct my greatest student. It's a shame that only now do I understand this point. Although I'm unwilling, but the last test subject is already dead..... (The next segment is written in the unknown language) The human body cannot tolerate it and I have proven it with my own flesh and blood..... (Again, the next part in the text cannot be read) I finally realized your move of

superseding the post of Shaman King was correct. It is you who are most fit to rule over Snowy Mountain. Indeed I am but a madman; however, the blood skull flag should still have my name!”

From here, the rock slab suddenly had a large vacant space in-between the top and lower end of the message. It was quite obvious the writer was not only using his fingers to inscribe this message, he was also in an awful lot of pain from how deep those scratch marks were.

The last paragraph was easier to read:

“I don’t know how many years it will be before then, but if someone can see this then you are the one i have chosen. Doesn’t matter if you are a Roland citizen, prairie native, orc, elf, or dwarf..... I will give you the greatest treasure in my possession! Hidden underneath the rock slab in the left corner of this room is the shaman craft I have honed all my life! Whether you like it or not, you will be my fourth disciple if you learn it!

In return, I bestow upon you a mission.....

One day in the future, go up to the snowy mountain and tell ‘White River’s Sorrow’ that even though he beat me and stole my title as Shaman King, I had never regretted taking him as my disciple!”

Lastly is the signature:

“Snowy Mountain’s 364th generation Shaman King, Gu Lanxiu! May the sacred Blood Skull Flag watch over the Snowy Mountain for all eternity!”

Reading it all in one breath, Du Wei was frightened by what he just learned.

A Shaman King? This guy is actually the former Shaman King?!

Gargamel that was standing next to him also finished the text at this time. Looking up, both mouse and man stared at each other with a very odd expression, unsure what to say.

Keeping silent for a long time, the first to break the silence was Du Wei’s long sigh: “This really is a big find!”

Scratching his head with his paw, Gargamel could only smile wryly: “Alright, so this thing was written by a guy named Gu Lanxiu and is supposed to be his

will. In addition, he is the former Shaman King..... After being defeated by his own disciple named 'White River's Sorrow', he was forced to leave his home and come to our Roland Empire.... Also.....”

“Enough, Gargamel.” Du Wei waved his hand, his smile a bit strange: “This will here brought a lot of information.... But it also brought a lot of questions!”

“But why is a Shaman King in the Roland Empire? More importantly, why is he a governor of a province? Then there's the question of this maze underneath the mansion?! Why did he go through so much trouble to build this underground labyrinth?” Gargamel was puzzled by all this.

Du Wei pricked his brow: “It just so happens I can answer the question.”

Pointing to the last inscription on the stone: “I just so happen to know of this Gu Lanxiu name.”

Then he slowly explains, “When I first came to the Northwest, I checked out all the lord and governors that had ruled over the Desa Province in the past few decades. This Gu Lanxiu was already the governor of this place 35 years ago. His reign lasted for more than a decade and it just so happens that when the war broke out 20 years ago is when he passed away! According to the documents, he is the last governor of the Desa Province before this province became the domain of the nobility. Then as events continued, this place was eventually put into the hands of Governor Bohan and then later into my hands.”

Looking at the mouse's astonished expression, Du Wei adds in: “I read this from the official documents of the empire.... You know it too; I never forget anything I've read before.”

“Please, someone help me.....” Gargamel moaned loudly: “A former Shaman ending up in the empire after falling into ruin can still be explained... But how in the world did he end up being a governor?”

“This ... .. I can't explain it.” Du Wei shakes his head.

What Du Wei didn't know is.....

If a disciple of the Snowy Mountain like Mr. Blue Ocean can become a respected scholar that even the royalty has to pay heed, then how difficult can it be for a former Shaman King to become a governor? Also, he seems to forget

the Desa Province is a wasteland in the middle of nowhere. Anyone with a bit of power would avoid this place like a plague. Looking at it from this point, it really isn't all that surprising for a powerful being like a former Shaman King to pull off something like this without too much difficulty.

Looking at each other, Gargamel immediately jumped up and yelled: "Quick, flip over that stone! Didn't the Shaman King say he left being his life's skill?..... I've always been interested in the natives' shamanistic art!"

However, after the two flipped over the stone slate, they were left stunned by what they saw.

This Shaman King named Gu Lanxio did not lie because he did indeed leave behind a book. Apparently, this thing was soaked in some kind of chemical to keep it from decaying.

However ... .. both Du Wei and Gargamel could not understand a single text on this damn thing!

"It's the language of the Prairie natives." Gargamel sighs: "We need to translate it."

Unlike the disappointing face on the mouse, Du Wei gave a sinister smile that would give anyone the creeps: "Translate? Did you forget there are over 20,000 prairie natives outside the city? When it comes to candidates, we can slowly take our pick!"

# Chapter 231 “Reinforcements” (Part One)

Everything inside the tunnel was once again sealed up by Du Wei, but those bodies..... The metallic bones that were nauseating to the touch ended up being removed from the place and was given to Gargamel for safe keeping.

“You are responsible for cleaning up these things ... .. Then we can closely examine what they are.”

After coming out of the secret tunnel, Gargamel then led Du Wei to the storage warehouse.

Ever since Anglia City was transformed into a colossal factory, the most important product that was being manufactured here is Solskjaer’s “gunpowder”.

This stuff is mainly extracted through the refinement of the Fire Phosphorus Grass. Currently, Du Wei specifically set aside a portion of the city to grow this ingredient and as luck would have it, this plant had a very strong life force, thus making it easy to grow and harvest especially in this dry and arid landscape known as the Northwest.

Under Du Wei’s request, Solskjaer separated the refining process of the Fire Phosphorus Grass into multiple procedures. This way, not only is the efficiency increased, the slaves in charge of actually working the factory will have no idea what they were actually making. Unless by some odd chance someone can piece together all the different steps, which is unlikely, his secret won’t be leaked like this.

As for the storage warehouse, it is buried deep underground because something like gunpowder is extremely dangerous, especially when there’s large volumes of highly refined explosive materials mashed together in one place. Adding in the fact that the gunpowder in this world is way more potent than the stuff Du Wei knew of in his previous world, he absolutely doesn’t want any incident of a spark going off anywhere near this stuff. If a disaster does occur, at least there will be some sort of cushion in-between those above ground and the main blast.

Pushing open the warehouse door, what welcomed our somewhat nervous looking Du Wei are numerous jars of pottery littered across the room. These blackened jars were very humble in their making, but he didn't care about this. What he did care about is the stuff inside.

If an accidental spark were to get in here and ignite several tons of gunpowder, Du Wei can forget about leaving here alive because even a grand mage would be incinerated to dust from the massive explosion.

"As per your request, I made the fuse wire." Gargamel opens up a box in the corner: "I tested it many times and found that the vine from the Fall Flower is more suitable for this objective. Unlike the cotton thread you asked me to use, this stuff won't easily get dampened by moisture and can still light up even if you dunk it in water."

Gargamel laughs: "I can already imagine it when we toss one of these jars with the fuse lit against the enemy camp. What a scene it will be!"

But then Gargamel follows up with a frown: "It's just, how far can we throw this stuff? Unless we use a muscle man, we won't be able to throw it very far. We could also use slings but those aren't very stable. If an accident occurs during the launching process, we might end up killing our own men!"

Du Wei smiles: "Why must we throw and not drop it from the sky?"

After a pause, he looked towards the stacks of jars that were nearly up to the ceiling: "Let me see the flying brooms."

Flying brooms are currently the most expensive item being manufactured in Anglia City because this invention created by Old Alley may have been revolutionary for its age..... But it also inherited the crazy characteristic of its inventor: It's impractical!

Sim

ply said, every time this old cahoot invents something, the resulting product is often more expensive than the original item it was meant to replace.

This includes the Flying Brooms.

Although this type of Flying Broom doesn't need the help of energy crystals to

power it..... This point alone is a landmark achievement, but the problem doesn't lie there, it's in the broom itself!

Unlike a normal broom that can be made using any old branch, the Flying Broom can only be made using a 50 year branch from the walnut tree. Everyone on the Roland continent knows that the walnut tree is a very rare tree.... Maybe it's some kind of underlying biological rule at play here. Unlike the world from his past life where walnut trees were abundant, just one alone in this world is extremely hard to cultivate.

Walnut trees, especially ones that are 50-years old, are the next best thing to store magic energies besides an actual magic crystal. For this reason, the majority of this stuff on the market is mainly used to craft high quality wands/staffs. Even for some of the richest wizards out there, not many could actually afford a genuine walnut tree in the 50 years range!

What's more, the walnut tree branch used in the making of the Flying Broom is not ordinary even by their standard. According to Old Alley's blueprint, his invention utilizes a synthetic version of this wood through the technique known as grafting.... Grafting is quite common in his past life, but in this world, it's quite rare to find someone doing this.

Through grafting, Old Alley managed to come up with a new variance in the walnut tree family and it is through this old coot that Du Wei managed to secure several saplings.

Also for the same reason, Du Wei was able to notice a genius like Cosette. Through their conversations about the cultivation methods of the walnut tree, Du Wei was able to realize how much of a genius this big headed guy was despite the fact that none in the magic union appreciated his theories.

It's not like he can snag someone like Old Alley out of the magic union, as such, his next best option can only be Cosette.

From this point of view, this big headed genius is worth his weight in gold and more!

The cultivation of this walnut tree variety gave Cosette quite the headache because just the survival of the saplings is a huge dilemma..... Even with the water from the "Spring of Aging", nine out of ten times the plant would end up

withering away before it can reach maturity. It can be said that Cosette is the biggest black hole in terms of consumption of the spring's water.

In another storage warehouses, Gargamel lowered the defense barrier surrounding this place and then gingerly opened the door for Du Wei to enter.

“This stuff really is grown using the aging water! If measured at market price, then ... .. Each broom, just based on the fact that it's a mutated variance of the walnut tree, is at least worth more than 100,000 gold coins! Hell ... .. Why did you make so many brooms? It's far cheaper to make flying capes instead.”

Du Wei smiles as he spoke his next words in an understating tone: “The initial process in developing a new technology is always expensive..... But it should be better now, is it not?”

Only after staying silent for a good while did Gargamel finally agree with Du Wei: “You are right. Cultivating this plant at the beginning was a big headache. However, after many tests, we finally found a delicate balance. From then on, the efficiency became much higher and the cost became much lower.”

“As a result, the cost of producing a broom on average is lower than making a flying cape.” Du Wei sighed.

In the room, the walls were aligned with lines of nice shelves and hanging off these shelves were piles of..... Brooms.

Not only did these walnut tree branches emanate a faint light due to their dark red hue, each broom handle was smooth and fine to the touch. In addition they were engraved with the magic patterns pertaining to the wind base attribute.

“These wind based magic drawings were designed by me personally. After I gave the outline to the craftsmen, I had them carve the symbols onto the handles. Don't worry, the craftsman only had the handle to the work with, they won't know it's a broom.”

Lastly, Gargamel pulled a parchment paper out from his robe and handed it over to Du Wei.

“This is the data for the final test of these products. Both Solskjaer and Cosette tested these brooms and it was quite good. However, that Solskjaer is a



dummy. His brain may be quite clever, but he's too clumsy and nearly broke his neck..... This stuff is easy to handle. If one knows how to ride a horse, they will know how to fly a broom."

Looking over the final results in his hand, Du Wei was very satisfied by what he read. Due to the limitation of material and the limited supply of the water of aging, the first batch only yielded a total of 50 brooms. According to the flight test data, the user only needs to keep his hand on the six pointed star symbol inscribed on the handle and inject a small amount of magic to active the function.

Currently, the Flying Broom is capable of carrying two adult males at once. In terms of speed, it is about double the speed of a fast horse on ground. As for flying time, it will depend entirely on the user's own magic talent.

"If that Solskjaer can keep it up for a meal's time then that's more than enough."

Remember, Solskjaer's true strength is only at the magic apprentice level.

# Chapter 231 “Reinforcements” (Part Two)

“Sir, are you really going to do this?” standing above the city wall, Knight Robert’s face looked displeased.

Unlike the loyal knight, Du Wei’s face was stern without any hint of joking around.

“But ... but ... Your injury..... ”

“My dear Robert, don’t forget I’m a magician.” Du Wei-stretches his body: “This little injury isn’t hard to treat for a magician, also..... It’s imperative that I go out!”

“It’s too dangerous!” Robert still objected strongly, “You carry with you the destiny of everyone around us. You are not only our boss, you are also our banner. If you were somehow faced with an unexpected incident.... I can’t even imagine the consequence! In fact, if I was present last night, I would have done everything in power to stop you from charging into the enemy camp alone!”

Du Wei could only sigh as he pointed to the scene below the city.

The sun has already risen for the day and through the bright light, the contour of the enemy tents was even more apparent. If Du Wei used his eagle’s eye, he could even see some prairie warriors sharpening their blades inside their base camp.

“My surprise attack last night was effective and I managed to take out one of their shamans..... Thus hurting their morale. Even so, the native army won’t back off so easily when they brought out such a force. Watch, they will be back on their feet by noon at the latest and make their comeback.” Du Wei had a face full of cloud: “Robert, you know very well how much resources we have at our disposal. Adding up all of our forces, we only have at best 20,000 soldiers.... And most of them are scattered across the province while 3,000 soldiers is currently present inside the city. Under normal circumstances, do you think 3,000 soldiers can repel 20,000 prairie wolves? Can repel these guys who are naturally skilled on horseback? We need reinforcements! That’s why I need to

go out.... This is the only way we can overcome the enemy.”

After a pause, Du Wei smiles: “Enough, you don’t have to worry since I killed their shaman last night. While I go out, I’ll keep myself high up in the air so the natives can’t stop me.”

Robert continues to insist: “My Lord, what I fear isn’t the fact that you are going out! I’m worried that you will personally go out to battle! You are our leader! You shouldn’t be in the front line fighting; instead, you should be in the back commanding us! I implore you to stay in the city and stay in the governor’s mansion!”

Du Wei didn’t continue to debate the problem with Robert, he simply gave the order: “By early evening at the latest, you must light a flame in the city. I want it to be so big that anyone ten miles out can see the smoke and flames! Do you understand? If you ignite the flames, I guarantee you will receive powerful reinforcements. All you have to do before then is to ensure the Tulip Flag remains bristling atop of this wall!”

With that, Du Wei’s body was already slowly floating into the air.

Robert could only sigh. Making a proper knight salute, he watched Du Wei’s body disappear into the sky.

Du Wei’s speculation was very accurate. As he flew over the enemy camp, many of the natives were quick to notice him and since he made a surprise attack last night, many archers were standing by just for this scenario. Under the fierce volley of powerful archers from down below, Du Wei had no choice but to raise his altitude and make a detour around the native camp to avoid the arrows constantly flying

at him.

Since he depleted both his magic and the energy reserve in his rainbow colored ring, he simply doesn’t have the strength to launch another large scale thunder strike like last night. At best, his magic is only at 50-60%. Facing the opposite direction of the city, he soared away at rapid speed.

“Where is that Duke Tulip going?”

Standing under his own tent, Gold Wolf Head General’s face was gloomy as he

watched Du Wei disappear into the horizon.

“General, maybe he fled.” A Prairie native sneers: “There’s not many people left in the city. It’s only a matter of time before we break through their wall.”

“Idiot.” Gold Wolf Head General raised a corner of his mouth, his eyes filled with murderous gleam: “He must be going for reinforcement! Humph.... Send four scouting team around a hundred strong to watch our backs. Also, inform the warriors to get ready. We must break through the city by nightfall! It’s already a fact that a shaman is dead while in our care..... I believe I don’t need to explain the punishment awaiting us once we go back empty handed, right? Only by ignoring all consequences to achieve our goal can we beg for mercy!”

With the calling of the battle horns, the prairie warriors began to line up into battle formation upon hearing the familiar sound. As for Knight Robert, he could only stand there atop of the city wall under the sun’s ray as the chilling glow of the enemy blade reach his eyes!

“Endure till the evening!” He suddenly drew his sword and slashed down at the battlement in front of him. Then in a loud but clear voice, he cried out: “Defend to the end!”

Like him, all the close guards and lieutenant drew their sword into the air and shouted in unison: “Long live Tulip! Man lives, City lives!!!”

Following the same route he had come from last night, Du Wei flew about seven to eight miles out in search of his own team.

Finally, in a low, loose wood cluster, someone noticed Du Wei in the air and came running out to wave at him. Likewise, Du Wei also noticed the person and lowered his altitude. When he got a closer look, it was the captain of the magic apprentices Ziggy.

The 800 men Du Wei had brought with him were all hidden in this wood cluster. As per his instruction, they had retreated to this spot in order to avoid being detected by the native scouts.

Landing on the ground, Ziggy was greatly relieved to see Du Wei was still intact: “Dean! It’s great that you are safe! But didn’t you tell us to wait here for the signal flare from Anglia City? Why did you come here?”

Du Wei taps Ziggy's shoulder: "No time to explain!"

With that, Du Wei walks into the wood.

In the wood, all of the Tulip cavalry troops were dismounted and sitting on the floor, but there were some atop of some trees paying close attention to the far off distance. This forest cluster may not be very dense, but it's more than adequate to hide a thousand men.

When Du Wei saw Guptad, this mini 250, the first thing this guy did was jump up and come running over to give him a hug: "My lord, my lord!! It's a blessing to see you here! Damn it! I really want to kill these guys! How dare they let you charge into enemy camp alone! It's too risky!!" He shouts aloud like he was crying.

The lieutenant that had let him run off is Guptad's men so when this mini 250 went off in search of reinforcement, this lieutenant was in charge of the team. But from his appearance and the traces of blood on the lieutenant's lip, it's quite clear Guptad gave his subordinate quite the beating.

"Enough Guptad! It was I who wanted to go in; they got nothing to do with it." Du Wei smiles: "Your men are all good fighters, they deserve nothing but merits. Also.... My harvest wasn't bad; I killed one of their shamans."

With that, Du Wei immediately asked: "What about you? When did you get here any did you bring all of our men?"

"There's none, my lord." Guptad's face was full of shame: "I only found lord Alpha's 800 men.... As for the other two teams, I wasn't able to locate them..... You required me to be here by this time, so I couldn't go any further."

Guptad suddenly knelt down: "I did not complete your order, please punish me!"

Du Wei shakes his head: "No, the blame lies with me for not taking into account of the actual situation. It's already a great thing that you were able to bring back a team. Where's Alpha?"

Du Wei looks around for Alpha's presence, but tries as he might, he couldn't see the loyal retainer anywhere.

“He ... .. When he heard you went into the enemy camp alone, he went into a raging fit and ran off to the front lines in search of your whereabouts.”

Du Wei had his heart skip a beat. Uncle Alpha... .. He really does care. But considering the knight’s strength, he shouldn’t be in any danger.

With time pressing down against them, Du Wei was just about to speak when Guptad whispered into his ear: “My lord, though I didn’t bring back everyone, I managed to bring back some.... Guests.”

“Guests?”

Guptad made an eye gesture. Immediately, Du Wei looked over to a deeper part in the woods and saw a group of soldiers wearing a different set of armor. These soldiers were also cavalry knights, but unlike the Tulip insignia on all his troops, these guests had the Thorn Flower emblem on their chest and their armor were those usually worn by the local garrison forces in the empire.

The truth is Du Wei’s troops were only his private army while these guests are the genuine army of the empire.

“What’s going on?” Du Wei asked with a tinge of surprise in his voice because these guys weren’t small in number. From his initial assessment, there should be about five hundred to six hundred men.

“They are Governor Bohan’s troop from Nuling Province.” Guptad replied in a low voice.

Du Wei picked his brow at the news.

## Chapter 232 “Start!!”

When Guptad brought Du Wei over to the unfamiliar unit, the other side quickly got up and formed a defensive formation. Looking closely, the soldiers in front even had their hands on their sword hilt, ready to draw their blade at a moment's notice.

“Insolent! This is Duke Tulip!” Guptad cries out: “Have your captain come out!”

At his demand, a middle-aged man stepped forward from the crowd. Wearing a standard military armor commonly found on the knights of the empire, this new entry is of medium height with a strong looking build. Based on his walking posture, it's obvious he is both firm and collective in his way of handling matters: “Everyone lay down your arms and rest.”

With that, this person then came up to Du Wei's presence and performed a proper knight salute: “Captain of the third cavalry division of Bohan province's second local police force, Yaluoer pays his respect to the Duke of Tulip!”

Du Wei nodded in return and then carefully looked over this officer claiming to be Yaluoer.

A cavalry captain is considered a lower mid tiered officer inside the military because they are usually left in charge of a unit consisting of 1000 soldiers. Adding in the fact that this guy had a 4th rank warrior badge on his chest, it's quite clear this person's strength is considered exceptional within the military.

“Knight Yaluoer, please tell me your reason for coming here today.” Du Wei is still somewhat wary of Governor Bohan. Since the day he stepped into the Northwest, he had already suffered at the governor's hand. Now that a whole cavalry unit made their way into his Desa Province, Du Wei isn't certain if these guys are coming with good intent or simply bad will.

“Your Dukeship..... ” This Yaluoer is clearly the conservative type when doing things. Though his face looked slightly exhausted and his voice coarse, the way he spoke still sounded powerful: “I've come here at Governor Bohan's order.”

After a pause, he continued to speak: “We of the second local police division was stationed along the border between the two provinces. Due to the annual spring drill, our unit was frequently moved around..... As for the purpose, I’m sure your lordship already knows.....”

Du Wei smiles at the remark.

Of course he knows. It’s all in order to prepare for the Northwestern Army.

Talking about this, Governor Bohan really is pitiful. Though Bohan’s jurisdiction consists of the entire Nuling province, but due to the influence of the Northwestern Army, he only truly controls half the land in his name. The cause for this is no other, the main headquarter of the Northwest Army is within his borders.

For this reason, Bohan was especially annoyed by Du Wei’s arrival. It was bad enough he only controlled half the Nuling Province, even the second province under his jurisdiction – Desa Province – was snatched away by a kid.

Now that the Northwest Army is getting active again during the spring drill, Governor Bohan can’t possibly let his own garrison forces lay idle now can he?

“You lordship, we received word two days ago saying there were traces of native cavalry troops in your territory! When Governor Bohan got wind of this, it just so happens he was busy overseeing the military drills near the border. Considering the urgency of the matter and the fact that we got confirmed sightings of the enemy in three locations, Governor Bohan immediately sent you a letter..... But it was sent to Loulan City..... Since you’re here, I’m assuming the letter never reached your hands. Governor Bohan

said this is an emergency so we can’t adhere to the rules during these times. He also knows you just came to the Northwest and might not have enough troops to quell this attack by the prairie natives, therefore, without your permission, our third cavalry division of the second police force was ordered to search out the native peoples trail inside your territory.”

Speaking up to here, this Knight Yaluoer gave Du Wei a glance: “Although this act of crossing into your territory is improper, but the interest of the overall situation is too important to ignore....”



Du Wei waves his hand in response, his face already donning a sincere smile: “it's fine Knight Yaluoer, you don't need to say more. I'm grateful for your coming! What Bohan said is correct; we should put aside the rules for the situation at hand.”

Unable to stop his emotions, Du Wei really had to hand it to this Bohan. Although they had some small quarrels before, but this guy really is a true patriot to the empire.

At the very least this Bohan would send aid the very moment he gets word of Du Wei's predicament. For this reason alone, it's enough to earn his respect.

If it was changed to a jerk in this situation, Du Wei can already imagine the guy snickering behind his back and watching him fall.

Looking at this Knight Yaluoer, Du Wei suddenly noticed this guy only had approximately five hundred to six hundred men in his command, many of whom still had blood residue and battle scars on their armor: “You guys.....”

Yaluoer replies in a calm voice: “Sir, we were already over the border two days ago. On the way here, we came across an enemy cavalry unit and had a brawl with the natives. Fortunately we outnumbered the enemy and was able to repel the invaders. If not for the run in with commander Guptad, we might not have been able to find our way to you.”

Although the knight was downplaying their ordeal, Du Wei can already speculate how savagely brutal the battle was based upon their losses. Starting from a thousand strong, they nearly lost half their men; it's obvious the casualties were quite serious!

Watching these soldiers from the Nuling Province in silence, Du Wei found that although these men remained quiet as they stood there, they all had a glint of determination in their eyes despite the fact that some of them were still injured.

“We lost over 300 brothers along the way while some were seriously injured. In order to not affect our combat capabilities, we could only send a part of our forces back early.” Yaluoer sounded a little sad in his voice.

Hearing this, Du Wei had his emotions run high. Suddenly, he faced the brave

men before him and gave a deep unwavering bow: “The Tulip Family will forever remember your deeds today!”

“You do not need to be so polite Duke.” Knight Yaluoer gave a thoughtful smile: “Our governor said..... Everything is for the empire!”

Being able to let go of small little grudges during critical times have left Du Wei with a different image of Bohan.

” Knight Yaluoer, while we may not have any fine wine here presently, but I guarantee that by this evening we will victoriously enter Anglia City! By then, I will personally host a celebratory banquet for all the brave warriors of the Nuling Province!”

Finishing his words, Du Wei then tasked Guptad to care for these guests while he quietly left with the 28 magic students. Moving a mile away from the forest where a low lying terrain was, he and the students held a secret meeting.

Taking off his wizardry robe, Du Wei then unbuckled his storage bag and began pouring everything out.

Clang... Plop..... Clang....

Gasping at their respected Dean’s action, these students can only watch on as a rainfall of brooms appear before their very eyes!

That’s right, a bunch of brooms! Several dozens of brooms were stacked into a neat pile.

Some were simply left frozen, unsure why the Dean would take so many brooms out. Can it be that he expects them to PK with the Natives using a bunch of brooms?

“These will be your ... .. ‘mounts’! Come on, try your new mount!” Du Wei declared aloud: “Everyone pick one.... No need to be picky and take one, they are all the same.”

Once every student finished picking their broom with a face full of curiosity, Du Wei also picked one up for himself.

“The method to use these things are very simple. You guys see the six point star symbol on the handle? Insert your magic, that’s right, like a wand. Come

on, give it a try. However, make sure you don't add too much magic at once, if you do, don't blame me when you break your head! Then put the broom between your thighs..... Like how I'm doing right now.....”

With that, Du Wei was already doing it himself and making a live example of himself..... It must be mentioned that he's actually quite nervous. Prior to setting off with the brooms, he never actually had the chance to test them himself.

“Like me ... .. insert your magic..... Then give your legs a slight push off the ground.....”

The second he said this word, all the students had the pleasure of witnessing their dean shoot into the air like a meteoric star!

“AH!”

In a blink of an eye, Du Wei's bodily image was lost before everyone's eyes as he continued to soar into the horizon, thus leaving behind only the faint echoing cries of an alarming scream.

“What's the Dean doing?” Some of the students were gawking at the sky, unsure what to make of this.

“No idea ... .. But he sure flew into the sky FAST!”

By the time Du Wei managed to come back down to the ground, his hat was already lost into the air by the gusting wind.

Bloody hell! He injected his magic way too fast and way too much! If he wasn't so quick in responding, he would have already smashed into a hilltop!

But when he was coming back, Du Wei already figured out the proper method of controlling the damn thing.

When he landed, Du Wei kept up the pretense of being calm: “You see that..... The thing in your hand can help you fly, no spell required! This is a magic item.”

At this, all the students became strongly interested.

“Ahem ... .. But be careful. When starting, be sure to hold back your magic and make sure to inject your magic slowly! Otherwise.....” Du Wei pauses, his tone a bit awkward: “You will end up like me before. Remember to hold onto

your broom handle. Pulling up is up, pushing down is down, and I'm sure I don't need to explain what left and right will do. Also.... The more magic you insert, the faster your speed will be!"

This thing really isn't that hard to operate. At the very least, no other student ended up darting out into the horizon like he did earlier.

Perhaps the reason was his little mishap earlier was due to his overly high magic reserve.....

In merely one hour's worth of time, every magic apprentice have pretty much mastered the basic flight maneuvers, while some could even pull off some acrobatic moves.

It must be mentioned that these guys really are talented. It's like Gargamel said: "As long as one knows how to ride a horse, they can ride these brooms."

"All right, everybody quiet down!"

When the apprentices came back from their one hour of free flight, what welcomed them are standing piles of dark clay pots with a vine like root coming off the side of each lid.

"What I'm about to say next is extremely important!" Du Wei became serious in his tone: "These brooms I'm giving you are not for fun because in a little bit.... You will be riding them to risk your life! This operation will be extremely dangerous! If any of you want to quit now, I will not stop you! You are my students, not warriors of my family! You have no obligation to die for me."

None spoke.

Seeing this, Du Wei was very satisfied as he gave this group of faithful students a gratifying look: "Now, take a look at these pots. They are no ordinary pot..... They are lethal weapons!"

With that, Du Wei gently ignited one of the flower vines and then threw the certain pot out into the distance.....

When the devastating sound of that huge explosion drifted into their ears, everyone had a face full of shock and disbelief!

In these students' eyes, the strength of this pot filled with gunpowder is more

than comparable to a low level fire based spell for even the ground was blown to smithereens, leaving behind a shallow pit in its wake!

“From now on, you will be the first.....” Du Wei deliberately paused to let his next words sink in: “Aerial combat unit under my command! In simple terms... .. Air force! Ladies and gentlemen, please remember this day because your existence will forever change the way we fight wars in the eons to come!!”

After a good moment of silence, every student soon had a face full of unbearable excitement.

“This evening we will ride these brooms over the native’s camp and blow these prairie wolves to dust!” Du Wei’s yell was both empowering and motivating: “You will forever be remembered as the first air combat unit on this continent..... For that, you will get a name. Whenever an enemy hears your name, they will shake, they will tremble, they will FEAR!!”

“You Lordship, what’s our name!” Ziggy excitedly asks.

Du Wei chuckles, his smile unbelievably sinister.....

When the sun finally began to set towards the west for the day, Knight Robert felt like his last ounce of strength was drained from his body because the prairie people just launched a frenzied attack that nearly overtook the city.

Looking at the bodies littered across the ground below the wall, Robert could only let out a long gasping breath.

Fortunately, his soldiers’ morale remained intact due to Du Wei’s appearance. Towards the Duke, these people all had a trust bordering on the line of fanatics.

With only one-third of the soldiers remaining to defend the city, Robert knows the final moment has come!

When the last ray of the setting sun left the rampart, Robert finally gave the command to light the shining beacon to hail for help! Under the raging flames that seem to reach into the very heavens, the Tulip Flag continues to bloom under the searing heat!

Further away and fluttering in the night’s breeze, Du Wei has been quietly standing atop of a hillside not far from the enemy’s base camp.

Taking in a deep breath, he then suddenly floated into the air with arms open wide: “Let’s go! Tonight is the night we break the enemy!”

Behind him, a black wall consisting of the 28 magic apprentices awaited his command.

Letting a little grin slip, Du Wei shouted aloud:

“Deceptions, rise up and fly!!”

## Chapter 233 “Kill!”

With a blood red afterglow devouring the sky, 28 Decepticons immediately spread apart and began making their way over to the 20,000 strong native army using their new found brooms, each fully stocked with dozens of explosive clay jars.

As for the native army that could only watch this swarm of unknown flyers swoop in from the sky, none knew how to react.... In their minds, they only thought: what the hell are they!

Though Mages and Shamans are both capable of aerial combat, these individuals are usually equipped with enough power to not need assistance. Aside from that, who ever heard of a mage or shaman riding a broom in the air?

But very soon, the natives will never forget the following nightmare that is about to transpire.

By the time Ziggy first made his move, the kid was already a hundred meters into the native crowd. With one hand still gripping his broom handle, he was able to light the fuse on one of the jars using a ball of flame from his other free hand. Then without any hesitation, he pulls a dagger out and slit the dangling pot from his care.....

When the first explosive container came falling down from the sky, the following people down below didn't even know what to expect. Out of instinct, some of the warriors only slightly raised their shields as a precautionary measure, which they would of course regret.....

Bang!!!

With the beginning of the first exploding sound, more than a dozen prairie natives were swallowed up in flames while many more were either injured by the shooting fragments or sent flying backwards due to the aftershock.

It must be mentioned that these makeshift bombs really isn't that lethal. Even if it was tossed into a dense crowd of people, not many would actually be killed in the resulting blast.

However, what's most devastating about this new form of weapon isn't the explosive power it carries; it's the shock it brings to the recipients!

Just when everyone was still lost in thought over what just happened, the rest of the Decepticons were already readying themselves for the first round of intensive bombing!

Due to the gravity of the situation, Du Wei never got the chance to properly discipline these kids in the way of aerial combat. Without the knowledge of using a proper bombing formation, Du Wei could only watch on as these kids sought out their own individual targets. It must be mentioned that this way of combat really isn't all that efficient compared to a bombing raid Du Wei saw in the movies.

Nevertheless, the desired effect was still achieved today. The natives were already bunched up into thick crowds to begin with so it didn't take much for the Decepticons to land a hit!

.....

Under the ruthless bombardment, the native army suddenly found themselves in a panic as roaring flames enveloped the entire battlefield while any semblance of order was lost to the wind.

These men may be highly trained warriors, but humans are still inherently afraid of the unknown.

Tallying up the result of the first clash, the death count easily shot up to the thousands.

"Calm down!! Calm down!!!" Gold Wolf Head General rushed out of the crowd and roared. Without any remorse for his fellow brethren's, he brandished his sword and mercilessly beheaded the two nearest disobeying soldiers: "Everyone spread out!!!"

After his order, he grabbed one of the poor soul's head and raised it into the air for all to see: "Disobedience means death!!" He shouts with fury in his voice.

On one hand he kept pulling soldiers into his influence, while on the other he also urged the warriors to spread apart and begin shooting arrows into the sky.



Try

as he might though, by the time a proper front could be established to retaliate against the swarm of locust like assailants in the sky; all of the Decepticons were already pulling away after the first round of bombing, leaving behind only an angry mass in the background.

Unlike the flying cloak, the greatest characteristic of these era defining Brooms are its speed!

With the retreat of the 28 magic apprentices, the one to appear next is Du Wei!

While his students were busy with the opening act, Du Wei had in fact, spent the first half of the day gathering up every bit of magic in the general area. Under the command of his incantation, a mass of dark looming clouds had begun to gather overhead as sparks began to run wild. For those down below, the new figure wasn't hard to recognize.

Why is that so?

It doesn't take much for the natives to recognize the guy that had not only caused devastating damage to their ranks last night, Du Wei is also the nightmarish being that killed their all-powerful Shaman! In these savages mind, the sacred Blood Skull Flag should have been invincible!

Under the short recess of time gained by this reason, Du Wei was able to have an easy time finishing his spell. With a flick of his finger, a roaring thunderous strike came smashing down on the thickest crowd of ants down below.

This earthshattering loud bang immediately woke the prairie people up from their daze; nevertheless, it was already too late for the targeted archers to react. Almost electrifyingly numbing, numerous enemy soldiers ended up being swallowed up by the thunder strike with many more crying out in painful screams due to being burned alive by the searing flames enveloping their body!

After the attack, Du Wei immediately found his body weakening to the point where it was getting dangerous to stay. Unlike last night where he had the rainbow colored ring to help restore his magic, he could only retreat to the back in a hurry to avoid any mishaps.

At the same time, Du Wei's team of Decepticons was already readying themselves for a second wave of bombing after reorganizing their ranks!

Unlike last time though, the prairie natives came prepared as they screamed to their comrades to scatter. Despite this, their ranks finally collapsed into a state of confusion after the resulting blasts.

This time, no matter how many deserters were slain by Gold Wolf Head General; none would listen to him anymore.

Intensive bursts of flames continued to wreak havoc among the enemy soldiers and unlike the first wave of bombing, the team of Decepticons had begun to change their strategy.

Dive, roll, evade, these basic skills are starting to become second nature to these fledglings and even more shocking, these kids began to spontaneously gather up into small groups to release a wave of indiscriminate attacks upon the enemy. Seriously though, this should have been expected. Back when these kids trained in the Hogwarts branch, one of the main lessons Du Wei taught them was TEAMWORK!

When countless numbers of prairie wolves fell victim on this wave, many of these ruthless savages finally had their survival instincts triggered and came out of the shock brought on by these new weapons.

Bringing out their bows, many capable of shooting an arrow began to show off their famed horseback archery at the annoying pests in the air!

Although Du Wei's round of lightning strikes took out the main archery unit within the enemy ranks, this only guaranteed his team of Decepticons won't be threatened by a strong wave of retaliation from the ground. However, when they dived down to carry out their bombing procedures, these defenseless kids in the air finally started to get into dangerous situations.

Eventually, casualties began to appear. When the first Decepticon was shot down by an arrow, this trainee decided to die than to be taken prisoner! Who knows how he pulled it off but before he crashed into the ground, this brave soul managed to pull himself together and forced his broom towards a heavily armed group of soldiers he noticed at the last moment.

With beads of blood dripping all over his body, he used the last drop of his life to crash into the crowd.....

It must be said this Gold Wolf Head General really is unlucky because his personal guards were the only unit left with any semblance of order. As fate would have it, he just so happens to be in the middle of this 300 men crowd calling out orders to respond with bows and arrows.....

Just then, a swift shadow came crashing down at him from the front!

Too late to dodge, Gold Wolf Head General suddenly had his heart skip a beat as he subconsciously jumped off his horse. Then the next moment, an intense BOOM came from behind him.

The Decepticon that was shot down still had eight-nine jars of gunpowder dangling off his broom. In his final act of bravery before his death, he lit every jar ablaze and charged directly at the very center of the crowd. In mere moments, a towering ball of flame bloomed into the sky!

Combining the power of eight-nine jars together, the explosive force was over ten times that of a regular blast.

When Gold Wolf Head General rolled to the ground, the very next thing he felt was a monstrous amount of heat coming from his side! This force was so immense that even the horse by his side was lifted off the ground and ended up crushing down on his legs. Not only that, his eardrum was also damaged by the shockwave, thus making it impossible for him to identify what was going on during the miserable wails of pain and blood splatter.....

This Gold Wolf Head really is a character. Knowing the crisis is not the time to be idling by; he forcefully bit down at his tongue to knock himself awake from the shock. Immediately struggling with his hands to push the dead horse off his body, it wasn't until he managed to climb up did he notice the sharp pain on his legs. It would seem the pressure caused by the dead horse against his body has broken some of the bones in his leg!

Littered with the dead by his side, those lucky enough to live were constantly moaning out in pain as they struggled to survive.

Bleeding inside, Gold Wolf Head's heart really was aching in pain..... This 300

cavalry unit is supposed to be his elite troops. In the years he's been roaming the grassland; it was this special unit of 300's that helped him defeat the countless numbers of hostile tribes!

But today without even the chance to confront the enemy's main force, his most loyal followers were devastated by the enemy in the sky.

Using his blade to support his near crippled body, he kneeled there as he surveyed his surroundings. What he saw next nearly caused him to vomit blood due to how painful it was inside!

Is this supposed to be the greatest soldiers in the prairie?!!

A mess! Looking far and wide, the only word capable of describing this scene can only be this word!!

While some continues to resist with their bows, too many were simply trying to flee and in some cases, the efforts made by those brave enough to make a stance ended up hurting their own people.

Aside from human casualties, many tents and stacks of hays were churning out thick plumes of smoke due to the flames engulfing the main camp. Like this, even the sky was stained black by the overly thick smoke.

And exactly at this time, the last death bell rang out!!

Woowoowoo.....

A long blowing horn sound with unlimited glory and power drifted into everyone's ear.

For someone like Gold Wolf Head that spent years in the battlefield, it's only natural he would recognize this sound!

It's the Roland Empire's cavalry charge signal!!

Look over at a hillside far off into the distance, an unmoving black dot appears – this is clearly a knight sitting atop of his mount readying to make a charge!

Very soon, more and more black dots appeared by the first one's side. Like a black tide, the entire hilltop was covered by these figures.

A Cavalry Brigade of the Roland Empire?!!!

Gold Wolf Head found his body quivering uncontrollably as his heart sank.

Sitting atop of his mount, Guptad held his lance as he overlooked the chaotic scene down below. Not only was the native army fleeing in all directions, blazing embers of flame had engulfed most of the enemy camp, leaving only death in its wake.

As a soldier, Guptad only found this to be a great surprise because this is the perfect time to attack!

The charging call is already nearing its end and his fellow knights have finished filing into their positions. With one loud shout, he points his spear to the natives down below and cried out: "KILL!!"

"KILL ! ! ! "

Several thousands of Calvary troops shouted in unison and caused the very earth to tremble.

Then without waiting, Guptad dashed out ahead of everyone and charged towards the enemy with his spear raised. Following in his wake are thousands of cavalry knights, each aiming to kill any whom gets in their way.

Like a dark cloud that sweeps through anything and everything, the earth drumming horse beat would make any men boil with excitement!

# Chapter 234 “Victory And Alpha’s Decision!”

Even though they only had a measly 2,000 Roland Cavalry troops to face off against 20,000 elite enemy warriors, but all of this no longer mattered when one side already lost all will to fight while the other is a well-oiled fighting machine in the form of a triangle charging formation.

Under the beating sound of the stampeding war horses, Guptad’s leading assault force had already pierced into the enemy’s rear end like a knife cutting through butter! With one hard hit, any semblance of a proper defense was shattered by their efforts.

As their bloodied lances continued to pierce into one enemy after another, many more were killed under the trampling hooves of their fierce steeds that knows no mercy!

Like that, this small force consisting of only 2,000 cavalry riders became the final straw needed in knocking over these prairie wolves by taking advantage of their heavy armor and overwhelming impacting charge,

Leading at the very forefront, Guptad had long thrown away his lance and resorted to using his blade to fight. With every native he passed, there would always be a head flying in the air!

Imitating their commander’s lead, the cavalry troops following close behind this mini 250 also threw away their lances that had long lost its purpose. Like a harvest field, the swords that were supposed to be a weapon unique to the battlefield somehow had its role changed to a scythe used for harvest, but instead of harvesting wheat like in the farm fields, what these soldiers were harvesting this evening is the heads of the native army!

Ever since the collapse of the main army’s battle formation, these natives of the grassland had already lost any hope of putting up a resistance, though some of the leaders tried their best to gather up troops to make a stand, but their efforts were for not.

With one loud shout, Guptad gave another swing of his blade, but unlike

before where he would lop off an enemy's head with ease; there was only air in his path. Looking up, this mini 250 suddenly found himself in front of the towering fortification wall of Anglia City.

Covered from top to bottom in blood and flesh of those slain by him, even his helmet was lost in the chaotic situation during that charge. Looking like an evil spirit with his disheveled hair and bloodshot eyes, the first thing that came out of his mouth was: "Come with me, we will give them a second helping!" He shouts this aloud as he turns his horse around.

At his words, the last drop of sanity finally crumbled within these natives. Many simply threw their weapons away and tried to flee, but for those unfortunate enough to be incapable of fleeing, these poor bastards could only kneel on the ground and beg for mercy with tears running down their eyes.

Meanwhile, Gold Wolf Head General was watching all of this happen before his very eyes from a distance. Earlier during the first cavalry charge where everything was a mess, some of the keener Tulip knights did in fact took notice of this leading figure amidst the large crowd, but due to the sacrifices of his loyal guards and his own remaining strength, this general managed to get off with only some scrapes atop of his earlier injury after breaking through the crowd.

Just when his remaining loyal guards desperately dragged their heavily injured general up on his horse, Gold Wolf Head suddenly spouted a mouthful of blood after glancing over at the 20,000 warriors that was once under his command: "I let a shaman die under my care, I wasn't able to take the city, I even let our glorious army fall into shambles, how am I suppose to go back and face our king?!"

After his words, this general already had his blade out and wanted to aim it towards his neck. Seein

g this, all of his bloodied looking subordinates scrambled up in a desperate struggle to pull the blade out of his hand: "Great Gold Wolf Head General, the eagle must survive in order to soar through the sky again! Please go back to the king and beg for forgiveness, maybe then you will have another chance to get vengeance!"

With that, all of his loyal followers began to make their escape while keeping their leader in the middle of their protective circle.

At this very moment in the wilderness, all these natives were like rabbits fleeing from a predator. No matter the direction, one could easily find signs of these frightened animals.

When night finally took over for the evening, the Roland Cavalry unit has been divided into countless smaller teams in pursuit of the scattered natives. There are after all 20,000 enemy running across this vast piece of land, even if they were to stand idle on one spot and let you kill, it will still take time!

After this event, none would ever doubt Guptad's title of mini 250. Using his incredible stamina, he and his squad of 50 men ended up chasing as far as 10 miles out from the original battlefield. By the time they returned, every single one of them were carrying loads of heads on the side of their horses.

However, like the merits that they so deserved, their physical body was so exhausted that movement was almost impossible, this was very clear from the crawling like pace their horses were moving at.

He wasn't the only fierce beast on this night though. In the last moments of the battle, Robert had his men remove the blockading boulders from the gate. Then rallying the last able bodied men in his vicinity, he also rushed out to take part in the hunt.

Although the majority of the soldiers inside the city are comprised of mostly infantry troops that wouldn't be very effective against the enemy horsemen, but that doesn't mean they can't do anything. Knowing their own strength, Robert had his men scour the battlefield for any stragglers and exterminate those that tried to resist on foot.

All the while, Du Wei watched the entire situation unfold atop of the fortification wall of Anglia City.

Under the cloak of night, the battle outside the city was finally coming to an end. Though there are still some sporadic fights here and there with the constant screams of death, but it was over. All that remains now is the cleanup (finishing off the wounded with a knife to the heart) work for the defenders of Anglia.



When the last stubborn enemy was finally beheaded, the entire city suddenly erupted into wild cheers.

Despite the victorious atmosphere surrounding Du Wei, he only stood there atop of the wall. Quietly, he scanned across the battlefield littered with the decapitated bodies of friend and foe. No matter where he looked, the scene was either black or red, followed by the foul stench of burning flesh and blood.

It's finally over ... .. This should be his first experience in the battlefield ever since he came to this world!

From above the city wall, about 20 something dark figures swooped in from the sky and landed on the ground just outside the city premise. These new entries is obviously Du Wei's students, also known from here on out as "Decepticons", each of these kids held their heads high with pride as their hands firmly gripped onto their brooms.

Thinking about it, the battle just now can technically be called their virgin fight. Considering the impact they had in turning the tide around, this new air force will most definitely become the worst nightmare an enemy can have, that is of course until an effective counter measure is found.

Looking down at this batch of young faces, Du Wei can see the baptism of war had washed away the tenderness that had plagued these kids. In its stead, every one of these "men" had the look of determination carved onto their faces.

Suddenly, Du Wei shouted aloud using his most powerful voice at these exhausted looking students: "Nicely done, Decepticons!"

Pretty much like reflex reactions, all 20 something students straightened their backs and lifted their right hands in a slightly tilted upward direction:

"All hail MEGATRON!"

"Megatron?" Knight Robert curiously peered over at Du Wei.

In his own defense, Du Wei scratched his face and gave an odd smile before explaining: "This Megatron battle cry is my title for this air force unit....."

After cleaning the battlefield and going over the casualty count, the result is

as following: the 20,000 native army was completely defeated with about 10,000 enemy killed and 3,000 taken prisoner. What's worth mentioning is that half of the enemy's death was caused by the air force bombardment, but it wasn't due to the exploding bombs they used, it was due to the trampling that ensued due to the chaotic rush. In other words, a good number of the natives were killed by their own comrades.

And on Du Wei's side, Guptad's Cavalry team numbering at 2,000 is only left with 1,000 people. As for the reinforcements that came from the Nuling Province, Knight Yaluoer reported he is only left with 80 soldiers, way smaller from his original 500.

It would seem Governor Bohan may have exceptional administrative skills, but his capability in training cavalry troops is much lower than Longbottom's.

Nevertheless, Du Wei still firmly announced his gratitude to all the soldiers that gave their lives today – this included the friends from Nuling Province.

Despite the heavy losses, Du Wei still thought it was fine considering it was war, but there was one thing that saddened him: he lost one of his magic apprentices with 9 other injured during the fight. Fortunately, the injured will heal with time, especially under the care of the magic healers.

It's worth mentioning that among the wounded, one of the Decepticons really is unlucky. During one of the kid's bombing dives, his skill was far from mature, and therefore, he wasn't able to pull up in time and nearly broke his neck in the crash against Anglia City's wall.

Aside from all this, there's also one more thing that worried Du Wei a lot.

After giving a head count, he noticed there is one person missing.

Alpha!

Captain Alpha is missing!

Good news is that Alpha's body isn't among the dead and Guptad confirmed he saw Alpha during the battle. But after everything is over, the former loyal retainer of the Rowling Family is gone!

Somewhere else under the scorching sun, a small party of prairie natives had

never hated the sun so much in their life.

Maybe even the Gods are against them because the current season is only spring, but unlike the mild weather of this season, the sun was exceptionally hot today like that of summer.

Their party wasn't always this large. Along the way, they had gathered any stragglers they met and raised their number from the original 300 to 600.

Leading this small force in the Northwest direction is Gold Wolf Head General himself. With his feeble body, he was leaning against his horse without any spare strength to keep his posture. Adding in the fierce heat, even the blood that had stained his skin turned in scabs of dried blood, making him look even more pitiful. And due to the fracture in his shank bone, he had to reluctantly strap himself to his straddle, though this will speed up his pace during the long track back home, but it also made his journey ever so more painful because he would feel every bump along the road. For three nights and day, he had endured this torturous ride!

However, these defeated souls no longer had any sign of the famed elite army of the prairie natives. With many unarmed, practically every one of them could barely keep themselves going.

Even more unbearable is that they are too few in numbers. More often than not, they are either injured or suffering from some kind of physical exhaustion. In the three days since they fled the battlefield, none of these men could go to a nearby village for aid; instead, they could only take the quietest road without any supplies to replenish their bodies.

That's not the worst of it for them. Every now and then, there would be groups of pursuers from both ground and air nearby, thus giving these people horrendous psychological damage.

Without food, water, or medicine for their wounds, any normal person would fall apart after so many days like this.... Even for their mounts, these animals could only graze for short periods along the road to sustain their bodies.

Also, about a dozen of their comrades with serious injuries died along the way without ever making it back home.

With the sun hanging high above their heads, one of these native horsemen pulled out his water purse and pressed it against his lip. Try as he might though, not a single drop of water came out. In frustration, this guy tossed away his water purse and muttered something to himself.

Gold Wolf Head General really was bleeding inside. Looking around at the dire state he and his men was in; his hatred towards that Duke Tulip grew ever more so strong.

“Once I’m back in the royal court! Back in the royal court! Even if the king wants to kill me, I will still beg for a chance to avenge this humiliation! Even if it means joining the suicide death camp, I will still do it!!!”

More than 600 horsemen continued to make their way home. The more they traveled, the longer their ranks stretched. For those in the back, they were the first to fall and once they did, they will never rise again.

At this time, the wolf like characteristic in these savages began to reveal themselves because not a single one of their comrades decided to lend a helping hand to those that fell.

Unknown to these natives, a lone figure was quietly stalking them from atop of a hillside. With eyes like that of a hunter gazing down at his prey, this mysterious person had his focus firmly placed on General Wolf Head’s body.

Spending a good moment like this assessing the enemy, Captain Alpha then sat down and pulled out his water purse and drank a mouthful. Currently, he is also feeling the fatigue hitting his body.

During the battle that day, Gold Wolf Head thought no one noticed him fleeing, but Alpha did!

Under the chaotic situation, Alpha simply had no way to inform his allies. Without any options left, he could only pursue on horseback by himself. After two day and two night of constant pursuit, he finally caught up with the fleeing soldiers.

His goal is obviously the head of the enemy general!

# Chapter 235 “Sigh Of The Frost Moon”

Hiding behind the hilltop, Alpha rested there for a good while to regain his strength and to evaluate the enemy’s combat capacities.

As the general of a whole army, that Gold Wolf Head will definitely have some skilled subordinates standing by. Moreover, Alpha has no doubt that the enemy leader is at least on par with him in terms of skills despite being injured.

If it’s like this, then fighting alone against 600 soldiers and the enemy commander will require some extra planning.

It’s not like Alpha is afraid of the risks involved, after all, even back when he fought for the Rowling family during the coup, he never once flinched when facing off against the Temple’s Holy Knights. What he is afraid of though is missing the target. If he openly attacked, the enemy leader might use his subordinates as a shield and take that window of opportunity to escape; such an outcome is not tolerable!

Must wait for the perfect timing!

Taking in a long deep breath, Alpha then climbed down from the hill and began tailing the natives from afar using his own horse to keep up.

Finally, after persisting for half a day, an opportunity presented itself!

Further ahead on the roadside wilderness, a deserted looking home appeared. Judging by the condition the building was in; it’s likely been abandoned for a long time.

However, what drew everyone’s attention wasn’t the ruined buildings; it was the water well beside it!

When these natives saw this, even those that looked like they were about to die had their vitality reenergized. Like crazed animals, everyone began to swarm up to the well, completely ignoring their surroundings.

In mere moments, chaos ran rampant among their ranks.

Taking advantage of this, Alpha quickly snuck passed the natives and hid

himself behind a tangled mass of rocks nearby. Looking out, his heart began to race because what he had waited for so long finally arrived.

A chance!

Those natives had already flocked up to the well, ready to draw the water. However, whenever someone tries to toss the water bucket down, the guy from the back would immediately snatch it away with a heavy kick to the butt.

Back and forth, this ridiculous scene played out endlessly until all their resentments began to boil over after keeping it in for so many days. Like wolves, these people drew their blades and began to face off against their so called comrades with blood shot eyes.

“You bunch of fools!!” A hoarse voice came from the back. Still sitting atop of his horse, Gold Wolf Head sat there and gave his men a painfully sad look: “What are you people doing! Your blades aren’t used to kill your own brothers! Put those blades down!!”

Although he is seriously wounded, but Gold Wolf Head’s oppressive status still carried some weight in these soldiers mind.

Unfortunately, when they finally calmed down and had a closer look at the well, the harsh truth finally came out: It’s dry!

For those unwilling to accept this reality, they still dropped the bucket into the well to test their luck. Try as they may though, the only thing they managed to draw up is a bucket full of sand.

Due to this reason, their last bit of sanity finally cracked. Completely losing their calm, panic and despair completely took root and practically devolved these humans into wild beasts.

Then out of nowhere – who knows which guy was it that lost his mind first due to hunger – someone suddenly began to attack one of the war horses in their group. Hissing wildly at his assailant, the horse wanted to pull away, but sadly that wasn’t going to happen. Holding the reign with an iron grip, the fierce looking man th

en brandished his sword and began to repeatedly hack away at the horse until all life left the animal. Knowing he achieved his goal, this person rapidly

smashed his head into the gory flesh and then swallowed a giant mouthful of blood.

But before this person could take a second drink, a metallic sheen already arrived at his neck.

Swoosh!

With a clear crisp slicing sound, his head was sent rolling through the air.

Turns out the new entry is in fact the owner of the slain horse. Seeing how his beloved partner was just murdered before his very eyes, this guy wasn't just going to let it slide, ally or no ally. It must be mentioned that each warrior in the prairie would raise their own mount from childhood; therefore, a war horse isn't just a steed they use to travel, it's an irreplaceable entity in their life.

Like a powder keg that was lit ablaze, the situation quickly devolved to the point of no return.

Since the horse was already dead on the ground, those too crazed to think straight began to dive in without any care for the others.

The owner reacted in the same way as before, but when he resisted, the crowd immediately massacred the poor guy into mush. This way, some of the first to move up managed to get a share of the horsemeat.

However, there's no way a single horse can feed all these starving people.

Following the first example, many more began to eye the other horses in their pack.

Rob the horses! Rob the meat!

Regardless of who it was, these barbarians began to slaughter any horse in their vicinity and attack their own comrades.

"Enough!!!"

With unbridled fury, Gold Wolf Head ignored the pain striking at his leg and jumped down from his mount. Then using his own weapon, he beheaded the two closest fighting men next to him.

Gushing out a fountain of blood, the two headless bodies slowly fell to the

ground, never to move again.

“All of you stop this now and lay down your arms!!” He bellowed his words allowed.

Unlike the first time where he managed to calm everyone down, his maneuver this time actually had the opposite effect.

Before long, Gold Wolf Head suddenly found himself standing before a group of unfamiliar faces, each with eyes full of venomous greed.

“What are you all doing!!”

Noticing the situation wasn't right, the 100 loyal guards immediately moved up to stand beside their leader, each with their blades drawn and ready to fight.

“What bullshit Gold Wolf Head!” Spitting out a mouthful of foamed blood, this soldier began to scold in a mocking voice: “The reason we lost this battle and lost a shaman was because of you. When we go back, your entire family will become slaves, yet you still dare yell at us like that!”

When the others heard this, they also began to follow up with more reprimanding words.

For those more courageous: “Why not just take his head and bring it to the Roland people, this way we won't get punished and might even be rewarded!”

Seeing how sparks were flying between both sides, the guards loyal to Gold Wolf Head brandished their blades, ready to move up if any of the confronting soldiers tried to make a move.....

“Infighting?” Hiding behind the pile of rocks, Alpha sneered at the scene: “They truly are savages.”

Tightening the grip on his sword, he was just about to move in when.....

Suddenly, the sound of galloping horses drifted over from the far off distance. Judging from the dust cloud kicked up in the air, the oncoming group should be of significant size.

Like reflex, the two opposing parties immediately stopped the hostility they had towards each other. With nervousness in their eyes, the group huddled together and reformed their ranks while facing the Northwest direction where



the noise was coming from.

“What are you all idling there for, hurry and mount your steeds!!!” Despite his current image, Gold Wolf Head’s order still carried some weight.

Nevertheless, it was already too late.

Knowing the chance had slipped his grasp, Alpha immediately hid behind the rocks again when he had already took two steps out.

Sighing, Gold Wolf Head thought: Is it the enemy? If they chased us all the way out here then we are finished, there’s no way we can outrun the pursuers like this.

However, when their distance shortened, the general was utterly surprised to find that the flag flying in the air was black.

Black Flag?

The Northwest army!!

Numbering at around 2000 strong, Gold Wolf Head should have been happy to see who it was, but this experienced general can tell the other party didn’t come with good will. When they finally made contact, this unit wearing complete sets of black armor from the Northwest Army immediately flanked the natives on both sides and created a circular formation, thus leaving no room for escape.

With cold eyes, these cavalry soldiers waited there in silence as if they were looking at a flock of sheep, ready to be slaughtered at any moment.

Still hiding behind the pile of rocks, Alpha found this unit from the Northwest Army to be extremely weird because the air they gave off was cold, so cold that it was numbing.....

Finally, when the oppressive pressure nearly crushed these natives, a cold voice came out from the Northwest Army.

“Further ahead is the respected Gold Wolf Head general?”

Following suit, the cavalry riders of the Northwest Army made an opening in their ranks and what came forward is a young knight riding a perfectly black steed. Alpha tried to get a clearer look at the mysterious figure, but

unfortunately the guy had the upper part of his face hidden behind a metal mask, leaving only the mouth uncovered..

Nevertheless, Alpha figured the person is of a young age based on the voice he heard, this much he is certain.

Watching the young knight, Gold Wolf Head had a complicated expression on his face: “Turns out to be the young general! May I know why General Rugaard sent you here today, is it to intercept me and take my life?”

Sitting atop of his black steed, the young Knight may be smiling, but his eyes clearly had a flicker of cold light in it.

“Gold Wolf Head general.” This person referred to as the young General seems to smile: “Indeed, it was my father whom sent me here today, but... .. He gave me two different orders.”

Sensing danger, Gold Wolf head clenches his blade: “What, does the general intend to go back on our agreement?”

“No need to make it sound so bad.” The young Knight shakes his head: “My father always lectured me in how there’s no such thing as an everlasting alliance. The so called trust is only built on one’s self interest.”

After a pause, this person’s voice even seemed sweet to the ear as he gently laughed: “My father gave me two orders: first is if you win, I will welcome you and even escort you back to the grassland. Aside from that, I will even take over the job of exterminating the survivors inside Anglia City! As for the second order..... If you unfortunately failed, then that’s a shame. Entering the empire’s territory without permission, the Northwest Army will need to take your head in order to make up for our negligence. Think about it, the Northwest Army sacrificed blood and men to repel the enemy and even took the head of the famed Gold Wolf Head General; don’t you think the ending is perfect?”

Speaking up to the end, this person’s eye already has a clear burst of killing intent in it.

After hearing those words, Gold Wolf Head knew his end is near. Nevertheless, he is someone that survived many hurdles. With a sad smile, he puffed out his chest and glared at the young knight: “The strong devours the

weak; I knew you Roland pigs can't be trusted! When the situation looks bad, you will definitely backstab us."

"Dear Gold Wolf head general... .. Us Roland people are like this, but aren't you prairie natives the same?" The young knight showed no signs of losing his temper while sitting atop of his mount: "But, I've always respected the strong. As the strongest warrior in the royal court, I will give you the honor of dying under my blade."

With that, the young Knight leaps off his horse and swiftly removed his helmet: "Gold Wolf Head, I'll give you an opportunity to have a fair duel with me. If you win I'll let you leave, either way, father wouldn't reprimand me much anyways."

"Really?" Life immediately burst out from the general's eye. He may have been prepared to die, but no one in this world is going to let such a chance slide.

"Of course!" Although this young knight already removed his helmet to reveal the flaming red hair underneath, but he was still wearing the face mask, as such, the only indication of his mood was the faint smile he had.

With that, he raised one hand.

At his order, the 2000 Northwest Army soldiers also raised their lances in unison and pointed it towards the 600 native riders.

"Don't be nervous." Looking at the nervous bunch before him, the young General gave a disdainful smile. Waving his hand, the surrounding cavalry knights silently pulled their horses back to expand the encirclement.

Unable to decide what to do, Gold Wolf Head's expression was sometimes somber, sometimes suspicious, however, after his initial waver, he finally made a decision.

"Even if the guy is lying to me, so what? Its just death! At least I will have the chance to take another with me! The kid is the son of the Army Head, such a partner in death is perfect!"

Finishing this thought, Gold Wolf Head raised his blade into the air and pointed up at the sky. Suddenly, he uttered out a battle cry unique to the

natives of the grassland.

EEAAHHH!!!

One of his leg may be broken, but as of this moment, he looked nothing like a crippled old man, instead, the mighty warrior he was so well known for once again resurfaced: “Come on kid! Let’s see if you got the skills to back up your words!!”

When his voice died down, many of the prairie wolves behind him began to shout out in cheers, after all, the enemy did say they can leave if their leader wins the duel.

Crackle... .. Crackle ... ..

Watching the rising momentum of his foe, the young knight seems oblivious to it all. Very slowly, he also drew his blade and simply stared at the crippled general before him.

Feeling uncomfortable at the intense stare, Gold Wolf Head suddenly charged forward with a yell and attempted to strike down at the kid before him.

To be ranked as the Gold Wolf Head, this warrior of the grassland is of course extremely powerful. The instant he made his move, a reddish flaming hue already broke out from his sword to indicate the Dou Qi used in his attack.

In one loud thud, Gold Wolf Head’s strike had already landed. Despite his effort, the attack was easily blocked with a wave of the young knight’s sword.

Though it didn’t work, the strike wasn’t all for naught because the young knight’s foot was firmly pressed into the soil due to the impact.

In a flurry of maddening cries, Gold Wolf Head made another series of attacks that left even Alpha gasping for breath at the sight.

This Gold Wolf Head really is strong! One strike stronger than the last, there was no room for retaliation.

In one single breath, this native general managed to pull off 10 consecutive hits that sent sparks flying with every contact. In the end, even this young knight had to involuntarily move back.

Compared with this giant like Gold Wolf Head, this young General of the

Northwest Army seems to have been overshadowed. However, no matter how powerful or fast Gold Wolf Head's attack was, this young knight seems to be able to deflect it without so much as a cut.

Panting, Gold Wolf Head is starting to run out of energy. He was originally injured to begin with, adding in the long days of travel and the sudden outburst of attacks he made, it's no wonder the blade in his hand is starting to get heavy. What disturbed him though isn't the fact that he couldn't take down the enemy before him; it's the fact that the kid was able to stop all his attacks with ease.

Noticing his foe was out of strength and was injured on the leg, the young general decided to take several steps backward to regain his composure.

"Is this all you're capable of?"

"Quit yapping your nonsense!" Gold Wolf Head suddenly takes in a deep breath as his eyes turn red. Then out of nowhere, his arm that was holding the blade began to expand till it was twice its original size. Meanwhile, the blade in his hand also began to reverberate with a humming sound of intense stress.

Jumping up into the air, Gold Wolf Head made another attack like an eagle shooting down at its prey!

At this, the young general of the Northwest Army finally revealed a look of surprise and the sneer that was dominating his mouth all this time finally turned into a smile of excitement. Taking another step back, he suddenly knelt down on one knee and raised his sword to block.....

Keng!!

The clear crisp sound that came off their contacting swords seems to be able to pierce everyone's eardrum. For those unfortunately enough caught in the shockwave, they were sent rolling off their rolling back several meters.

Clack.....

Under the blinding red light, Gold Wolf Head suddenly heard the sound of something cracking. Then before he knew it, the blade in his hand shattered into numerous pieces. In the end, he was sent flying back after coughing out a mouthful of blood.

Slowly standing up, the young knight's breathing may sound rapid, but he was nowhere close to being injured: "Truly powerful..... It's a shame, if you weren't injured, you would have been able to last a bit longer under my sword."

With that, this young general suddenly revealed a weird smile on his face while aiming his sword at the defeated foe before him. Without any indication, a silvery light erupted from his sword that gave off an eerie chill to all the bystanders.

Before anyone knew it, the sword looked like it was engulfed in a layer of ice and snow.

In a whistling sound, the young general was already sweeping towards the native leader with the icy sword in hand.

Seconds later, the frost from the sword intensified till it was a storm and instantly transformed the giant warrior into an ice statue.

Standing behind the pile of rocks, Alpha nearly gave himself away with a reactionary shout after witnessing the scene before him.

Retracting his sword, the young general of the Northwest Army slowly came up to the ice statue and gave his opponent a cold and indifferent laugh. Then with one fell sweep of his sword, the head of this once famed Gold Wolf was lopped off!

Since the body was already frozen to the core, there was not a single drop of blood to be seen.

Then picking up his trophy, this bone numbing young knight looked into the eyes of his beheaded foe and said: "You've really let me down. Humph, what Gold Wolf Head, merely a warrior of the seventh rank....."

With that, he gently tossed the head to the side and had his subordinates store it into a bag.

Already mounted, this young general then turns around to look at the remaining native soldiers with their disbelieving eyes. In addition to being hungry and thirsty, this group of 600 was already at the brink of collapse, adding in the fact that their leader was just murdered before their very eyes, the only emotion left in their minds now was despair, total and utter despair.

“Kill them all ... .. Leave none alive.”

Leaving behind this sentence, this young general was already gone.

And behind him were the painful cries of death and carnage.

Standing behind the pile of rocks, Alpha made sure to hide every spec of his presence. Nevertheless, his sight instinctive went towards the direction of where the young general had gone off to.

This young Knight ... .. is strong! Really really strong!

That Gold Wolf Head should've been similar to him in strength, yet that young knight....

What exactly is his level?

Especially the last move he used!

Captain Alpha's heart sank at the thought.

The reason is because he recognized that move and even had the pleasure of witnessing it in action before!!!

Rodriguez!!!

There's no doubt about it, it's the signature move used by the Rodriguez, the saint knight!!

Sigh of the Frost Moon!!

## Chapter 236 “The Weasel Makes A Visit”

By the time Alpha made his way back to Anglia City alone, the battlefield was already swept clean of the dead with only several vultures circling above the sky. Nevertheless, a strong scent still permeated the air due to the deep saturation of blood in the soil.

As he drew closer to the city, the first thing Alpha saw wasn't Du Wei's welcoming presence, it was something else entirely unexpected.

From the site where the native army made their camp, hundreds of cross shaped wooden posts were erected into the ground with a captive tightly bound to each one.

Out of curiosity, Alpha decided to take a closer look, but when he did, the scene caused him to skip a beat!

Stripped of their clothes, every single one of these prisoners was drenched in blood while their palms were nailed against the cross shaped posts behind them with wooden stakes!

Though a majority of these people were still alive, many had already passed away due to the searing sun above their heads – this is the main reason why there are so many vultures in the sky.

And sitting nearby is Du Wei and his 10 guards, each with a face full of murderous intent.

“My Lord, this is the last batch.” One of the Tulip knight whispered these words from the back.

“Good, load the carts.” Du Wei nodded: “Remember to give them some food along the way so they don't fall dead, understand?”

Bowing in acknowledgement, this cavalry knight then moved away to carry out his orders.

After closing in on horseback, Alpha first dismounted before coming up to Du Wei.



“You are finally back.” With eyes full of warmth, Du Wei gave a welcoming smile towards this uncle Alpha: “I thought you had left me.”

Alpha was silent for a moment before shaking his head: “Young master, since I promised Mr. Raymond, I will not leave your side until the day of my death.”

Du Wei may be smiling at the reply, but it was obvious his smile carried no happiness in there. Walking up to Alpha, he then looked over the loyal retainer of the Rowling Family and noticed how exhausted Alpha was: “Let’s talk inside. I think your disappearance these past few days must have some special reasons behind it, right?”

Nodding, Alpha then suddenly looked over to the prisoners: “They.....”

“It was I who ordered them to do this.” Du Wei softly uttered these words: “Since these animals invaded our home, I don’t intend to keep them alive to waste our food. I had them pinned to these posts so the patrolling soldiers can take them along to the villages scattered across the province. This way, we can send a clear message to everyone what the consequences are when they harm our people!”

Indeed, this idea is a good method to win the hearts of the citizen and build up prestige.

Sighing inside, Alpha somehow found his heart getting mixed feelings over the change in Du Wei. Unlike the young master that would hide away in the library, this young man before him was getting colder and colder with each passing day.

And now the lives of thousands of prisoners were decided by him on a whim.

Then again, Alpha isn’t the type to show mercy to his enemies anyway. After a few glances at the group of dying men, his eyes quickly returned to normal: “Young master, I was pursuing that Gold Wolf Head.”

“Oh?” Du Wei eyes lit up. After sweeping clean of the 20,000 soldiers, this battle could be called the first big victory in the Northwest after 20 years. The only pity in it was the escape of that Gold Wolf Head: “You chased.....”

Du Wei was just about to ask if he managed t

o catch the guy, but looking at how empty handed Alpha was, he quickly

changed his words: “It must have been hard on you, let’s go back to the city first.”

Alpha shakes his head: “I can’t claim it was difficult. I did manage to catch up to the target, but the chance to take the target’s head never presented itself. However, I came across something even more amazing.”

Inside the former governor mansion of Anglia City, Du Wei and many more carefully listened to the entire story from Alpha’s mouth.

When they heard how the Northwest Army intercepted the fleeing Gold Wolf Head, everyone present began to make indignant rants about the whole ordeal.

“What a crafty Northwest Army!”

“How hateful!”

“Despicable!!”

For a short time, the one to yell the loudest was Guptad – also known as mini 250.

Unlike everyone else, Du Wei remained indifferent after hearing the story: “This is not surprising. Switching to me, I would also do the same..... This General Rugaard can be considered responsive if he can move so fast, humph!”

It wouldn’t be much if only a small contingent force was allowed into the empire to search the villages like before because there wouldn’t be any evidence afterwards, but this time is different. Not only did they let a whole army containing tens of thousands of troops into imperial territory, the enemy even besieged a city! This is treason, a crime that warrants death!

Such big news cannot be hidden for long and the central command will definitely get wind of this!

Although the capital’s grasp over the Northwest have been waning these past years, but at the very least the Northwest Army can still be considered honest thus far.

Therefore, this maneuver the Northwest Army made is an obvious danger signal. Though it’s not open rebellion, but it’s just a matter of time now.

Since it’s like this, General Rugaard’s move of taking the enemy general’s

head is likely a stall tactic to gain some more time until he is ready to make his move.

Watching his outraged subordinates, Du Wei buoyantly smiled: “Hmm, if my calculations are correct, the ones to take credit for beheading the enemy general should already be on the way to the capital.”

“Take credit?!” This mini 250 suddenly growled aloud in frustration: “They still have the face to take credit? Our brothers wouldn’t have died if not for those bastards, yet they still have the nerve to take credit? Those treasonous bastards should be hanged!”

Du Wei didn’t get angry as he watched Guptad: “They had long betrayed the empire. If we really had the ability to hang them, do you think the military would put up with them for so long?”

“But..... They shouldn’t be able to swing it into a reward, right? No matter what, letting the native army in is treason, a crime that warrants death!” Guptad’s face was pink red with anger.

Du Wei laughs coldly: “And what else can we do? Humph! Don’t you know that Gold Wolf Head is one of the four great generals of the grassland? Let me ask you Guptad, do you remember the last time someone achieved such a feat in the last 20 years?”

“But the enemy was killed by us! The city was defended by us! And even those that died are our people! If anyone is going to take credit for this, it should be us!” Speaking up to here, Guptad added in another sentence: “Also Governor Bohan too because he sent his own troops to help us!”

“So what ... .. Gold Wolf Head died under the Northwest Army’s hand.” Du Wei sighed again: “Both the central command and the Northwest Army doesn’t want to fight, as such, this gesture of taking credit is just a way for both party to come to an understanding..... Don’t worry, they will only get a few complimenting words and maybe some money as a reward.”

Guptad is after all a ruffian, the only way he can release his frustration right now is to stamp the floor with his feet: “Damn it, I just don’t get it!”

With that, this fierce warrior waltz out of the room to vent his anger.

Looking at Knight Robert, Du Wei said: “Robert, go follow this mini 250, don’t let him do anything rash.....”

Smiling at his words, Robert replied: “Commander Guptad may have a bit of temper, but he’s not one to be rash. At most he will just whip some of the prisoners to vent his anger.”

“Then that’s good. If he’s going to whip the prisoners then let him, even better if they die because of it.” Du Wei’s finger began to knock at the table, his lip showing a weird smile: “Oh Rugaard ah Rugaard ah, what exactly is in your mind. You may be able to quell the anger back in the capital, but there is still the prairie king. Even if you can calm that beast, there is still the Shaman King; are you not afraid of the Shaman King’s vengeance? Oh snowy mountain....”

Thinking of this, Du Wei looked at Alpha: “Uncle Alpha, are you really sure that Rugaard’s son was able to use Ice Dou Qi? The Ice Dou Qi of Rodriguez? But from what I heard, Rodriguez is self-taught isn’t he?”

Alpha shakes his head; Rodriguez had always kept a low profile so his origin is not well known.

Du Wei sighed and thought: he can only wait till he meets Rodriguez to get a proper answer.

Back when Hussein returned from the Frozen Forest and brought back the legendary sword “Beauty under the Moonlight”, this saint knight also brought news of how the dragon prince’s intends to come seek revenge and how Rodriguez will swear allegiance to him after being persuaded by someone.

But just who is that mysterious person? To be able to convince a saint knight, that person’s ability must be in a league of his own.

What Du Wei didn’t know yet is that the mysterious person is in fact Mr. Blue Ocean, the famed scholar back in the capital.

Aside from this, he also didn’t know that Mr. Blue Ocean’s real name is in fact Blue Ocean’s Moon, also a disciple of the Snowy Mountain!!

But more importantly, Du Wei is still unaware of the fact that the book he found in the secret tunnel is in fact written by Mr. Blue Ocean’s teacher, also known as Gu Lanxiu the former Shaman King!!!

“I understand then ... .. To think Rugaard’s son is a master martial artist..... What’s your opinion on this Uncle Alpha, do you think he reached the saint level?”

Alpha shakes his head: “Probably not, but..... Compared to me, I’m afraid I won’t be his opponent. From my initial assessment, I can say he’s at the ninth level while I’m only at the eighth rank.”

“Oooh, what a young genius.” Du Wei smiled oddly: “Our Hus...” At this word, he suddenly coughed once: “The traitor of the temple, Hussein, wasn’t even at the eighth rank when he was that young, and he was said to be the strongest knight on the continent. If Rugaard’s son was so powerful, why didn’t we hear of this before?”

Alpha lowers his head: “It’s my fault young master, I wasn’t thorough enough when gather intel on the Northwest Army.”

Du Wei shook his head in disagreement: “It’s not your fault, maybe it’s because the other party was too low key up till now. If they wanted to hide this fact, it would have been extremely difficult for you to know.”

After staying in Anglia City for the next few days, Du Wei finally got word from his men that the Northwest Army stationed outside Loulan City has finally withdrawn. Like him, Longbottom and Hussein also heard of the big battle in Anglia City, therefore, the two quickly hurried over with their group to meet up with Du Wei.

Everyone was just as angry regarding the backstabbing actions of the Northwest Army, but what else can they do? The other party is simply too strong right now.

Going over the matter with all his men, they decided to have Longbottom and Guptad lead two forces to scour the entire Desa Province for any remnants of the native army.

And in the end, Du Wei made one other strange command.

“Have someone ready a carriage ... .. I’m heading out. Then send the order down to have a banner made for me! It must be as gorgeous as possible without any room for doubt..... As for the content of the banner, I want a

couple of big words on it!”

Alpha wondered: “Young master, what do you want to write and what’s the banner for?”

“Of course as a gift.” Du Wei sneered: “Hero, and a model to follow, the bigger the better!”

Alpha can already vaguely guess his intent by now: “Young master, you.....”

“I want to make a visit to meet the infamous general Rugaard.” Du Wei smirked; “It’s impolite of me to not meet him in person even after spending one year here. Since he’s not willing to come to me, I might as well go to him.”

With that, Du Wei gave no room for Alpha to object and simply waved his hand to send the knight away.

“Du Wei, what are you planning?”

Only Hussein and Du Wei remained in the room.

“I want to see that old bastard.” Du Wei smiled: “We really suffered a heavy blow this time because of that blasted Northwest Army. If we don’t give them some trouble for all this, how am I supposed to keep my head high in this place?”

Hussein frowned: “But you going in person to meet him.... Aren’t you afraid that you will become a sheep in a lion’s mouth?”

Giving a strange smile, Du Wei explained: “Since the Northwest Army took the initiative to kill that Gold Wolf Head, it means Rugaard doesn’t want to rebel yet..... Although the move is very clever, but it also exposed his limit! Instead of harming me, he will even do the opposite and try to protect me at all cost. If I were to get hurt in his place, you can damn well expect his plan to fall apart!”

At this point, Du Wei slowly and casually said his next words: “Thinking about it, another month is about to be here.... If I’m correct, the next Dragon prince should be making his entry in the next few days. Why not let the 200,000 soldiers in the Northwest Army act as my bodyguard?!”

Letting out a sinister laugh, Du Wei looked absolutely evil right now: “Have the men spread the word, say Duke Tulip is making a personal visit to General

Rugaard of the Northwest Army. I want to make sure that dragon prince knows I'm there!"

## Chapter 237 “Win-Win”

The news of Du Wei going off to “reward” the Northwest Army really did spread like wildfire. For those that didn’t know the ins and outs of the whole situation, these ignorant fools really thought the Northwest Army earned some great merit.

Although the Tulip soldiers held some criticism towards this gesture, but Du Wei’s ever expanding influence over these people eventually suppressed any grudge roaming through the ranks.

Spending over two days to prepare the huge gift, Du Wei then had Alpha attach the magnificent looking banner to a gigantic pole stretching as high as seven to eight meters in height. Using a carriage and four healthy looking horses, Du Wei intends to make the trip like this with only 200 guards accompanying him to the enemy’s roost.

Some had raised doubts over the small security team, but Du Wei quickly explained his thoughts for this: “I’m going to the enemy’s den, bringing 200 or 2000 won’t make any difference when the other party has over 200,000 soldiers standing by.”

As he closed in to the Nuling Province, he made sure to openly display the banner; in fact, he was so forceful about showing it off that even the neighboring villages outside his travel route got wind of it.

This was especially true when he finally entered Nuling Province. Out of his own deliberation, he intentionally slowed down his pace to test the water because he wanted to know the Northwest Army’s reaction to his coming.

Though Governor Bohan didn’t make an appearance when Du Wei entered the old man’s territory, but this loyal subject of the empire did send word to the local garrison forces that they are to protect Du Wei and his convoy along the way.

Back when the battle for Anglia City came to an end, Du Wei’s aid, Philip, already rushed over with a letter written by Bohan himself. This letter should’ve



been in Du Wei's hand long before the battle began, but because he wasn't in Loulan City, the matter was pushed back.

As for the context inside the letter, it was mostly explaining how Governor Bohan went ahead and sent his own troops into Du Wei's territory without permission to fight the native soldiers roaming the Desa Province.

Other than that, there wasn't much else besides one other phrase: "For the state!"

Bohan believed that even if he doesn't explain it in detail, Du Wei would still be able to grasp the meaning behind that one phrase.

Just like how the old man predicted, Du Wei's first reaction when he read the letter was appreciation and gratitude.

"My Lord, we will soon be inside the Northwest Army's sphere of influence after we pass that small town ahead of us." Sitting next to Du Wei, Philip was looking out the window with a faint sadness on his face: "Since I brought it up, I really feel sorry for Governor Bohan. He may be the governor of Nuling Province, but he only controls about half the province under his name. Also, he's constantly under the pressure of the Northwest Army stationed inside his territory; it must be difficult for him."

"Oh?" Du Wei gave a faint smile.

Phillip points his finger out the window and sighed: "Your dukeship, look outside..... To be honest, the more I learn about the terrain and state of affair in the Northwest, the more envious I become of Governor Bohan! Looking at it from a geographic standpoint, the Nuling Province is way better than our Desa Province. At the very least, they don't have to worry about the threat of the natives because we are there to act as a buffer. Then looking at the land, Nuling is way more fertile than our Desa Province. You can see it in their p

opulation; it's twice the size of our province! Though with your dukeship's wealth, money and food isn't an issue you can't solve; however, the main problem we have is our soldiers!"

When he got up to this point, Philip looked towards Du Wei to see if he should continue. Seeing there was no discontent on his lord's face, Philip felt it

was safe to continue speaking: “My lord, even if we round up the numbers in our rank, the soldiers under our command is at best 20,000. I know you are a bit dissatisfied with the recruitment method of General Longbottom, but you should also think about it. There are only so much people in our territory, 800,000 to be exact. Even if we openly recruited, how many more do you think we can get? Let’s assume every family out there contributed their most abled body man to the cause..... Let’s not discuss the possibility of that happening..... But if it did, the number still wouldn’t be that significant. According to the calculation of me and my brothers, 50,000 troops should be the limit we can manage. Discounting the old, the young, and the women’s, we could forcefully conscript up to 300,000 young men, but such a feat would no doubt cause panic to those down below! Unless it was a life or death situation, that idea is out of the question.”

Nodding in acknowledgement, Du Wei didn’t rebuke because he already knew all this way before Philip brought it up.

Considering the population in his own territory, the idea of creating a 200,000 strong army is extremely difficult.

“More importantly, there is a bigger problem on our hand.” Phillip smiles wryly: “Even if we want to recruit soldiers, we won’t be able to out recruit the Northwest Army. My lord, did you forget the wartime decree?”

Standing between two provinces, the Northwest Army may have over 200,000 soldiers under their banner, but life and death is something unavoidable, as such, there will always be new and retiring soldiers moving in and out of that gigantic entity.

Of course, the biggest influx of flesh blood is usually derived from the locals living in the Northwest.

In accordance with the war time decree, once every two years, the Northwest Army is permitted to recruit new soldiers in order to replenish their ranks. Even more troubling..... The wartime decree states that the Northwest Army gets priority over the new recruits if the matter coincides with the local garrison forces.

This way around, the difficult job of recruiting new soldiers in this sparsely

populated land becomes even harder.

“This is why I’m so envious of Governor Bohan.” Philip smiled painfully: “Nuling Province may be home to the Northwest Army, but its greatest asset is its population, its way bigger than our Desa Province! What this mean is that the possible candidates capable of joining the army also increased exponentially ‘if’ the Nuling Province was ours. According to my calculations, pulling in 100,000 soldiers shouldn’t be a problem at all and it also wouldn’t have any adverse effect on the territory. My lord, my biggest concern right now is the season for recruitment. It’s not the main season at the moment, but when the New Year rolls around, the Northwest Army will be making their rounds across the land. When that happens, we can expect quite the headache.”

“I understand your words, but you can’t just increase a population at will. For a parent to raise a child to adulthood, they will need at least 10 to 20 years. And if we follow conventional means, the time frame needed to increase our population will likely take three to two generations. Assuming we did encourage the citizens to procreate..... Do you think a family will pump out so many kids if they can’t afford it?” Du Wei shakes his head: “Philip, I’ve been thinking about all this from many angles and found that there are so many problems hindering us. Adding in the issues thrown at us by the Northwest Army..... It gets even harder!”

Smiling sadly, Philip replied: “Your honor, I think we should talk with Governor Bohan. Though you two don’t get along too well, but after what happened back in Anglia City, I believe this is the turning point for us. Bohan may be a bit of a power hog when it comes to authority, but he is still loyal to the empire. At the very least, our stance coincides with him regarding the natives and the Northwest Army. He got the people we lack; we just need to find a way to help him tap into that resource for us.”

Money is definitely not the issue here because Bohan was able to come up with the auction system. Then there’s only one reason left as to why Bohan is facing so much trouble when recruiting more soldiers: his status.

Unlike Du Wei whom is a Duke and a noble, Bohan is only a governor.

According to the blasted war time decree, the wage and food supply of the local garrison forces must be distributed by the Northwest Army, meaning

Bohan must send the money up before his own men can receive their wage.

A similar example to what Bohan is experiencing should be Sin City where Du Wei is snatching a lot of his new recruits. Before Du Wei came along, the soldiers stationed at that prison could barely feed themselves, let alone be properly equipped.

On this point, Du Wei is luckily able to bypass the problem faced by Bohan because a noble as big as a Duke can conscript his own private army.

“It wouldn’t be bad to cooperate.” Philip smiled: “You are free to build up your military power and Bohan can rid himself of the salary constraint placed on him by the Northwest Army. Win-win, right?”

Du Wei was interested now: “Elaborate!”

“When the autumn conscription rolls around, we can make a deal with Bohan. According to imperial law, cross province conscription is permitted so long as the proper paper work is sent up to the high command. Considering your status and popularity, I believe those in the capital wouldn’t make things difficult for us.”

“And Bohan is going to agree to all this?”

“That is the key here.” The way Phillip was laughing right now is extremely sly and cunning, almost like Du Wei when he’s scheming something... .. It must be because Philip spent too much time around Du Wei.

“We can make an exchange with him.” Philip explained: “Unlike him where he is constrained by the war time decree, we are perfectly capable of bypassing it. If you negotiate with him.... For example: he can take half the soldiers we draft.”

Du Wei is a smart man so he already knew what Philip was getting at: “What you mean is that he can take half the soldiers and use our ‘Tulip’ name to mask the issue. This way, those soldiers will still be under his command while bypassing the hindrance from the Northwest Army, right?”

“Correct.” Philip softly replied: “If that Bohan is not at ease, we can just let him appoint the commanding officers. Also, we can even build a military base camp along the border of the two provinces and have the troops stationed

there..... If we go that far, what else can he complain about?"

"Good idea!" Du Wei did not dilute his compliments: "Philip, you are growing into a fine aid."

Smiling in satisfaction, Philip continues to speak: "My lord, this is a good idea, but we still need Bohan to nod. Given Bohan's personality, that guy might put a crazier condition forward, HAHA."

"Let him put all he want." Du Wei smiled: "If he wants some benefit, I be happy to give him. Anyways, I owe him this much when he went as far as to sacrifice an entire unit for me..... Besides, I'm not lacking money."

"Then without further ado my lord, pen a letter and I will make a visit to the governor right away." Philip urged.

Du Wei thought for a moment and shook his head: "No, it's best not to leave any evidence behind for this type of thing. Who knows what would happen in the future, it might become lethal. I will personally make a visit to Bohan on the way back."

# Chapter 238 Part 1

# Chapter 238 “Rugaard Of The Northwest”

## (Part One)

Helen Mountain, also known as a tail of the Kilimanjaro Mountain range, is a small mountain that made a clear cut through the center of the Nuling Province; thus, dividing the province in two.

Though Governor Bohan and the Northwest Army didn't openly say this, but both parties are using this mountain line as a boundary between the two – the south belonging to Bohan and the North to the Northwest Army.

When Du Wei and his convoy finally reached Helen City located at the base of this mountain, the soldiers sent over by Bohan to escort Du Wei and his men were already turning away. The reason is no other, Helen city is controlled by the Northwest Army so it's only natural for Bohan's men to leave.

From as far as 10li (500 meter per li) out from the city, the sound of horse beating against the ground could already be heard from the direction of the city. Unlike last time though, the attitude from the 1000 strong unit from the Northwest Army was much better than before. Stopping at a distance not far from Du Wei's convoy, one of the soldiers carry a black flag came out from his unit and politely requested an audience with Du Wei.

As Du Wei got off his carriage to meet the guy, Du Wei was a little surprised to find that the person is an old acquaintance.

Totoro: a general that specialized in the management of the logistic department of the Northwest Army.

On many occasions, this fatty had met with Du Wei to ask for military funds back when he first came to the Northwest. Despite being taken advantage of by this guy, Du Wei never made things difficult for this Totoro; as such, their relationship can't be called too terrible.

“Duke, It's been a long time.” Getting off his horse, this Totoro then came up to Du Wei and performed a quick greeting gesture before pulling at Du Wei's hand in a friendly manner: “Duke, I can't believe you actually came to visit.

When the Army Head heard of your coming, I was sent here to welcome you.”

Since he’s here to be a guest, Du Wei can only push down the piled up anger inside. With a smiling face, he replied: “I was worried my visit may be a bit reckless. As an uninvited guest, I fear general Rugaard will find my visit to be insensitive.”

Exchanging some more useless words, Du Wei made sure to pin down any changes on this Totoro’s face. Sure enough, this fatty would on occasion shoot some alarming gazes at Du Wei’s men.

Luckily Du Wei wasn’t afraid of this fatty checking up on his people and luggage, after all, the whole reason for his visit is to openly waltz into the enemy home and bring some trouble along the way.

Du Wei’s thoughts at the moment: though his convoy doesn’t have anything dangerous, but a dragon will soon be here in a couple of days!

As for Totoro, this logistic general didn’t find much interest in Du Wei’s team after some careful assessment, but he did give a extra glance at Du Wei’s coach driver.

“Eh? Duke, I didn’t know you liked to use these types of barbarians from the Southeast.” Totoro smiled, his voice lowering: “Our General Rugaard is the same. Just recently, he got a handful of beautiful slaves from that region. Since you are here, you will also have the pleasure of seeing them.”

Not replying, Du Wei only smiled.

Seeing this, Totoro quickly pat his head like he just realized something: “Foolish me, I got a big mouth here! Your Dukeship already has the fortunate of receiving the Marquise’s favor, so why would these mediocre beauties stay in your eye.” When he said this, Totoro was always looking at Du Wei

to see what his reaction would be.

Though Du Wei knew he was being observed, he didn’t bother exposing it. With a somewhat sly smile, he casually replied: “General Totoro is too humorous, but to be able to see some woman from the Southeast on this visit, it seems General Rugaard and I are of the same kind!”



As he finish, Du Wei began to pull Totoro's hand to board the carriage.

Totoro never was much of a military man. Even inside the Northwest Army, this person is more like financial steward than a general. Seeing a chance to ride in a comfortable carriage with fine furnishing, this fatty would of course not deny the invitation, especially when the Duke is so insistent, right???

Once inside, Du Wei immediately pulled out a bottle of fine wine from the secret compartment under his seat. Using this as a starter, this fatty finally let's himself go after gulping down several cups of alchohol: "Good wine! It truly is hard to come across such a fine wine in this impoverish place!"

Du Wei faintly smiled: "This wine is made from a fruit in the Southeast. If General Totoro like, I can have someone send over a case or two."

Hearing this, Totoro continuously expressed his gratitude for the gift. However, just when this general was at a high point, Du Wei suddenly uttered something in a soft voice: "But, General is the great steward in charge of 200,000 soldiers. I fear the rare commodities in my possession can only be called common in the general's eye."

"Of course not!" Totoro repeatedly denied this, his tone sounded a little pitiful as he shook his head back and forth: "Your Dukeship is making fun of me. My post here may look glamorous on the outside, but I'm merely a mouse that have put up with the troubles of both side. On one hand I have to handle the job of begging Governor Bohan for money, on the other, I have to deal with the division generals that come demanding for money. The truth is I'm quite stressed about all this too, hence the reason why I was so happy to be given the job of welcoming your lordship."

Du Wei suddenly had a thought: "Did you say General Rugaard recently bought some slaves..... I'm guessing it was done through your hands too, right?"

"Of course!" At the mention of women, the eyes of this fatty were brimming with light: "The girls from the Southeast are a bit dark in terms of skin complexion, but I must say, they're always silky smooth to the touch. Best of all, they're always submissive with many other benefits for the owner..... HAHA, if Duke is interested..... Oh no, no, I misspoke. If your Dukeship can get something as good as this wine, then there's no way you are lacking in girls from the

Southeast.”

What, demanding a bribe now?

Raising his lips into a fake smile, Du Wei began to test the water: “It’s not difficult to do..... You know, I don’t hold much interest in women’s because of my Magician background, but getting my hands on some beautiful Southeast girls is not difficult at all. If General Totoro is interested, I’ll have someone send over the best girls under my business along the wine of course.”

At his words, Totoro became so happy that even his eyes had turned into the shape of a crescent moon. Noticing this, Du Wei decided to downplay the situation to see the reaction: “Oh that’s right, since General Rugaard had you buy a batch of beautiful slave girls, surely they must be exceedingly beautiful. I fear mine wouldn’t even be lookable in comparison.”

This fatty may be very good at covering his real emotions, but even he wasn’t able to stop the reflex like reaction he leaked: “Of course not! I’m merely a housekeeper, how can my lowly status get one of those girls. General Rugaard had me buy them for the other generals as a reward for their hard work.”

“He’s no soldier, he’s more like a Babbitt businessmen found in the marketplace!” This is Du Wei’s evaluation of Totoro.

If Rugaard really revolted, a person like this may not necessarily follow through with the plan. Perhaps he can start from this angle and get an idea of whatever the Northwest Army is planning.

“One shouldn’t be afraid of others being greedy, what they should fear is not knowing what they desire!”

As his carriage continued to move forward, Du Wei gave the order to not stay in Helan City and head straight for the Northwest Army’s headquarter. Since he’s being escorted anyways, Du Wei is not afraid of any mishaps along the road at night. Looking back at the date, the second dragon prince should be here really soon, best make haste.

In the never few days, Du Wei had practically won over this Totoro with his precious carriage. Showering the general with luxurious food and wine, there was no end in sight for the praises coming out of the fatty’s mouth.

It's to be expected. Totoro may be in charge of the logistic department, but this land is simply too barren. At best, you can only call him a soiled rich man from the benefits he reaped thus far from his job.

Moreover, he is still inside the army. Even if this fatty likes to indulge himself in pleasure, it's still not proper to be so blatant about it inside the army.

If not out of consideration for Du Wei's identity, Totoro might have really called for some beautiful ladies to accompany him inside the carriage.

Finally after two days like this, Du Wei and his convoy is finally at the main headquarter of the Northwest Army "Watt" fortress.

This is an intermediate sized fortress city built for the sole purpose of housing the military. With a glance up at the defensive wall, Du Wei estimate it's at least 15 meters in height. Seems the owner spared no expense when constructing it because the material used is obviously the rock-hard boulders so commonly found in the Northwest.

Then there is also the siege weapons placed atop of the ramparts. Are those catapults he's seeing up there?

As for the ballista's, there's really not much to say other than too many!

It wasn't just all about the fortress. Outside the wall, there are several big military camps stationed around the perimeter with a ginormous training field further out for the cavalry to train in. This city truly is militarized.....

Ever since the Northwest Army made their home here many years ago, pretty much all of the residence inside the city are the families of the soldiers serving inside the Northwest Army. In order to maintain loyalty from his men, this sly Rugaard intentionally had this done so these people can be kept as hostages if the soldier in question tried any funny business.

When Du Wei's convoy first arrived at the gate, he took the initiation to actively get off his carriage just so he can ride on a horse. His visit today is to make it as high profile as possible, therefore, making an appearance at the front of his convoy is more ideal than stuffing himself inside a box.

Following in his lead, Totoro also got on a horse and rode next to him, all the while introducing the sites in the city.

Suddenly, something further ahead of the street caught his sight. With a dome shape structure, this building with stain glass windows also hung an iconic sign above the entrance that gave off a divine sensation to anyone that looks at it.....

“EH?” Du Wei was slightly taken aback: “This place also has a temple?”

“Your Dukeship is too funny.” Totoro looked stern in the way he spoke because not even he dares to kid around when it came to the temple: “Not only is the Temple of Light the state religion, many of our soldiers – including many generals – are devoted follower of the goddess. I believe I don’t need to mention this, but its common knowledge anyone with power inside the empire are firm believers of the temple.”

Du Wei may be nodding, but his real thoughts were: I’m not, what you are going to do?

# Chapter 238 “Rugaard Of The Northwest”

## (Part Two)

Not long after they openly marched into town, a clear audible sound of horse beating against the ground could be heard from the front. As someone that lived in the Northwest for a while now, Du Wei is perfectly capable of distinguishing the identity of someone based on the rhythm of their horse. And this time, the rhythm was neat and steady, obviously from the army.

Sure enough, not too far away in the middle of the street, units of black cavalry knights were making their way over. Based on the respectful reaction of the citizens walking nearby, it seems these newcomers are quite well known around here.

It's not the first time Du Wei met a soldier of the Northwest Army, as such, he was easily able to discern the difference between this unit and the rest. Wearing a full set of black armor made of superior quality, even the horses these people rode were 1st class that is hard to come by in the empire. What's more, even from afar, Du Wei can feel the suffocating atmosphere surrounding these hardened veterans.

Looking at the outfit of these knights, the first thought that came to mind was the report given to him by Uncle Alpha. Aren't these the people that intercepted Gold Wolf Head and his men along the way?

Then at 50 meters before colliding with Du Wei and his men, this group of black knights suddenly came to a halt.

“General Totoro, I heard you went to receive our guests. I'm guessing it's safe to presume this person beside you is the famous Duke Tulip?” The one to speak up is a young knight that had half of his face covered in a metal mask, clearly the leader of the pack.

Instinctively, Du Wei got a weird vibe coming off from this fella that made get quite uncomfortable. Though the voice sounded gentle and calm, but there was an indescribable chill in there.

“I am Du Wei, Du Wei Rudolph.” With a smile, Du Wei then hauled his horse forward a few steps to get a closer look at the young knight: “Sir is?”

In a loud voice, Totoro hurries in to introduce: “Duke, this right here is General Rugaard’s son.....”

“My name is Cybaster.” The young Knight introduced himself with a smiling face similar to how he looked when beheading the now deceased Gold Wolf Head General: “Duke, forgive me for not saluting you properly for am under military orders. I have long admired your Dukeship and your achievements. Known as the strongest among this generation, I can’t wait till the day I can ask you for advice.”

Giving a few polite words back in return, Du Wei was cut off by a sudden laugh from this young knight: “You be sure to stay a few extra days in ‘Watt City’ so I can ask you for advice. The truth is.... I have a strong interest in magic. For a famed magician like yourself to make a visit, I mustn’t miss this rare opportunity.”

Not talking anymore, Du Wei only watched on as the young Cybaster turned to leave, but before he left, he made sure to let Du Wei hear his orders: “Continue forward, anyone that doesn’t reach Helen City by nightfall, DEATH!”

With that, Cybaster and his men flew right pass Du Wei’s convoy.

Wiping the sweat from his forehead, Totoro shows a relieved smile: “Duke mustn’t take it to heart. Our little general here is always like this in nature, even in the face of General Rugaard, he is like this.....”

Giving a few polite words, Du Wei then followed Totoro’s lead to arrive at the general’s manor. Though the place was very grand, but it didn’t give off a feeling of being overly luxurious, more like what you would find in those ancient majestic mansions.

Waiting till Totoro was completely gone from his sight because the fatty had to go in to inform the residence, Du Wei then turned to whisper at the guard behind him, “Hey, wanted criminal..... That kid just now is even more prideful than you were when we first met.”

With an eyepatch covering a side of his face, this knight that Du Wei is talking

to is none other than our Saint Knight, Hussein in disguise. Listening Du Wei's assessment, our saint knight only gave a light snort of dissatisfaction.

"Oh, you're not satisfied? I say, how old is the kid? From what I heard, the guy's strength is already at the eighth level, way younger than you were when you were of that rank. I fear your title as the continent's number one knight won't stand for very long at this rate."

Without anger in his voice, Hussein humorously replied: "What number one knight of the continent, I never cared for that stuff.... But that boy though, I hear he is fluent in Rodriguez's ability, that I would like to see."

When their conversation got up to this point, a loud voice drifted over from the general's manor and broke their chit chat.

"For the Duke of Tulip to make a personal visit is truly an honor for I, Rugaard of the Northwest Army!" Giving off a rough sounding laugh, this figure came out in big strides that were commonly found in a soldier.

Just as Du Wei finished dismounting, the guy was already in front of him and gave Du Wei an enthusiastic embrace: "Your father I and were good friends 20 years ago when we fought against the Northwest Natives. When I heard Old Raymond's son was coming to the Northwest, I was so eager to meet you, and now I finally do!" Only after finishing his words did he release Du Wei.

Taking a step back, this old man then carefully looked over Du Wei with a face full of goodwill: "Very good, what a handsome boy, truly befitting a child of the Rowling Family!"

Like the foe before him, Du Wei also surveyed this evil warlord of the Northwest.

The face of this Rugaard really didn't look all that crafty or evil, more like an average plain person. If Du Wei didn't know better, he might really mistake the person before him as a heroic military man with great temperament.

But then it's those harmless looking ones that are always the most dangerous.

On this point, Du Wei is very clear on it.

Of course, this General Rugaard does have some special characteristic that

made him stand out. While standing before Du Wei – a 15 year boy – this old man is even shorter than him by half a head!

Famed in the Northwest for his butchery deeds, ulterior motives, and collusion with the natives, this fear inducing warlord is a..... Midget???

However, it's unlikely anyone in the Northwest would dare look down at this man!

Though Du Wei never met with Rugaard prior to this, he did hear rumors about the guy. Now that he is face to face with this midget, Du Wei is somewhat surprised that this person is even smaller than what he originally imagined.

Technically, Du Wei isn't a full grown adult yet, so using the calculation from his previous world, Du Wei is only 160 inches while this guy before him is only up to his nose.....

Also, this midget had a very big crooked nose, making his normally square face look dauntingly oppressive to those that meet him.

"General Rugaard." Du Wei gently threw up a breather to force a smile: "My father also mentioned you on many occasions. I've been in the Northwest for more than a year and I have to say it's my blunder for not visiting you till this day, please excuse my faux pas."

"No need to be so polite!" Rugaard waves his hand heroically like it didn't matter: "Your father and I fought a war together so you can say we are like brothers that went through life and death. Based on this, we can even be called family. Come-come-come, let's go inside!"

After his speech, this old man started to pull Du Wei inside.

Unlike the kind speech made this old fox, Du Wei was thinking: I'll be damned if I become family with a traitor like you!

Following Rugaard into the manor, the pair then came into an open living room that was already filled with several knights in armor – this includes General Guhuaduoluo that led the troops against Loulan City.

As for the rest of the knights sitting inside, they were about thirty to forty years of age and each one of these fierce looking fellas had a genuine knight's



badge clipped to their chest, the lowest being a sixth rank.

When they saw Du Wei entering room, their eyes all gave off a sense of open hostility.

And in the room, a feast was already set, but unlike the big feast tables found in the empire, it was set following the customs of the prairie natives where each guest had their own small table.

Organized into a small circular formation, Rugaard then pulled Du Wei along to sit at the very top reserved for the Army Head.

Unlike Hussein that was allowed to follow Du Wei into the banquet, the rest of Du Wei's people were led away to rest somewhere else.

"Come-come-come, let me made the introduction. This right here is the famed Duke Tulip of the empire, known as the most talented person in his generation! Ha-ha, the son of Earl Raymond of the Rowling Family." The way this Rugaard said the last part greatly displeased Du Wei.

What does he mean by that, is it to mock me? The son of the Rowling Family became the Duke of Tulip.... Is this not mockery or what?

But then looking at the warm smile of this Rugaard, Du Wei could only sigh and think: This guy can act!

"Du Wei, you see? These here are all of my greatest warriors! I'm sure I don't need to introduce General Guhuaduoluo again so I will do the others. Come-come-come, each one of you come toast the Duke and state your name. Whoever doesn't get drunk tonight will get their butts wacked as punishment!"

Listening to General Rugaard's "heroic" voice, Du Wei wondered.

What type of person is this Rugaard really?

Wu Sangui? Shi Jing Tang? Or is it ... .. An Lushan?

Note: all of these names belonged to some of the worst traitors in chinese history. Every single one of them has at least one drama dedicated to their deeds, especially Wu Sangui because he literally sold out the entire country with one move.

Thinking of this, Du Wei laughed hahaly and took the initiative to raise a cup

for a toast: “General Rugaard is too kind. I’m just a youngster, how can I have these well-known heroes come give me a toast? Best let me go to them!”

With that, he then grabs a cup to toast the guy sitting to the left of him. Based on the face and beard this guy had, Du Wei actually found this person to be similar to his own general Longbottom.

Raising a cup to the guy, Du Wei smiled: “This cup here is Du Wei showing his respect to the hero of the Northwest Army!”

Despite his advances, this guy only gave a heavy grunt as a reply and never reached out to receive Du Wei’s cup.

As a result the atmosphere became frozen.

# Chapter 239 “Refuse A Toast Only To Be Forced A Forfeit Drink!” (Part One)

The atmosphere in the hall was cold. With the cup in his hand, Du Wei was stuck in an awkward position right now after being denied. Nevertheless, he didn't show an annoyed expression and merely gave Rugaard a glance.

Sure enough, Rugaard puts on a pretentious face and immediately called out: “Shrek, why are you not drinking when the Duke gave you a toast?”

Shrek?

Nice name, nice name! Looking at this big bearded guy, he couldn't help but sigh in secret: Why couldn't he be green skinned? If it was green then it be perfect.

This Shrek grunted. Raising his head with confidence, he said: “My Lord, drinking is never too late. I've heard so much about Duke Tulip so there was always some thoughts irking at my heart..... If I can't untie these knots then the wine wouldn't have any flavor anyways!”

With that, this big bearded Shrek then stared at Du Wei and said his next words in a low muffled voice: “Duke Tulip, I heard from Guhuaduoluo that you were able to shoot an arrow as far as 10 Li's out. I've spent all my life playing with the bow and have yet heard of someone shooting an arrow that far! Humph, likely some shameful magic used to deceive others!”

Here it comes! Giving a suppressed laugh, Du Wei did not talk; instead, he stole a glance at the Generals seated in the room. Sure enough, everyone present had a faint smile on their face and even the words coming out of Rugaard right now had a strange meaning behind it.

Aigh ... .. Seems like they want to show their strength, but..... Do they really need to make it so old fashioned?’

Sighing, Du Wei said: “General Shrek, what do you have in mind?”

“I don't believe someone can shoot an arrow 10 Li's out !” Speaking aloud,

Shrek continues: “I fear someone is playing a trick here. Duke Tulip, that day you managed to force our army to retreat 10 Li’s with a single arrow. If word spread, others might really misinterpret the tale and believe your Dukeship is capable of repelling an entire army with a single arrow! I’m unconvinced so I wish to ask for your advice in archery.”

Du Wei made a smirk as he lowered his cup, “Oh, what do you wish to consult in?”

Letting out a haha laugh, this Shrek then loudly yelled: “Bring out my bow!”

Under his commanding voice, the side door in the room swung open and what came out are two splendid looking men carrying a bow in their hands. Based on the black sheen it gave off, this is clearly a bow made of pure metal with an pull string constructed out of a mysterious material.

Looking at how difficult it was for the two to haul it into room, the weight this thing held is most certainly not light.

Aside from the bow, the guy in the back also carried a quiver in one hand. Though there are only 10 arrows inside, but the makeup of these arrows are totally different from what you would find in an ordinary arrow.

Generally speaking, the shaft of an arrow is made using wood, the head using metal, the tail using feather plumes, but these arrows in the quiver.... Every single one of them was forged out of pure metal and was double the size of an ordinary arrow. Even more shocking, the tip of these arrows were made out of a metal that had a golden sheen to it!

Seeing it was the right time to make his move, Rugaard picks up his cup and stood up:

“Du Wei ... .. This General Shrek here is our number one marksmen in the Northwest Army and the ‘Black Gold Tread Bow’ you see before us is famous even in the Northwest! Once upon a time, Shrek here use

d this very bow to shoot down another army’s flagpole with a single shot! If only talking about archery, you can say he is the number one man in the Northwest Army.” With that, he turned to this Shrek and said: “General Shrek, have you forgotten the Duke’s status, how can you ask him to compete with

you? Hurry and sit down. There will only be fun in this banquet and no other.”

Du Wei was laughing inside because he found their act absolutely amusing. Clearly this was all a set up.

He immediately made a laugh: “General Rugaard, I’m very much willing to see General Shrek’s archery. Consider it my contribution to the banquet’s entertainment.”

With that, he looks at the big bearded guy: “General Shrek, how do you want to compete?”

Using one hand only, Shrek lifts the bow and firmly grips onto it: “My bow here can be called the strongest in the army, but even then it can only shoot as far as one kilometer. When it comes to a bow, the stronger the pull string, the further the arrow will go. My bow may not be some legendary artifact, but in terms of strength, it is definitely hard to come by even if you scour the entire continent! In the Northwest Army, there are only five people that can handle this bow so to be able to shoot 10 Li’s out, I Shrek, will not believe such farce!”

So that is what this is all about!

Before Du Wei arrived, Guhuaduoluo explained in detail about how he was forced to turn back 10 Li’s and it was because of one arrow. When the upper level heard of this, especially this Shrek, they took it as a great insult and didn’t believe it!

To be able to shoot 10 Li’s out... .. How strong does the bow needs to be? How tough does the wielder needs to be? There is no such thing in this world!!

They immediately concluded that Du Wei used some kind of magic to secretly achieve the feat.

Since everyone decided on this point, it’s only proper for them to show off their might.

Shrek then had some of the men open the room’s main door. Then in big strides, he walked outside and cried out: “Duke Tulip, you and I will compare our archery!”

Du Wei only smiled: “And how do you want to compete?”

Shrek then points to the main gate leading to the outside: “Commander, let’s move the banquet to the training field. This way the Duke and I can truly settle the matter!”

Rugaard seems to glance at Du Wei before breaking into a laugh: “Okay! We soldiers aren’t the type to care for these customary practices anyway. Let’s move the party into the training field and enjoy the show and wine!”

Since this was all premeditated, of course Rugaard’s subordinates aren’t going to object; instead, the room erupted into loud cheers.

Subsequently, some soldiers came and moved the stuff away.

As the head of the army, this Rugaard would naturally have a private training field in his manor. In only a few minutes, the entire crowd was relocated to the training field.

Under the command of Shrek, a large number of soldiers immediately brought out target boards to scatter across the field. Both close and far, the shortest being 50 meters while the furthest at a staggering 200 meters.

In front of all eyes, Shrek suddenly picked up his Black Gold Tread Bow and jumped atop of a war horse that was brought over earlier. This big bearded general really is capable because the moment he got on, he not only neighed the horse forward, he also straightened himself into a standing position to draw his bow. Like this, shots began to fire from his hand as he made his round across the field.

Shoop-shoop-shoop.

Releasing nine shots in a single breath, not a single miss and all were bull’s eye!

Then before anyone could break into cheers, he suddenly switches his bow to a back drawing position and began to shoot.

Shoop.

When the final shot went out, the arrow was so powerful that it pierced through the first target board and landed on the one behind it.

Applauding at the result, even Du Wei called out in amazement because this

Shrek truly is a good marksman!

It was at this moment an eagle was circling in the sky. Letting out a muffled laugh at the sight, this big bearded guy suddenly rushed up to a target board and unplugged the lodged arrow. Then redrawing his bow again, this Shrek managed to pull so hard that the Black Gold Tread Bow in his hand was almost the shape of a full moon.....

Under the humming sound created by the vibrating bow string, the shot was released and flew straight towards the eagle.....

Shoop

What came next is a loud cry of pain from the eagle as it dropped out of the sky.

This finishing move created a deafening applause from the crowd.

This Shrek landed all 10 arrows and even took down an eagle in the sky! This is just WOW.

It wasn't just Du Wei that was amazed; even Hussein that was standing in the back was moved by the sight.

If it was only talking about martial skills, even ten Shrek wouldn't be Hussein's opponent. But archery.... It's not something one can learn by just cultivating their Dou Qi!

# Chapter 239 “Refuse A Toast Only To Be Forced A Forfeit Drink!” (Part Two)

Under the applauding cheers of the crowd, Shrek dismounted and proudly looked at Du Wei: “Duke, your turn.”

Sensing everyone’s conceited laughter, Du Wei sighed and said: “General Shrek’s archery is amazing, truly worthy of being called the number one marksman in the Northwest Army! I fear it would be difficult for me to find another like you even among the prairie natives.”

After a pause, Du Wei looked at the crowd and thought: If he doesn’t display his strength today, these people might really look down on him.

It didn’t matter anyways. He knew they just wanted to humiliate him today in front of everyone and wouldn’t really rebel at the moment.

Thinking of this, Du Wei smiled and said: “General Shrek, would it be possible to show me your bow?”

Letting out a proud laugh, Shrek formally handed over the bow and smiled: “Does the duke also want to try my bow? Ha-ha!”

Following up, Guhuaduoluo that was standing nearby butts in: “Duke Tulip, General Shrek’s Black Gold Tread Bow is famous in our Army! Other than himself, General Rugaard, and our young general, there isn’t any other that could handle this precious weapon. Let’s not mention whether or not you can shoot with it, just being able to draw the bow is quite a feat in itself!”

Still smiling, Du Wei ignored the warning and went for the bow with one hand. Sure enough, the bow was seriously heavy because the moment he held it in his hand, he can feel the weight pressing down against him: “Oh? Even you can’t draw this bow?”

Flushing red at the comment, Guhuaduoluo was hit in the weak spot. His greatest asset had always been his cautionary and prudent personality; as such, his martial skills really can’t be matched in the league of experts. Forget about



shooting the Black Gold Tread Bow, just drawing the string is enough to exert him of all his strength: “I can draw the bow, but if we’re talking about shooting it, then that’s beyond my capability. I’ll be open with you, unless your martial skills are above the third rank, you can forget about drawing the bow, let alone shooting 10 consecutive times at a distant target!”

Acting like he didn’t hear anything, Du Wei continues to caress the bow in an absent minded manner: “Oh, 10 times eh.....”

With that, he secretly pulls at the draw string when one of his fingers hooked onto it. As expected, the string was exceptionally strong. Considering his current arm strength, it would be an extraordinary achievement if he can pull just one-third of the way.

Seeing Du Wei’s shameless attempt at drawing the bow, everyone in the crowd broke out into laughter.

Not only is this Duke too young, but look at those puny arms, how much strength can he possibly have? Unlike Du Wei that have never used this Black Gold Tread Bow, just about every general present had in some way attempted to shoot with it. If even they cannot step up to the task, how can a pipsqueak like this kid do what they can’t do? It’s certain now; this Duke used some kind of petty magic trick to propel the arrow 10 Li’s out.

Giving off a gloating smile, everyone couldn’t wait to see Du Wei make a fool of himself.

“Truly a good bow.” Du Wei smirked and turned to look at the surrounding crowd with a strange light in his eyes: “General Shrek, your bow may be good..... But it’s only average in my opinion. To call this bow amazing.... How hilarious!”

Bursting into rage at the comment, Shrek shouted: “What did you say! Duke Tulip, if you can draw my b

ow 10 times then it’s your win!”

Du Wei lets out a laugh like he was stuck in a predicament. Shaking his head, he sighed: “let’s just forget about it..... I’m just a guest; it’s impolite of me to win over the general.”

Turning red from anger, Shrek grits his teeth and said: “Quit bragging! Tulip, if you win, then ... .. I’ll..... ”

As a reckless man, he was about to say something dangerous when Rugaard’s cough brought him back to reality.

Although Rugaard didn’t believe the kid before him can win, but he’s not someone foolish enough to be played by a few provoking words.

As a precautionary measure, he cuts in to take over: “Shrek! If Duke Tulip wins, you are fined a drink! HA HA HA HA ... ..”

A drink?

Du Wei makes a cold laugh, his finger pointing to a huge jar in the middle of the crowd. Standing at more than a meter high, this jar can easily store over a hundred Jin worth of wine. Looking at it now, there should still be half a jar left, which is still a whopping 30-50 Jin of wine.

(1 Jin is equal to 0.5kg)

“If I win, please drink the entire jar General!”

After watching Shrek nod in agreement, Du Wei smiled and begins to draw at the bow string.....

Snip!!

Just like that, this famous Black Gold Treat Bow was snapped in half like it was made of rotting wood!!

This scene sent shockwaves across the crowd!

Casually tossing the treasured bow to the ground, Du Wei turns to Rugaard and laughed: “I’m sorry ... .. I used too much strength. Really though, this bow just isn’t up to par..... Since I ruined General Shrek’s bow, I will be sure to compensate him with a better one in the future.”

Staring down at his now destroyed bow in silence, Shrek looked like he can burn a whole through the ground from how intense his gaze was!

That’s a Black Gold Tread Bow! This is his Black Gold Tread Bow!! Just being able to draw the string is an amazing feat!

Yet in the hands of this youngster, it snapped like it was made of paper! How is this possible?!

Illusion! This must be an illusion!

Rubbing his eyes in disbelief, Shrek could only helplessly look at the tattered mess on the ground.

Du Wei sneered as he watched Shrek's pitiful reaction: "General Shrek, are you trying to go back on your words?"

Flushing red like a beet, Shrek suddenly growled before turning to the giant wicker. Then with one fell swoop, he began jugging down the wine in big gulps.....

"Humph! Refuse a toast only to be forced a forfeit drink!" Du Wei's little mutter sounded like he was deliberately talking to himself, but everyone present can clearly hear it like they were beside him.

Poor Shrek, after only jugging down a dozen mouthful of this intense spirit, this big bearded guy was already having trouble keeping himself straight.

It's to be expected, Even if this huge wine jar is half filled to begin with, there are still over 30-50 Jin worth of liquid inside! How do you expect a normal person to finish that much alcohol?

Fine, even if not alcohol, just water is enough to stuff a person to death in such quantity!

After a few more gulps of this intense spirit – a specialty of the Northwest – this Shrek finally caved in. With a slight slant of his foot, he came crashing down to the floor like all strength had left his body.

Some of the neighboring generals wanted to move up to help the poor guy, but when they saw Rugaard's gloomy face and those burning eyes, not a single man had the nerve to step forward.

"Someone come." Rugaard takes in a deep breath before pointing to the drunken mess known as Shrek: "Bring him away and pour some water on this buffoon! Our guest is still here so get this shameful sight out of here! As punishment for his lack of manners in the banquet, he is to wash the outhouse

for a month!”

At his command, several impressive looking soldiers walked up and took the drunken Shrek away.

As for Du Wei, he himself picked up another cup and came in front of another General to make a toast. With a relaxed smile, he said: “General, this second cup is my toast to you..... Hmmm..... You’re not going to make a bet with me again just to have a drink, right?”

This second General is none other than Guhuaduoluo. Upon hearing Du Wei’s somewhat threatening joke, this guy hastily picked up a cup and made a quick toast in return.

Faintly smiling at the result, he was quite pleased by this because he didn’t need to take the initiative anymore. When he finished pouring the third cup and was about to walk towards his next victim, the guy had already raised a cup at him.

“General Rugaard.” Du Wei sat there with a cup in his hand: “Don’t you think it’s a little bland for a dozen big masters to just sit around and drink? Isn’t there some other entertainment up your sleeve?”

# Chapter 240 “Piercing Assassination”

Rugaard smiled: “Of course! How can I neglect a guest’s entertaining?”

With that, he clapped his hand.

At his signal, several soldiers then strode in with a large wooden box and gently laid it down onto the ground. Unlike the usual square shape one would expect, this thing is like a diamond.

Then following suit, a gnome like figure that is likely shorter than Rugaard came out from beneath the banquet stage

Though this person of dark complexion had stubby looking arms and legs, but he did have one hell of a big head. Wearing a hilarious looking robe, his garment looked like it was woven together by using different fabrics. Then there was that long ponytail behind that head, is it touching the ground?

Alright, let’s forget about the garment and hair, but you simply can’t ignore that face. Packing a ginormous nose, the poor guy looked like his eyes and mouth were pushed to the side, thus making him look extremely weird because of it. Probably a tribal native of the Southeastern Sea based on his appearance.

Once he was in front of everyone, this gnome first made a bowing gesture to Rugaard before doing the same to everyone else. After that was done, this person turns out to be a mute from the hand language he was making.

Nodding, Rugaard said: “Begin then.”

Lifting a part of his robe, this gnome pulls out a flute from behind his butt and begins playing.

Short and weird, the sound coming off from the flute should have been eerie to the ears. But the more they listened, the more comfortable it became. Pulse by pulse, their bodies began to involuntarily follow the beat like an impulse reaction.

When Du Wei heard this sound, a strange thought came to mind so he studied the gnome carefully like he was looking for something.

Magic?

Flashing something across his eyes, Du Wei's eyebrow unconsciously wrinkled up. Every note this gnome played was clearly infused with magic, but it was different from the type commonly found on the Roland Continent.

It's like the music itself could arouse the audiences mood to the users liking.

At this moment, the box in the middle silently opened. Following the beat, a silky smooth arm like a young lotus root slowly stretched out from the inside. Almost like it was without joints, this arm began to move according to the music.

The skin complexion on the arm wasn't very white, more like a chocolate black. Nevertheless, the luster coming off from the skin was so brilliant it was like satin.

Subsequently, a foot lifted out of the box. With a slender instep and a tight arch, every toe was a marvel to behold that left the viewer breathless.

As the foot continues to stretch out, the entirety of her long slender leg was finally revealed when it gently touched the ground. Then with one push of her waist, the women inside stood up with her back facing the box.

The moment she came out, everyone inherently gasped for air and some even gulped without realizing it.

Wearing a crimson short dress, the upper part of her gown was both tight and small that left her delicate waist exposed to the crowd.

Just like that on all four with her back facing the ground, this woman began to move that alluring body of hers. Almost like a snake, every wiggle she made was powerful yet not stiff.

Then there's that leg of hers. No matter how difficult her posture was on the ground, she would never lose her balance and even made some sexy postures along the way that would have been deemed impossible for a modern day gymnastic.

As the tempo of the beats began to increase, the woman

suddenly leaped slightly backwards and landed on one foot, all the while

keeping the other balanced in the air behind her. Pressing her palms against her chest, she then began to slowly dip forward. This should have been extremely difficult, yet she made it look so easy in how steady she held herself.

Then to finish everyone off, a part of her full bodied breasts could be seen under that deep ravine behind that short gown of hers. With every panting breath she made, those mounds would jiggle with clarity that left no doubt about how big and firm they are!

Without indication, the woman once again made a backflip and instantly pulled out two golden bells from the diamond shaped box. By the time she stood up again, the woman already had one on her left wrist and right foot.

Her figure truly was stunning, so stunning that it was hard to look away. Not only was her waist flexible, she also came equipped with a pair of explosive breast that could hook onto any man's spirit. In the eyes of all, her figure is bordering on the line of perfection. Now, if only she would remove that gold mask hiding that face of hers.

Soon afterwards, the woman stopped her showing off her body and began to dance according to the gnome's flute play. The crowd originally thought her poses on the ground were a good illustration of how flexible her body was, but they were proven wrong. Every spin, every step, every leap, and every action she did looked like it was from a fantasy. Those elastic and powerful legs, those plump delicate arms, her entire being is a burning flame, a flame that incites a man's coveting desire to control her every particle. Just imagine taking a woman like that into bed, what kind of difficult positions can the pair do when all barriers are broken.....

Many of the generals in the Northwest Army were already hypnotized by this woman. Fixating their lustful eyes on her body, their face looked like they wanted to swallow her whole if they can.

Smiling smugly at the scene, Rugaard turns to Du Wei and asked: "Du Wei, is this woman passable to the eye?"

Du Wei slightly laughed: "General Rugaard, this private collection of yours is truly precious! I'm guessing you got her from the Southeast? I heard that the native girls born from the Southeastern Sea is naturally gifted with flexible

bodies. But now that I've witnessed it myself, I fear even our Roland Empire's 'snake girls' is not comparable!"

Pleased at his own achievement, Rugaard's face was so proud when he talked: "This girl is a slave I picked out from the batch Totoro brought in. Prior to today's performance, I never showed her off so if the Duke likes it, I can gift her to you."

Letting out a small chuckle, Du Wei replied: "I wouldn't dare. Since she is the general's collection, how can I take her?"

Pretending to be displeased, Rugaard follows up quickly: "What! I and your father are former comrades; I'm no different from your uncle. Besides, I never touched this woman after I bought her so she's technically not mine yet. Even if I give her to you, it's not much!"

Just as his words died down, the girl suddenly jumped back a bit. Using that snake like arms of hers, she reached up and wrapped her hands around her bundled hair. Then with a slight tug, that long black hair of hers was untied and began flowing over her shoulder..

At the same time, the flute tune became even more rapid. When the girl heard the change in the tempo, she suddenly stood on one foot and began to spin around! Faster and faster, her body soon became so fast that her fluttering long hair created afterimages that blurred out her body.

Just when the crowd wanted to applaud, Du Wei's face changed: "General, be careful!!" He whispered the word in haste.

The instant he finished the warning, the rotating body of the girl suddenly shot out two silvery objects right at Rugaard's face!

Without premonition, this change caught everyone off guard that none could react in time.

Right before the two silvery objects landed on Rugaard's face, the army head instinctively grabbed for the plate in front of him and used it as a shield.

Pang-pang!!

Following next is the piercing sound of two silvery objects landing into the



table next to Rugaard. Looking closely, it was two silver hairpins!

In one delicate shout, the girl had already stopped her rotating spin and made a jump towards Rugaard with more needles clipped between her fingers!

“Assassin!!!”

Up with a scream, the two general sitting closest to Rugaard had already pounced towards the woman.

Letting out a grunt, Rugaard himself stood up and slammed his hand down against his own table. In one loud bang, the table flew up and shot towards the woman in the air.

Unable to dodge while in mid jump, the woman can only use her silver pins to scratch at the incoming object.....

Screechhhhh

Splitting in half, what came next is the foul odor of corrosion coming off from the two broken pieces of wood that was once used as a table.

What a powerful poison!

Du Wei's eyebrow picked up!

By the time his sight went back to the masked assassin, this once delicate looking woman had been surrounded by more than 10 armed generals.

“KILL ! ! ”

Under that order, the generals pierced their sword into the woman at the same time! Strangely enough, not a single drop of blood came out of that youthful body; instead, a flash of golden light erupted and what should have been a delicate body suddenly turned into sand.....

This sudden change shocked everyone except for Du Wei. Sneering at the cheap trick, his eyes were filled with curiosity.

Meanwhile, Hussein was already in front of Du Wei with his sword drawn.

As for the gnome playing the flute, he was already under the custody of a team of soldiers that had rushed in after the commotion. Screaming a few times like he was trying to say something, this gnome suddenly tilted his head and

blood began to drip out of his mouth.

“General.....” A soldier took one look and was surprised by what he saw: “He ... .. He’s dead.”

Rugaard’s face was dark as all hell, same goes for all the generals present in the room.

All of a sudden, the mood in the room went silent.

Holding their breath, everyone was looking at General Rugaard to await his order.

Giving the gnome another look, Rugaard waved his sleeve and coldly said: “Guhuaduoluo..... I leave this matter in your hands! Where was this woman bought from, by whose hand..... Find out everything!”

Guhuaduoluo hurriedly accepts the order.

Rugaard then glances at Du Wei. Forcing a smile on his face, he said: “Du Wei, I’ve let you seen a show today.”

Du Wei faintly smiled and said, “Don’t mention it General... .. You garrison defends the Northwest, it’s only natural that there are people finding you to be an eyesore. However, general’s ability is high so of course you wouldn’t be afraid of these despicable characters. It’s just.....” Pausing for a second, Du Wei whispers: “Looking at that woman and the flute player, their ability seems different from our Roland Empire’s magic. Maybe..... The Snowy Mountain.....”

Speaking up to this point, Du Wei closes his mouth and looked up to see Rugaard’s reaction.

Sure enough, Rugaard’s face slightly changed for the worse before he hid it away again: “Who cares what they do. I, Rugaard have been roaming the Northwest for 20 long years. Am I supposed to be afraid of them?! Humph! It’s a shame they ruined our mood today.... Someone come! Bring Duke Tulip down for rest and we will host another banquet tomorrow.”

Disbanding on bad terms, Du Wei and Hussein was escorted to a faraway house inside Watt City. Regarding this place, Du Wei was very satisfied because the 200 subordinates he brought along was also stationed in this house. Seems

Rugaard doesn't think he will try anything while at their home base.

Ordering his men to secure the ins and outs of the courtyard, Du Wei then closed the door to his room and began discussing the event with Hussein.

"That assassin really is from the Snowy Mountain?" Hussein watches Du Wei.

"I don't know." Du Wei honestly replied: "I'm not the Lord, how would I know? It's just a speculation of mine. That tune from that gnome seems to be able to make the listener become despondent to their surroundings and weaken their reaction..... And that woman....."

Du Wei suddenly frowned: "Don't you think her body's flexibility and coordination is too great?"

Hussein raised a brow and didn't reply.

Watching Hussein's reaction, Du Wei smiled: "Don't get me wrong, I have no intention of discussing woman with you. Humph, you're a blockhead without any interest in the opposite sex, I'm well aware of that much. What I mean is.... Don't you find it suspicious in how she was able to train her body to flex like that?"

Only then did Hussein understand Du Wei's meaning, "Star Dou Qi!" His face turning white at the thought.

Du Wei nodded and then spoke in a deep voice: "The entry level Star Dou Qi martial set you taught me is similar; both requires the user to perform difficult poses. However, the level that woman showed off today is way above what I can do."

Hussein immediately shakes his head: "Absolutely impossible! In this world, only I'm fluent in using Star Dou Qi! The stuff you know is merely the entry level basics so there's no way others will know about it."

"I didn't say it must be Star Dou Qi. I just think it's a little odd."

Awhile later, someone came in to report that the Northwest Army is making their move. Mobilizing all their forces, the soldiers are searching through every house in the city for the assassin.

Hearing the report, Du Wei had his people go down and smiled at Hussein:

“Seems Rugaard will be busy for quite a while..... I’m also wondering about that woman. How did she turn her body into a pile of sand and disappear? Even if I don’t know what type of magic that is, I would have at least heard rumors of it before. If that’s the case, it’s likely Shamanism from the Prairie.”

After a pause, Du Wei smirked: “To show his loyalty to the capital, Rugaard killed Gold Wolf Head and offended the prairie natives in the process. I’m willing to bet this assassination attempt is a way for the natives to get revenge.”

“There’s always loss when there is gain.” Hussein nods: “If it really is the prairie natives coming to get revenge..... Then maybe.....”

“We must not intervene!” Du Wei sighed: “I also hate Rugaard and hope he dies too..... But you have to understand the problem. As of right now, Rugaard cannot die!”

Hussein is skeptical of this.

Du Wei shakes his head: “Hussein, a lot of things aren’t so simple. For a giant entity like the Northwest Army, there are 200,000 people and a dozen or so generals under Rugaard! It’s not ideal for us that the Northwest Army is united, but at the very least the Northwest region won’t fall into a chaos. Now imagine Rugaard disappearing and the generals below him getting into an internal conflict. At that time, we might not just be having a civil strife on our hand; we might be facing the full force of the native army with their knives pointing at our back.....”

# Chapter 241 “Reversal Of The Situation”

Hussein frowns: “If you say it like that then is there no way to deal with the Northwest Army?”

Du Wei smiles: “No, the Northwest Army must be dealt with, but to completely annihilate 200,000 soldiers is impossible. At the very least.... We must keep Rugaard alive until I can hammer my own nail into this land.....”

With that, he goes over to the window’s edge: “Chaos will certainly ensue! But the important factor at play here is how will I benefit from this, that’s the key question. If possible, three stable years would be optimal in strengthening my control. When that time comes, I would have the ability to clean everything up. But now.... That’s not going to happen!”

Hussein was silent for a while before speaking up, “Let’s put aside the topic then. Earlier at the banquet, how did you snap that Black Gold Tread Bow? I couldn’t figure out what you did! Even for me it would be impossible to do so without utilizing my Dou Qi!”

Du Wei lets out a ha-ha laugh before turning around to pull out Hussein’s sword – a steel enforced blade.

Using his finger to flick at the blade’s edge to see if the recoiling sound is crisp, Du Wei then stroked the blade back and forth for a moment: “Watch carefully.”

With that, he backs up a step and raises the sword into the air. Using the same finger, he flicks at it again.

Hummm!!!!

At that sound, the only part remaining in Du Wei’s possession is the sword handle. As for the rest of the once solid blade, it is now shattered into multiple pieces and scattered across the ground..

Hussein’s face turned white at the scene: “You ... .. When did your martial skills reach such level?”

Du Wei began to laugh: “You’re not able to figure it out? Seems this trick of mine wasn’t a waste of time after all, ha-ha-ha!”

At that, he threw the remaining sword handle away and opens up his palm to reveal a black crystal.

“This is something I only recently came up with. I call it Rust Iron Crystal. Hmm, the name is a bit tacky, but that doesn’t mean its use is limited!” Du Wei smirked: “Of course, I didn’t come up with the original formula. It was passed on to me by that Old Alley back in the capital. Really though, that old man is nuts in the head. Using one of his formulas, I added the substance into a magic crystal along with some special potions to create this thing. The end result is what you see in my hand. Oh, don’t look down on it just because of its appearance..... As long as I’m holding this while rubbing my hand against a metal, I can insert some magic into the crystal and have it slowly drain away the metal elements inside the object!”

Du Wei then explained: “According to Master Alley’s research, for example a rock, contains many different types of earth elements. The more and condense the earth element, the harder the rock will be. And in metals, the same logic applies. The only difference is that the element is not earth, but rather a metallic substance. If we were to remove that substance from the metal, the item in question would decay and become vulnerable to breakage. At that time, one only needs a small amount of force to destroy the object in question!”

He lifts his hand and smiled: “All I did was hide this small little crystal in my palm while I deliberately rubbed the so called Black Gold Tread Bow. Then spouting some pointless words to drag out the time, the bow would of course snap!”

Hussein pops his eye out: “This thing is amazing! If we got this in our hands, no weapon in this world w

ill be a threat you!”

Du Wei sighs and bitterly laughed: “It’s not that amazing. This thing seems magical from the onset but is actually another impractical product. There are two weaknesses. The first being that it takes time..... If I didn’t intentionally drag out the duration of my contact, it would be useless. Think about it. If I

were to do what I did during a fight, do you think my foe would give me the opportunity to carry out my plan? If anything, my opponent would have chopped me into pieces the moment I got close.... In addition, this item inherited the greatest characteristic of Master Alley's inventions, it's absolutely expensive! Ignoring the manufacturing process and the equipment's needed to pull off the procedure; just the material ingredients needed to create this item is astronomical in terms of pricing!!"

Taking the crystal into his hand, Hussein sighs while looking at it with a disappointed expression: "If you say it like that then this thing really is useless. It's not bad if you use it to occasionally scare someone, but it's pointless in the end."

"HA-HA." Du Wei picks up the thing again and smiled: "And, it only works if you insert magic into the crystal. If you can't use magic, then it won't work even if you place it directly onto a metal and rub it till next year."

But after a pause, Du Wei continues to talk: "That's not the point of this thing anyways. When Master Alley gave me the formula, it was clearly indicated in the text that this invention wasn't meant to destroy other weapons..... Instead, the old genius was trying to create the world's toughest metal for his goal of crafting the world's ultimate sword! But no matter what he tried, he simply couldn't find the right material. In the end, that crazy old lunatic came up with what you see here."

Du Wei holds up the crystal: "This thing is designed to draw the 'metallic substance' out of a metal. Just imagine..... If I take this thing and go around draining every weapon I find to further increase the density of this thing, would there be another alloy in this world capable of matching it?"

Hussein really turned white this time!

However, Du Wei quickly destroyed Hussein's hope: "Don't be too quick in jumping the rope..... I'll tell you now; this thing is another failure. Back in the lab, I wanted to see for myself in how hard I can get this crystal to become. Therefore, I had it drain an enormous amount of old armor and weapons back at Anglia City..... Alas, when I used a sword to test its durability, I was greatly disappointed by how easily I was able to chip off a corner. You see, this

invention is impractical and would take who knows how long and how much alloy to finalize.”

When night came around, Du Wei ordered his men to lock the doors but even then he can still hear the clanking footsteps of soldiers running through the streets. It appears the Northwest Army wasn't through with their search yet.

It's to be expected. Having his face slapped in front of Du Wei like this, Rugaard must be fuming with anger.

Continuing their conversation till the middle of the night, Du Wei finally decided to call an end to their discussions by heading back to his room. However, he immediately halted his steps when he entered.....

Though the bedroom is smaller than what he is used to, but considering they are in a fortress city that is meant to house soldiers, it's already luxury class.

But what made Du Wei frown wasn't the size of the room, nor was it the shabby furnishing..... It was.....

The sharp silvery hair pin tightly pinned against his throat: “Is there a need? If you wanted to hide at my place then just hide, this house is so big. If you stayed in one of the many barns here, nobody would have even noticed you for several days .....”

From the darkness next to him, a super alluring figure slowly emerged from the shadows. Unlike the dream like encounter during the day, that explosive rack and curvy body was much more realistic this time around, especially that small tiny waist.....

Oh crap, it's so small and tight!

Using her delicate and weak voice, this woman made a hushing sound: “Don't make any noise.... Come in and shut the door behind you.”

Sighing, Du Wei slowly walked in without showing any fear on his face.

“You ... .. Sit down.” This woman may be covering that face with a mask, but based on the sound of that voice, her age is definitely on the young side.

Finding a chair to sit down, Du Wei completely disregarded the fact that the hair pin was still tightly pinned against his throat.



“Why?” Du Wei whispered, “Assassination is a job of skills. Since the first strike failed, you should have run as far away as possible and not be standing here to amuse me..... Are you that confident in your ability? Or do you not even know who I am?”

“You’re Duke Tulip!” The woman began to pant like she was in pain.

Du Wei frowned: “Are you hurt?”

Tipping slightly to the side, the woman’s body clearly had some problems.

“Do not ask!” The woman slowly pulls back a step and took the seat next to Du Wei. The woman wore very little clothes to begin with and now that she is up close and leaning towards him, our lucky Duke here can get some good glimpses at those tabooed parts.

I know who you are, you are Duke Tulip! Throughout the entire northwest, the only one that can stand up to Rugaard is you!” Her threat sounded serious, but there wasn’t enough intimidation.

“So what?” Du Wei rolls his eye back: “You want me to help you?”

“I want you to take me out of the city!”

Du Wei intentionally smiled: “You kidding?! You only need to move a little and your entire body will turn into sand..... Such an amazing spell, why aren’t you using it?”

“I ... .. My spell cannot be used a lot, Besides ... .. It’s not like what you think!” This hot woman smiled warily: “The one you saw during the day is a fake I created with my spell. I can use my clone for assassination, but I have no way to send my real body out of the city, understand?”

Du Wei chuckled: “So what’s this, a threat?” He looks at her with pity: “Do you think a silly thing like that can threaten me?”

“My silver hair pin is coated with poison.” The woman’s voice turned cold: “You may not die from a simple stab wound, but I guarantee you will not live long after being poisoned by my toxin.”

Du Wei became very happy in his laugh: “Oh, there’s also poison eh?”

He suddenly lowered his head to sniff the hair pin: “Humph, not bad at all.

The aroma of Yeelay Flower masked the pungent smell given off by Dunmay Nuts..... Ah, yes, there is also a hint of Malo Mushroom Powder mixed into the concoction, right? Hmm, looking at it in terms of potency, the toxicity is indeed very strong. What you said is true, I will most definitely die if you prick me with it..... In fact, you can even kill a horse or two if you wanted to.”

This woman seems to be taken by surprise over Du Wei’s speech. Although her face was still covered by the mask, but those eyes gave her away: “You ... .. Can smell it?”

Du Wei proudly laughed as he glanced at the girl: “Humph, how old are you? Your body sure grew well.... But that voice is too tender. Sixteen? Eighteen? Let me tell you. When you were still crawling in your diapers, I was already studying medicinal herbs.”

The woman became angry at his words: “Nonsense ... .. How old are you!”

Du Wei smirked and didn’t reply. Technically he’s not lying because he did start his studies at the tender age of three. To say she was still in her diapers is not an exaggeration.

“Enough of your crap, are you going to agree to my demand or not?!”

Du Wei can feel the silver hairpin pressing in against his throat even further. Nevertheless, he didn’t panic. Curling his lips into a sinister smile, his sight fell upon that explosive chest and sexy waist for a very long time without uttering a single word.

The female assassin was used to being stared at by dirty old men, but the gaze coming off from Du Wei somehow made her feel unusually uncomfortable, almost like her clothes were stripped away. Twisting her body to a more reserved position, she asked in an agitated voice: “You.... What are you looking at?!”

“Let me tell you a few things.” Du Wei sighed as raised his hand into a three finger gesture: “Firstly, I never yield to threats! If you had kneeled before me and begged..... Or got naked to seduce me, I perhaps might have agreed to your demand. After all, among all the women I met, you are by far the sexiest one I came across. My god, what did you eat to grow those breasts, and that waist, damn! Secondly, I can forgive a mistake, but I cannot forgive ‘foolishness’. From

what I can see, you are of the ladder. People always say women are all chest and no brains, this phrase is a perfect fit for you! Those breasts of yours are certainly big enough, but sadly your brain is too stupid! Thirdly..... Do you really think I would be so easily taken hostage by you? If I did, would I still be called Duke Tulip?"

The woman seems to be tongue tied by how angry she was.

Just when she wanted to do something, Du Wei looked up at the ceiling and casually said: "Hey Semel, she is going to kill us soon. Are you really going to sit idly by and watch?"

The second his voice died down, the female assassin suddenly felt her hands going numb. Then without indication, the silver hair pin in her hand flew into the air and impaled itself into the ceiling board.

Slowly patting his sleeves, Du Wei casually stood up and faced the female assassin: "I'm really wondering what your IQ is right now. With your intellect, you dare come out to assassinate....." He shakes his head.

Wanting to rush up due to the insult, the female assassin suddenly found her body retrained by an unknown force.

Standing behind the girl, our red robed Semel stood there with a strange smile on her face: "Is it because you know I'm around that you feel so unthreatened?"

Smiling in return: "Our lives are linked. If I die, you die!"

Semel grunted and disappeared into thin air.

"You ... .. Who are you talking to! Is there someone else here?" Unable to move her body, the female assassin revealed a trace of fear in her voice: In her view, Du Wei looked like he was talking to someone behind her, but when she turned her head around to look back, there was no one!

"Quit struggling." Du Wei smiled: "You've been bound by an intermediate binding spell."

Du Wei then leaned against the chair, his eyes full of enjoyment while looked at the girl before him: "Now then, I have a few questions I like to ask you....

Remember, I don't like lies. I'm a magician so I know if you are telling the truth. If your answers are satisfactory, I may consider letting you go, otherwise....."

From Du Wei's face, a malicious smile emerged: "Every lie you make, I'll strip a piece of clothing from your body!" After he says this, his gaze rampantly ogled up and down over the girl's body: "There's not much to strip anyways!"

## Chapter 242 “I’m Happy!”

“You’re evil.” Semel’s bantering voice came from the back of his mind: “Must you tease the poor girl so? I recall Old Chris gave you the ‘Eye of Enchantment’. Using that, you could have made her divulge everything without any resistance.”

Du Wei’s mouth curled into a smile, his answer was very simple:

“It pleases me!”

“The first question.” Du Wei sat upright, his face stern while looking at the little prisoner before him: “Tell me ... .. What training did you do to get such a great body?”

“.....? ? ? ? ?” The female assassin was probably in shock because she never thought the first question proposed by this noble would be such a silly one.

Du Wei saw how stupefied the other side was so he continued: “My patience is not so good. If you don’t answer, I can immediately start my task of stripping your clothes away.”

“..... I practice a special type of Taijutsu.” Finally, the female assassin caved in. Listening to her voice, it was obvious she was gritting her teeth when speaking.

Once she was done, she stared nervously at Du Wei. Although her mask covered the majority of her face, the fear and worry in her eyes cannot be hidden.

But ... ..

Du Wei deliberately made a sighing sound: “I’m sorry ... .. The answer is too general, I’m not satisfied with it.”

Under the exclaiming cry of the female assassin, Du Wei casually flicked his fingers to remove the binding on the girl. However, before the female assassin can get her thoughts together after realizing her body was free again, a sharp ripping sound came from the location where her top skimpy garment should have been.

Zzzzitttttt

Next thing she knew, her upper garment was in shreds and her naked breasts were open for all to see!

Du Wei watched on with great interest as the female assassin squealed in great surprise. He really had to hand it to her. Seeing those breasts without any cover was a sight to behold: big and round, yet firm and bouncy, truly the definition of an eye candy.

Hmmm ... It's actually the incredibly rare "Bamboo Shoot" type.....

Du Wei's laugh became even more devious while the female assassin struggled to cover up her breasts with her arms.

"You!!! Despicable!!!" The female assassin wanted to shout aloud but was interrupted by Du Wei's threat: "Go ahead and scream. Come on. When my men outside hear the commotion, they will rush in all at once. Let me remind you, all my subordinates are men. If you don't mind flashing your body to two hundred men in their prime, then by all means, go ahead and scream!"

Sure enough, this intimidation was more effective than anything else. Upon hearing his words, the female assassin quickly closed her mouth and crammed herself into a corner of the room, all the while trying to keep her breasts covered from Du Wei's lecherous eyes.

But unfortunately... Her "natural capital" is just too good. By contrast, her slender arms are too small.

Enduring his urge to laugh, Du Wei sat in his chair and whole heartily watched on as the girl gave him a good show.

"Well then, why don't we continue with the questioning? I believe with that lesson you will know how to properly answer me." Du Wei coughed once to clear his throat: "Same question as before, where did you train your body?"

"... Snowy! Snowy Mountain!!" Female assassin pressed down her voice and howled at Du Wei.

"Why d

o you want to assassinate Rugaard?"

“Because Rugaard killed Gold Wolf Head and betrayed the agreement between him and the people of the grassland.”

“What is Snowy Mountain and who is your leader?”

“Snowy Mountain is the Holy Land of the Shamans ... .. Our leader is the great Shaman King.”

The female assassin has been completely defeated.

“The last question.” Du Wei smiled: “Your name.”

“Eir... .. Eir Aoi, my name is Eir Aoi.” Female Assassin’s voice was full of weakness.

(To make it easier to read, I will just call her Aoi.)

Du Wei laughs a little and suddenly stood up, his eyes beaming a strange light. Then gently lifting one of his fingers, he swayed it back and forth at the female assassin.

Zzzitttttt

Under that ripping sound, the last cover to hide the female assassin’s most important part was forcibly removed from her body.

Following a loud scream, the female assassin’s voice already sounded like she was crying. Then in desperation, she used one arm to cover her breasts and the other to cover her lower part: “I ... .. I already answered your question, why did you ... ..” Her face full of humiliation as she asked this.

“Because I want to see!”

Du Wei showed an absolutely ‘for real’ face and gave a very scoundrel like reply.

The answer nearly caused this girl called Aoi to faint.

“You see ... .. Isn’t this much better?” Du Wei’s mouth curled into a broad smile: “Someone once told me a woman usually tells the truth when they are naked. And ... .. Your body is not only very tempting; you also seem to know how to show off your charms in the best light. During today’s banquet, you clearly used your body to seduce the audience; in that case, I will look as I

please.”

Aoi no longer called out; instead, she gave Du Wei a hateful stare: “You..... Are you done looking yet!”

“No.” Du Wei made no attempt at hiding his scoundrel like thoughts.

Meanwhile, Aoi wanted to puke blood as she struggled to keep herself from fainting.

In a shameless smile, Du Wei continues to press on: “Your body is in great shape, the best I’ve ever seen. As I recall, whenever a man comes across such a fine body, they usually want to do something else besides just looking.....”

With that, Du Wei stood up.

Female assassin really is frightened now: “Don’t you come here ... .. I-I will kill myself!” Though she says this, but the hiccups in her voice wasn’t very convincing.

The truth is Du Wei really wasn’t afraid of the girl committing suicide.

Just when he wanted to say something else to mess with this female assassin, a discontent voice came from the back of his mind: “Enough, this much is enough. Are you really going to use such means to deal with the girl?”

Du Wei did not reply, his sight landing on Aoi’s slender leg.

Although the room’s light wasn’t very bright, but under this degree of light, Aoi’s long legs was even more alluring as she tries to curl herself into a body. Her action may not had been intentional, but moving her legs like that is a perfect way to entice a man’s desire to conquer!

Suddenly, Du Wei spoke again, his gaze focused entirely on the female assassin: “You must think my methods are very despicable, right?”

“You ... ..” Female assassin hatefully replied: “You’re a contemptible scoundrel!”

“Oh, so I’m a contemptible scoundrel for using a ‘woman’s’ asset against you.” Du Wei stretches out his voice and pretends to sneer in contempt.

Pointing his finger directly at the female assassin’s face: “You, did you not use



your womanly charms to carry out your assassination attempt?"

Aoi was at a loss for words.

Du Wei really was sneering this time: "So it's fine for you to use your womanly trait to kill others, while I'm a despicable scoundrel for doing the same? Let me tell you, its woman like you that I hate the most! Hypocrite, a total hypocrite!! You listen and listen carefully..... If you use your assets as a bargaining chip, then you better be prepared for others to do the same to you because the choice is yours! Don't shamelessly scold someone for your own decision, understand?!"

After saying that, Du Wei points to the window behind the female assassin: "You can pull down the curtain from the window and cover your body. Don't worry; I'm not interested in you."

Despite his goodwill, the female assassin suddenly rolled hers eyes and passed out on the ground.

Du Wei was stupefied for a second: "Semel, you see? She at least has a sense of shame for passing out like that after my scolding."

From the back of his mind, Semel seems to sigh at his comment: "Your thought pattern is really hard to understand."

The event of an assassin appearing in his room caused those down below to become tense for a good while. But instead of making a big ruckus out of the whole ordeal, Du Wei ordered the event to be hushed up and to have the girl stashed away into a crate.

"Don't give her food or water. Two or three days of hunger won't kill her." Du Wei doesn't seem to have a sense of kindness to the opposite sex: "Just keep an air hole open to not suffocate her."

The enemy is the enemy. Regardless of the gender, they are all the same.

"Snowy Mountain... .. Interesting." Du Wei sighed.

The room only had him and Hussein inside: "What's your take on the matter?" He asks the Saint Knight.

Hussein thought for a moment: "I don't know. We have close to no

information on this so called Snowy Mountain.”

“Wait till we go back, this female assassin will give us some information.” Du Wei sighs again at the troublesome situation: “But then again, I’m beginning to feel lucky that Alpha didn’t take the native general’s head. Letting the Northwest Army take credit for Gold Wolf Head ended up saving us some trouble.”

When the next day came around, Du Wei got up very late. By the time he did wake up in the afternoon though, he was quickly informed by someone that there was a messenger waiting for him outside. The messenger was already here by the morning, but because Du Wei was still asleep, the messenger didn’t dare wake Du Wei up and could only wait in the living room.

As usual, the person to come is none other than the fatty Totoro.

Totoro no longer looked as well as he was a few days ago. For an assassin to appear during the banquet, the pressure hanging over his back is more than what this fatty desire.

Although his peers wouldn’t believe Totoro is a traitor that colluded with some outsiders to kill the Army Head, but..... This charge of “failure” is enough to make the fatty suffer for a good while.

“Duke!” Seeing Du Wei walk into the living room, Totoro promptly stood up to receive the Duke: “General Rugaard sent me here today to invite your Dukeship to go on a hunting trip.”

“Oh?” Du Wei was slightly stunned: “Since its General Rugaard’s invitation, then don’t mind if I do. General Totoro, please wait a minute while I change my outfit.”

Pausing, Du Wei suddenly dropped his voice and asked: “One last thing ... Just wondering if the female assassin is caught yet. When I was sleeping last night, I could hear the clamping of soldiers running through the streets the entire night.”

Totoro’s face immediately turned ugly for a few seconds. Pausing in his words, he shakes his head: “This ... Not yet. Duke, this event outraged General Rugaard and because of that, the soldiers in charge of security were harshly whipped for their incompetence. Also, there are the people involved

with the assassin and the slave girl themselves. Aigh, such a shame, those beautiful girls that I bought.....”

Du Wei blew a whistle: “Seems General Rugaard is not the type to be gentle to the opposite sex. Ruining a good flower is a true crime. I must advise the general today when I see him.”

Only then did Totoro show a smile: “Duke, the general’s mood is not very good. The people around him can’t speak up so only you can persuade the general. After all, you are an important guest; the Army Head must give you some face.”

Du Wei suddenly moved away from the subject: “For today’s hunt, the brave generals from last night’s party will be present right?”

Totoro smiled: “General Shrek offended you yesterday so he likely won’t be able to participate today. Since he’s being punished by washing the outhouse for a month, I can assume he’s there right now.”

Du Wei pretended to let out a sigh: “Such a shame... .. General Shrek’s archery is truly superb, I didn’t want to offend him yesterday, but a bet is a bet, there must be a winner. Really, General Rugaard is just.....”

Looking at Du Wei’s face, Totoro thought: It’s all because of you! Yet now you are making yourself out to be a good guy.

The fatty may not think kindly of Du Wei, but Totoro is not brave enough to show it openly: “Duke mustn’t think like that. The Army Head is a man of right and wrong, everyone following him respects him for being unbiased.”

Exchanging a few more words, Du Wei then headed back inside to change his clothes. Together with Hussein by his side, the trio made their way out of the city and into a forest not too far from Watt City. To be able to find so much green in this barren landscape is a rarity in itself.

In the army there aren’t many activities to relax in; therefore, one of the most popular ways for a soldier to relieve their stress is by hunting.

The hunt had long begun this morning. Under Rugaard’s order, the one thousand soldiers he brought with him were currently making their round of driving the animals out of their hiding place.

By the time Du Wei reached the base camp set inside the forest, Rugaard was already ready to go in anticipation of Du Wei.

Surprisingly, this midget was abnormally tough looking on horseback. Strapping a long bow to his back, he had his black stallion carry his spear and sword on each side to make it easier for him to reach.

“Du Wei, was your rest last night well?” Rugaard calls out from afar in a loud booming voice.

Sitting on his horse, Du Wei faintly smiled and nodded: “Not bad... .. There was just the late night sound of horse and men running through the streets.”

Rugaard’s face slight twitched but was promptly covered up with a smile. Turning to the people behind him, this midget orders: “Last I had you go catch the assassin, not disturb our guest! Today forward, any soldiers passing through the Duke’s residence are to make a detour.”

The people in the back immediately followed with a nod.

Exchanging a few polite words, Rugaard then points to a young man behind him, “Come Du Wei, let me introduce to you my son! His age is similar to you so the two of you must talk some more.”

## Chapter 243 “Hunting”

Du Wei immediately noticed the young knight standing behind Rugaard. He's the same person with the metal mask from yesterday.

Still as valiant as ever, the only part that was off is how chilly that elegant smile was.

“No need for introductions.” Du Wei smiled: “The young general and I already met yesterday. Sir Cybuster, I didn't expect you to return so quickly after leaving the city in such a rush.”

Young Cybuster smiled and said, “My men were getting lazy so I wanted to bring them out for a little exercise. Enough about me, I heard from some of my men that you made quite a show in last night's banquet. To think the Duke is not only a master magician, you are also an expert marksman. I fear all the glory in today's hunt will be monopolized by the Duke.”

Rugaard smiles and waved his hand: “Bring out the prey!”

At his command, a large cart with a gigantic cage began to roll out from one of the tents.

At first sight, Du Wei almost couldn't believe his eyes when the soldiers removed the blanketing veil.....

The truth is while the cage was being carted out of the tent; Du Wei could already hear the wailing cry behind that blanket. Now that he got a closer look, his speculation was confirmed!

What prey? Inside that gigantic cage are clearly a dozen or so young girls!

Judging by their skin complexion, these girls can only be the slave girls brought in by Totoro from the Southeastern Sea. Aoi may have managed to escape by herself, but her foolish actions have consequently harmed these poor girls in her place.

Once the cage was opened, these girls were eventually driven out to kneel before Du Wei and Rugaard.

Du Wei really wanted to sigh at the scene.

Not only were their pitiful cries painful to the ear, he can clearly see the bruises and whip lashes on their naked body. What should have been delicate fine skins is now ruined because of someone else's fault.

Looking over their ages, the oldest is at most 18 and the youngest is so small that he didn't know where to begin. No matter which face he scanned over, it was always filled with fear and terror at what is to come. There's no doubt about it, their eyes had the look of impending doom.

"General Rugaard... .. This is....." Du Wei tries to ask a question.

"Hmm?" Rguaard raises a brow at his word: "The assassin from yesterday is part of this group. Since I don't have the energy to interrogate them one by one, I thought, why not just kill them all? Better all than to miss one....."

At this point, Rugaard's eye revealed a hint of killing intent.

Without showing any changes in his expression, Du Wei can only close his mouth.

He may not be showing it on the outside, but his insides were churning at Rugaard's brutality.

Just when his mind began to waiver over whether if he should do something to stop all this, his sight inherently fell upon Rugaard's firm gaze. In the end, Du Wei decided to let it be, he's simply not the type to do something he knew is pointless.

"Listen up!" One of the cavalry officers raised his blade into the air, his voice thunderously loud: "General's command, you girls should have been executed without exception for being accomplices to the assassin! However, the general is merciful and is giving you a chance to live!"

The officer then rides over to one of the camp fire to light up a torch. Using only one hand, the officer then stabs the torch into the ground and began to talk again: "Starting as of this moment, you girls can flee into the for

est. If you can somehow make it out of the woods without being caught after the torch burns out, you are free to live!" The officer then reveals a grin: "Now

then, RUN. RUN FOR YOUR LIFE!”

With that, he gives an eye signal to the other solders to cut off the shackles binding these naked girls.

Likely too scared to face reality, all of these girls had a stunned look on their faces. For some that still believed they might get lucky by pleading, these foolish ones ended up with bloodied foreheads from how much bowing they were doing.

Du Wei couldn't stand it anymore. He's not heartless like Rugaard. Biting his lips, he pulls out his sword and rode up to one of the pleading girls: “QUIT CRYING! Your cry is annoying as hell! If you want to live then hurry up and flee!!” He then points the tip of his sword up to the girl's face.

Seeing the chilling weapon in front of her, the girl reacted like she was just woken up from a dream. Looking up at Du Wei's eye, something in her mind finally clicked like a realization finally donned on her. Faltering a few times in her struggle to stand, this panicking girl began to make her way into the forest with all her might.

If there's a first, there's a second..... Very soon, all the girls began to make their way into the forest after understanding their fate if they don't. If they want to live, they must fight for it, and the only way right now is to make it out of the forest. Many of their tender feet's were harmed in the process due to the sharp rocks on the ground, but a little cut means nothing in the face of imminent death.

Watching the dozen or so girls fleeing for their lives, Du Wei could only sigh: This is about all I can do for you girls. Forgive me.....

Letting out a ha-ha laugh on his horse, Rugaard raises his hand above his brow to overlook the forest: “Very well! Brothers, let's begin the hunt!”

With that, the old weasel glances over at Du Wei: “Du Wei, I'm sure you've hunted before in the capital, but..... Hunting an animal cannot be as fun as hunting a person!”

At this point, Rugaard pulls out his bow like he was itching to go at it.

Seeing the last remaining girl still idling on the ground, Du Wei can already

guess what the old bastard intends to do. Raising an arm to block Rugaard's aim: "General, a moment please."

Looking up at Du Wei, Rugaard frowned: "what's the matter?"

Du Wei casually smiled: "Since this is a hunt, it will only be interesting if there's difficulty ... Why don't we wait a while longer to let them gain some more distance. The further they run, the more fun it will be."

A cold voice drifts over from his side: "Who would have thought the Duke is so kind to the opposite sex."

Without explanation, the young Cybuster rode up to the front and suddenly drew his own bow. Since the distance between him and Du Wei was too far apart, Du Wei couldn't make it in time to stop the arrow.

Swooosh

A spiked arrow shot through the sky and into the depths of the forest.....

From afar, a miserable cry of a woman's pain drifted into everyone's ear.

Cybuster lowers his bow, his eyes clearly full of contempt: "Its' definitely more fun if they run further away..... However Duke, shooting one down to scare the others will encourage the rest to run harder." His mocking smile was so obvious even a blind person can see it.

Confronting the person behind that mask, Du Wei can somehow sense a killing intent shooting his way. Did he offend this young general, why is he so aggressive towards him? Du Wei rummaged through his memory but nothing came up.

From behind Du Wei, Hussein suddenly made a cold grunt. Slowly, our Saint Knight rode up to Du Wei's side to stare down at this Cybuster. From the eyes to the chest, Hussein's gaze eventually stopped at the young knight's sword that was strapped to the waist: "Eh? That sword looks very similar to the legendary sword 'Beauty under the Moonlight'."

Hussein was clearly the fiercer beast in this meeting.

Unlike Hussein that didn't feel threatened in the least, Cybuster felt like his chest was being pounded by an unknown force. From his usual arrogant and



proud look, Cybuster for the first time revealed shock and surprise in his eyes as he looked over the mysterious person before him.

# Chapter 244 “The Grand Wizard that doesn’t wear a white robe”

Above the head of this creaking forest lies the cloudless blue sky. Birds chip, trees grow. For ages past, the trees of old had remained undisturbed by the violence of man. Yet on this day, a horrific scene is unfolding behind the lush canopy of this ancient forest.

Panting from her struggle to run, a charming young girl deprived of any clothes was trying to make her way through the dense forest. Unlike how a beautiful maiden should appear, the only emotions running through that fine face is nothing but horror and fear.

The moment those delicate ears picked up the sound of her approaching pursuers, the girl suddenly lets out a loud painful cry when she accidentally tripped over a rock on the ground, thus spraining her ankle in the process.

At the same time, the faint sound of trotting horses was already at her neck. Showing their villainous grin, two hunters on horseback suddenly threw out their ropes and lassoed the poor girl’s hand. With a single tug from both sides, she was thrown into the air like she was nothing but prey. Flinging her feet in an attempt to struggle, there was simply nothing this girl can do to escape from her fate at this point.

Following soon behind, a hideous and cruel laugh utterly destroyed the tranquil scenery, “Good, very good.”

With that, a huge bulky man in hunting clothes came charging in with his lance. Aiming true to his target that was tied in the air, the spear skillfully lunged through the girl’s shoulder with undeniable force. Then from the hunter’s mouth, a grotesque laugh radiated into the surrounding.

Truly saddening. Raised above everyone’s head like she was nothing but livestock, the hunter then flung the poor wailing girl from his spear against the cold hard ground. Under a loud snapping thud, what was once a living being is nothing but a lifeless corpse as she laid there unmoving for all eternity.

By the time Du Wei and Hussein caught up to the rest of their hunting party, the pair just so happens to witness this scene. No matter how much Hussein deviated from the temples teaching, he was still once a Holy Knight, known for their righteous courage and valiant heart. To be forced to witness such tragedy, our Saint Knight would of course be displeased. Fuming with anger, Hussein's remaining blue eye was shouting 'murder' at the blocky big man.

Knowing this, Du Wei promptly reached out to stop Hussein.

"Why." Hussein coldly muttered this to Du Wei that was silently shaking at him.

"You can't save them, nor can I." In a hushed tone: "These girls are dead either way, if not today, then tomorrow in the prison."

The second his words finished, a light chuckle came from behind: "The Duke is too fast."

Finally catching up, Cybuster had both his hands firmly gripped onto the horse rein: "What is this? The Duke still empty handed?"

Du Wei raises his brow and said, "I'm a guest; I wouldn't want to steal the hosts limelight."

"Your lordship doesn't need to be so formal." Cybuster suddenly tilts his ear to listen: "There's movement up ahead, let's have a look!"

With that, he kicks the horse's belly and stormed out. Doing the same, Du Wei followed from behind as he watched Cybuster's back.

Since this part of the forest is so deep into the woods, adding in the fact that it's the summer season, the bushels are exceptionally thick here. Scanning the environment, Cybuster suddenly jumps off his horse and smiled at the foot trail left in the dirt: "Humph, these two prey isn't bad. Smarter, at least they know how to hid

e."

At his word, Cybuster flew back into his horse and whistled for the others to gather at his location.

"Scour the grass and bushes. We will force them out of their hiding spot."

Accepting their order, the hunters began carrying out their command by cutting at the greenery. Continuing to ride forward like this, it didn't take long for the hunting party to achieve their desired goal.

Letting out a painful cry, a girl came running out with a bloody shoulder.

Sitting on his saddle with a simpering smile, Cybuster slowly drew his bow as he watched the stumbling woman trying to break away. Just when his arrow flew out, Hussein suddenly pulls out his sword and shot a blade of light in the same way.

In a clear crisp snapping sound, the arrow that was flying through the air was cut in half.

Then without a word, Hussein rode out and snatched up the girl from the ground. Ignoring her struggle and fearful cries, Hussein gently knocked the poor little prey out with his hand.

Despite having his arrow shot down, Cybuster showed no sign of anger and simply gave a deep observing glance at Hussein: "Duke, you have quite the follower there."

Du Wei chuckles: "Young general, your archery is not bad either."

As Du Wei and Cybuster's sight met, sparks seem to fly between their eyes like they were about to go at it.

After a couple of seconds in this awkward stance, Cybuster lets out a loud laugh and rides away.

Quietly watching the hateful guy leave, Du Wei tightens his forehead to whisper at Hussein: "You ... .."

"I can't stand it." Hussein softly utters his word: "I will save as many as I can. A knight's sword is not a weapon to slaughter the innocent."

Du Wei was speechless because he knew he couldn't stop Hussein. If this Saint Knight was dead set on doing something, there's no way he can stop him.

Unlike Du Wei and Hussein that was lagging behind, Rugaard and his generals had long spread into multiple groups to search for their prey. What was once a serene and peaceful forest is now littered with the hollering voice of hunters

and the faint screams of fleeing prey.

As the situation continues to worsen, Du Wei's expression also got darker with each passing minute. He won't claim to be a good person, but such a brutality is more than what he can cope with. Just when he was about to lose it and speak up, his eyes lit up!

Further ahead in the direction where the young general ran off to, a powerful magic disturbance was swinging in the air. Based on the unrestrained dark atmosphere, it's clear.... A wizard was in the middle of an incantation!

It was then several mournful cries drifted over to the pair's ear. Giving Hussein a look, Du Wei hurriedly said: "Let's go take a look!"

By the time Du Wei and Hussein rushed over, what awaited the two is a strangely uncanny scene!

Clouded in a big black fog, this area of the wood looked like a veil of darkness had taken hold and wouldn't let go. With only a glance, Du Wei was already frowning because he knew what this disturbing substance was: A Dark Mage's energy!!

Dark energy wouldn't have alarmed the two to such extent, but in the middle of the lumbering mass of darkness, one of the naked girls was being restrained in the air by the strange fog. Stretched into an X shape, her lovely body parts were openly displayed before everyone's eye. And based on how the girl's hair was slouching in front of her face, it's likely she had already fainted.

Standing nearby, a black figure was currently busy chanting a spell with his black crystal ball atop of a tree branch. Sporting a black mage robe and a pointed tip hat, this person's face was so pale that it was ghastly to look at.

Following the mage's spell, tentacle like appendages began to take form from the black smog. Then going in from the girl's nose, mouth and ears, wisps of transparent white stuff was being spirited out of the girl's body.

Du Wei immediately recognized what the Dark Mage was doing; he's drawing out the living soul of the teenage girl!!

Not far away from the whole event, Cybuster was coldly watching this unfold atop of his own mount. Although this young general was aware of Du Wei's

arrival, he didn't say a word, just a glance as a greeting.

Right at this moment, the naked girl wrapped in the black fog suddenly muffled out a painful cry. Then at a speed discernable to the naked eye, the youthful body of this girl began to wither away like its very life was being sucked out!

Both angry and shocked at the scene, Du Wei finally snapped: "YOU'VE GOT SOME NERVE! DON'T YOU KNOW USING THE LIVING FOR DARK MAGIC IS IN VIOLATION OF THE FIRST COMMANDMENT!!?"

With that said, Du Wei immediately chanted a spell to unleash two bellowing balls of light from his own hand. Upon contact, the black fog instantly dispersed as a direct result of his actions.

"As fellow magicians, don't you know it's rude to interrupt someone's spell? Your actions are equivalent to a duel request!" The eerie voice came from the Dark Mage.

At a wave of his black sleeve, the girl's dried up body instantly turned to ash and was sucked into the Dark Mage's black crystal ball.

Du Wei knew the poor girl had already been drained of life before his arrival..... But what pushed him over the line was the fact that this Dark Mage not only took her life, he intends to do something as appalling as turning her into an undead creature!

Retracting all his dark energy, the Dark mage floated down from the branch and landed not far from Du Wei's location. In a tone filled with pride: "Humph, you are also a magician? Why did you interrupt my spell cast?!"

Du Wei laughs in a ha-ha manner: "Killing the living to create undead creatures, are you not afraid of the magic enforcement team? Or did you completely forget the first commandment?"

At the mention of the magician enforcement team, even this Dark Mage trembled out of reflex. However, that only lasted for a second before he snapped back: "Nonsense, I certainly know of the first commandment! I'm a recognized Dark Mage of the Magic Union, not some Death Mage! As to draining this woman's life.... Humph, her life belongs to General Rugaard. Since

they had already been sentenced to death, it doesn't count as me breaking the first commandment if the general gifts them to me!"

Cybuster suddenly cuts in with a light laugh: "Both of you mustn't misinterpret the situation. Let me do the introductions." He points to Du Wei: "This here is the famed Duke Tulip, Du Wei Rudolph, known as the last disciple of the great master Gandalf. During the coup in the capital, he played a major role in overturning the rebels. Also, when he first came to the Northwest, he miraculously raised an entire city in merely three months!"

At the end of the introduction, this Dark Mage suddenly showed quite the curious eye: "You're that Duke Tulip? From rumors, you are the continent's strongest magic pharmacist..... Hmff, magic pharmacist, what a joke....."

Du Wei did not get mad, all he did was look at Cybuster with a threatening gaze: "This person is?"

"This here is the Northwest Army's chief magic consultant, eighth level grand magician Master Tartaglia..... He is also known as the only grand magician that doesn't wear a white magician robe. As to the reason, I'm sure you can tell by now, he's a Dark mage!"

# Chapter 245 “Bet!”

Northwest Army’s chief magic consultant?

This title wasn’t all that unexpected. In spite of the fact that certain wizards will sometime offer their services to the army, many of these cases will depend entirely on the mood of that individual. If “Uncle” here is in the mood and liked you, sure, lending a helping hand when the situation requires isn’t a problem. However, if the magician in question weren’t up for it, these lords and masters of their own freedom might just turn around and stand idly by while you get slaughtered. Situations like that isn’t all that uncommon, hence the reason for the weird title. Magic consultant, a title that is neither subservient nor superior to the employer, perfect for a wizard that likes to be free of all restraints.

Regarding the fact that the Northwest Army is employing their own wizard, Du Wei was hardly surprised.

Think about it, the Northwest Army was able to stand up to the central high command for over twenty years; do you think numbers are all they have in store? Bringing a few mages to the table is only normal.

But what did surprise Du Wei is the fact that General Rugaard brought in a Dark mage and a eighth rank at that. Have this midget gone mad?

In order to cultivate dark magic, the user must amass an astronomical amount of souls, and they cannot be taken from the living! So where did this person get so much soul? The answer is obvious, from the living! This person is definitely a Death Mage, Du Wei is certain of this.

Continuing his surveying peek at this dark magician, Du Wei found that his foe was doing the same to him. Towards the confrontation between the two mighty wizards, all of the surrounding onlookers were very conscious in taking a step back for their own safety.

“Duke Tulip.” Dark Mage Tartaglia chuckles, his laughter filled with a strange type of weirdness like he would stop breathing at any moment: “I’ve long heard of your name ... .. But since you interrupted my spell just now, I take it you are



trying to propose a duel?”

Du Wei faintly laughed. Looking over at Cybuster, this young general seems to have no intention of being a peace maker. On the contrary, Du Wei can see the bastard gloating at him. Though Du Wei’s heart sank at the sight, he had no intention of showing it. Forcing a cold smile, he turns to face the Dark Mage: “If sir is willing to enlighten me, how can I refuse your goodwill?”

Gently stepping on his stirrup, Du Wei’s body began to rise from the saddle to stand parallel to the Dark Mage.

“Dark Mages, all they do is summoning undead creatures to their side. Humph!!”

Du Wei still hasn’t forgotten the last encounter. Even when his foe summoned a bone dragon, add in some deaths knights and skeleton soldiers, he still managed to wipe them clean!

And now ... ..

Look around dammit. As far as the eye can see, there are only trees, endless amount of trees!

Fine then old man, come get some! Let’s see who got more cannon fodders to use!

If he wasn’t afraid of a death mage back when his power are weak, why the hell should he back off when he’s about to break into the sixth rank?!

But he should still be wary of the situation. It’s not hard to figure out this encounter is a set up by the Northwest Army, but what’s worth pondering is why now?

Can it be... .. Du Wei’s heart jumped.

Can it be Rugaard intends to kill him?

Think about this, the confusing situation today is finally making sense!!

Yes, this is most likely the case.

Rugaard don’t want to rebel yet, at least that’s what Du Wei believes. If that&rs

quo; the case, Rugaard must be plotting to borrow Tartaglia's hand to kill him.

Rugaard can't personally kill him. That would create too much trouble. So the solution is to have a magician do it, a magician killing a magician, what a perfect plan. Even if word get out that Du Wei died while in his care, no one will do anything. In name Tartaglia is working for Rugaard, but no one is crazy enough to punish a grand wizard! The Northwest Army will just say: "Hey, he's a magician; we can't control what they do!"

Besides ... .. Even if he's wrong about Rugaard wanting to kill him, this move of sending out a Dark Mage implies they want to test him.

Though Du Wei did not bring his wizard robe today, but he's nevertheless ready to go at any moment because what he did bring is his storage ring. With only a thought, he can summon his wand and the "Life Horn" to awaken the trees.

Fixing his sight on the Dark mage's hand, that black crystal ball gave him the creeps from the black swirling mass inside.....

It was in this moment, Cybuster that was nearby finally spoke up. Kicking his horse leisurely, this young general deliberately cuts in between the two: "A moment please you two! Both of you are distinguished guests. If you two were to fight here, it will make things very difficult for me as a host.....So then, why not give me some face?"

When Du Wei heard this, he nearly broke out into laughter.

This young general is absolutely treacherous. Those words may sound pleasant on the surface, but it also made it clear that their fight have nothing to do with them. If you two "guests" want to fight, then it's not the "hosts" fault.

Towards Cybuster's intention of watching a pair of tigers fight while he sits atop of a cliff, Du Wei couldn't stop the rage from boiling forward. Just then Du Wei recalled Cybuster's martial art is similar to Rodriguez's. From this, a wacky and wild idea sprouted in his mind!

Humph! Act eh? Let's see how you will act after I do this!

Not waiting to have a second thought, he suddenly chuckles at his own

ingenuity. Stretching out from under his sleeve, his right hand currently holds a long sword veiled in a layer of ice crystal.

Not far away, Dark Mage Tartaglia just then thought Du Wei was going to pull out his wand, but instead, Du Wei pulls out a sword. With a somber face, Tartaglia sneered: “Master Du Wei, why have you brought a sword to a wizard’s duel. Do you hold no honor for your status?”

Du Wei rolled his eyes: “What, can’t I be fluent in both magic and martial art?”

At the same time, he hastily looks over to Cybuster.

Sure enough!

Cybuster originally had looks of disapproval when Du Wei revealed his sword, but when his eyes got a closer look, there was only shock in those pupils.

What was a smirking mouth promptly tightened. In its stead, there was only the gritting sound of teeth grinding against each other!

Long and thin, the sword in Du Wei’s hand was wrapped in a layer of transparent ice! Even under the dim beams of light coming through the forest leaves, the lustering glow cannot be covered up.....

Beauty under the Moonlight!

Rodriguez’s Beauty under the Moonlight!

It only took a second for Cybuster to pop his eyes. Momentarily stunned by what he was seeing, Cybuster’s hand looked like it was quivering with excitement while he held the horse rein.

“Both of you.” Cybuster rides forward a few steps, his voice suddenly turning loud: “Both of you are important guests so please keep calm. Regardless of who gets hurt today, it will be a huge loss to the empire! Father and his fellow generals are also inside the forest. If both of you must compete, why don’t we change the method? This way it won’t hurt either sides feeling.” Cybuster was clearly making a subtle shaking gesture with his head towards Tartaglia.

When he finished, this young general instead looked like he was afraid of Du Wei jumping the gun and starting the fight. Turning to the horseman behind

him, Cybuster yells: “Blow the horn!”

After the horseman blows the signal, voices from all direction began making their way over.

Under the cover of several generals, Rugaard came up to Du Wei. Then looking at the Dark Mage not far across from them, the midget’s face seems to turn dark for a second before he broke out into laughter: “Oh, so both Master Du Wei and Master Tartaglia is here. I’m assuming you two already met so I won’t bother with the introductions.”

He then looks over to his son. From the complex gaze shooting back at him, Rugaard knew the circumstances have changed. Then turning his sight to Du Wei’s hand, Rugaards eye fell on the “Beauty under the Moonlight”.

From within the midget’s eye, a suddenly spark of light erupted. Like a starving ghost seeing food for the first time, like a molester seeing a beauty, those eyes wanted to devour everything within its sight!

This only happened in a blink of an eye, but Du Wei’s keen senses were able to capture it.

Hmm ... .. Does Rugaard recognize this sword?

“Father.” Cybuster clears his throat: “The Duke and Master Tartaglia seems to have a little misunderstanding and wants to compete.

Rugaard pops his mouth like he was shocked by the idea. Nevertheless, he responded very quickly: “Is there a need? Both of you are my important guest. If either one of you were to get hurt, it will be a great shame on my end. Consider it.....”

Cybuster deeply breathes in and cuts off Rugaard: “Father, it’s a rare chance to witness two powerful wizards showcasing their magic. I’m certain the others present would be happy to see a confrontation between two powerful masters..... Since both want to compete, why must we go against their will?”

Since Cybuster is making it so blunt, how can Rugaard not get the hint? Changing from his unwilling attitude, this midget immediately became cooperative: “It’s not a bad idea, but a duel between magicians will inevitably cause.....”

“Then I have a good method to not hurt both sides.” Cybuster speeds up his words: “There’s probably still four to five prey left from today’s hunt. Why don’t we use this as a bet? Both will head out in their separate ways and within a certain time frame, whoever catches the most prey will be considered the winner. How is that?”

This proposal is quite clever that left both sides unable to object.

Du Wei thought: What’s going on with this Cybuster? Ever since he saw the “Beauty under the Moonlight”, this guy’s been acting like he’s afraid that I will really fight with the Dark Mage.

Is he afraid I will kill this Dark Mage? Or is he afraid the Dark Mage will kill me?

Though Cybuster suddenly made a change in the plan, Tartaglia did not object. After all, he was supposed to play along with Rugaard’s scheme anyways; a little change won’t matter to him. Grunting aloud, he nods in acceptance.

Du Wei also smiled: “This is good too. Able to experience Master Tartaglia’s magic and not hurt General Rugaard’s face, this idea is indeed perfect.”

After a pause, Du Wei deliberately slowed his tone: “However, since it’s a bet, there’s always winning and losing, may I know how this will be done?”

Apparently Cybuster had this part thought out too. Without delay in his follow up, he said: “Duke’s word is right. Since it’s a bet, then of course we need to have some kind of stake at play. But, we are in the Northwest Army’s territory. If we were to make you gents pay out of pocket, then that will make the Northwest Army seem too stingy! Let’s do this then..... If Master Tartaglia wins, why don’t we give the hundred or so inmates left in the dungeon to him? Father, surely you wouldn’t stinge out on a few death rows?”

Rugaard immediately nodded.

“If Master Tartaglia loses ... .. Then father, I would like Master Tartaglia to show me magic for a month. Consider this a request on my end.”

Tartaglia is Rugaard’s men to begin with, so of course he would nod in agreement.

Du Wei sighs and forced a smile: “Isn’t this an inconvenience for our wager to come out of the Northwest Army’s pocket?”

“Only like this will it show off my father’s respect towards you two.” Cybuster’s smooth reply made Du Wei think: this rascal is not an easy character to deal with!

“Likewise, if Duke wins, then the reward of being the winner will be, hmmm..... I heard your Dukeship suffered quite the loss when the prairie army invaded. How about this, if the Duke wins: fine horses three thousand, superior quality armor three thousand!”

Du Wei ponders the idea inside because the condition is quite tempting: “Well then, what if I lose?”

Cybuster’s current laugh gave Du Wei the chills: “Earlier I heard your Dukeship is fluent in both magic and martial art..... Such talent is extraordinary! And, I find your odd weapon fascinating. So here’s my request. If the Duke loses, I would like you to tutor me for a month using that weapon! Of course, I can’t have your lordship staying here for so long. Here’s my proposal. I will accompany you back to Loulan City alone for a month while you tutor me!”

When his words came out, Du Wei was startled. It wasn’t just him; even Rugaard was showing a surprised expression.

Going back alone with Du Wei?

Wouldn’t this mean Du Wei can take this guy hostage if anything happens?

Du Wei was full of doubt regarding this idea because this young general was clearly aiming for his sword “Beauty under the Moonlight”.

Is this sword really so important to him?!

There’s simply no way out of this. Du Wei loudly laughs: “Fine! I’ll take the bet!”

After a pause, Du Wei saw Hussein’s signaling eye next to him. Hurrying to add in: “But I have a request.... In order to raise the difficulty of our hunt, the prey must be kept alive without being harmed!” Du Wei intentionally laughs: “If Master Tartaglia runs off and uses a wide range “Devouring Darkness” spell,

then he can easily cover the entire forest to wipe out all life.... At that point, I can only watch on from the sideline.”

Cybuster was obviously very anxious. Not even waiting for that Dark Mage to speak, this young general answered in his stead: “Fine, we will do just that!”

As expected! Du Wei sneered ... .. For this sword, the guy is willing to do anything!.

## Chapter 246 “Curse of the snowy mountain”

There’s no way Du Wei would believe Rugaard is the type to show kindness. Nevertheless, as a human being, he should still do his upmost to save as many lives as he can.

“So then... .. Begin!”

Following the announcement from Rugaard, the host of this place, dozens of horsemen began dispersing into the forest.

Looking over at Master Tartaglia, Du Wei gracefully bends his waist and shows a hand: “Master Tartaglia, please go ahead.”

Not even bothering to be polite, Tartaglia used those unusually white eyes to send an icy cold glare at Du Wei. Levitating into the air like a ghost due to his fluttering black robe, this Dark Mage then drew a skeletal bone wand to begin his chant. Although the distance between the two weren’t close by any means, but Du Wei can faintly sense an unnerving sensation coming off from the mass of black fog extruding out of that wand. It wasn’t just Du Wei. Everyone that had remained at the scene also felt it. Like death itself was in the air, the onlookers instinctively took several steps back to the point where the light hearted found cover behind their peers.

Under the crackling sound of the trembling ground, several skeleton soldiers began to make their way out from the dirt. First was the arm, then the head, then like dreaded ghouls breaking forth from their coffin, these unworldly fiends howled like they will feast upon this world.

Following another series of spell chants, the air in front of Tartaglia began to mend and crack. Like an exploding void from hell, multiple death knights raced forward and broke through into the realm of the living. Extruding flames of pure darkness, these harbingers of death left no room for delusion regarding their ferocity.

In the face of such deathly abominations, many of the finely trained war horses under these generals began to lose it. The soldiers were quick to react to



their panicking steeds, but they were utterly useless in calming the animals down.

Witnessing his own vile creations, Master Tartaglia's eerie but prideful laugh permeated everyone's tingling skin. Without delay, this dark mage waves his wand and summons all the undead creatures to his side. Uttering words that even Du Wei cannot understand, this pale old magician acted like he could communicate with the dead. Then with another wave of his wand towards the forest, all of the undead creatures reacted like they just received a clear and precise order.

While the five Death knights rode into the forest at great speed, the skeleton soldiers didn't disappoint either. Taking advantage of their numbers, these lesser undeads fanned out in all direction of the wood to do their part.

With a face full of contempt, Tartaglia sneers a glance at Du Wei: "Duke, I'll be heading out first then!"

Striking his arms downward, this Dark mage then flew into the forest like a ghost.

Watching this Tartaglia disappear into the forest, Du Wei's face revealed a hint of gloom before covering it up with a smile: "General Rugaard..... This magic consultant you have sure is mighty!"

Rugaard faintly smiles in return: "Du Wei, no need to be polite. You are famed as the number one genius magician in this generation. Why not let us witness your amazing magic."

Du Wei ponders the problem for a moment: that Dark Mage is capable of summoning multiple undead creatures at once to aid him. Also, large scale destructive magic is of no use here. So what can he do.....

He could summon treant companions to help ... .. No! That won't do. Those trees called forth by the Life Horn are too clumsy for such a complicated task. They might have been useful for l

abor intensive jobs, but finding some naked girls in a forest without harming them is too much.

Just as his mind got to this part, Du Wei's face revealed a delightful smile.

Slowly levitating into the air, Du Wei suddenly whistles like he was summoning something. Just when Rugaard wanted to question him over his actions, a humming sound drifted over from within the woods.

Like it was coming from all directions, an astonishing scene appeared before everyone's eye when the noise finally came to an end. Birds! Birds of all kinds, ranging from hummingbird, cuckoo bird, yellow bird..... And even some owls known for their nocturnal lifestyle!

Despite their vast numbers, the hundred or so birds obediently gathered around Du Wei in a circular formation.

Under everyone's astonished eye, Du Wei whistled a couple more times like he was communicating to these birds. Flapping their wings, these birds all took to the air when he was done and fanned out into the forest like they just accepted Du Wei's command.

When the onlookers saw this, their faces only had one question imprinted on their forehead: what kind of magic is this?

They heard of magicians summoning magical creatures to their side, but never once have they seen or heard of a magician calling in so many animals to their aid.

What's more, this guy acted like he could communicate with these birds. What, can he speak bird's tongue now too?

But Du Wei's shock to these people didn't just end here.

After dispersing the birds, Du Wei howled like a wolf into the forest!

Before long, the forest replied with several echoing howls. Sporting coats of grey fur, several massive wolves came running out of the wood to gather in front of Du Wei like he was the alpha.

Frightened by the sudden intrusion, several guards stepped in front of Rugaard with their weapons drawn. Though these wolves looked massively strong, but their reaction showed they indeed hold certain levels of fear towards humankind. Baring their teethes at the soldiers, these wolves would growl here and there while nervously pawing at the ground.

Ignoring all of this, Du Wei crouched down and began communicating with these canines. Not sure what kind of whimpering language that was, but when these wolves heard him, the pack all charged into the forest without stopping.....

“HA-HA-HA... .. Du Wei, you really widened our eyes today!” Rugaard took the lead in breaking the silence: “Du Wei, what kind of magic is this to be able to drive these animals to your call? I’ve heard of undead creatures and magic creatures, but never once did I hear a mage summoning so many regular animals..... You.....”

Du Wei faintly smiles and bypassed the subject with a laugh: “I better hurry now. Master Tartaglia summoned so many undead creatures. If I don’t move fast, his summons will really take all the prey.”

At his word, Du Wei dropped down to his saddle and kicked his horse to move forward. Galloping at high speed, Du Wei left for the forest with Hussein closely at his back.

Once Du Wei’s figure completely disappeared into the forests, Rugaard’s face finally became somber.

“Father” Cybuster whispers from the side.

Raising a hand, Rugaard turns to look at his subordinates: “All of you can move down.”

At his command, all of the soldiers and generals had their face turn dark. Regardless of their mood, all of them rode away to leave the father and son duo alone.

“Father, you see.....” Cybuster’s voice was deep and full of worry.

“Indeed, that sword is ‘Beauty under the Moonlight’. But then shouldn’t that sword be in Rodriguez’s hand? That youngster’s whereabouts had always been a mystery, forcing us to be fruitless in our search.....”

Cybuster coldly laughs: “If ‘White River’s Sorrow’ knew the sword is in the Northwest, he will definitely come snatch it. Humph.... Without ‘Beauty under the Moonlight’, his Shaman King status will never be truly recognized!”

Rugaard was silent for a while: “Back when Gu Lanxiu (Former Shaman King) left Snowy Mountain, I had always worried about one thing when he took the sword with him.....That is Blue Ocean. (Famed Scholar in the capital) Who knows how many layouts that guy secretly put in place. Although ‘White River’s Sorrow’ is strong, but there are many secrets that cannot be activated without the sacred sword of Snowy Mountain. I’ve always speculated the sword is in Blue Ocean’s hand, unfortunately, the spy I planted never found any clue..... In fact, I even wondered if Gu Lanxiu played dead like before, or if that Rodriguez is Gu Lanxiu’s newest disciple. Otherwise, how can ‘Beauty under the Moonlight’ fall into an outsiders hand.... But today, things got even more complicated!”

Cybuster thought it over and said, “No matter what, the sword is in this Du Wei’s hand now.....”

Rugaard did not reply, his eyes filled with complex and contradictory thoughts: “Do you think this Du Wei is a disciple of Gu Lanxiu?”

Cybuster smiled: “Father is so foolish! Gu Lanxiu’s been dead for decades, how old is this Du Wei? From what I see, this Du Wei more like Blue Ocean’s disciple. As to ‘Beauty under the Moonlight’, I say it was passed on to him by Blue Ocean.”

“Humph!” Rugaard snorted: “Beauty under the Moonlight’ may have been difficult to take under Rodriguez’s hand, but now..... We must not lose sight of it while it’s under our eyes!”

Cybuster sneered: “Father, ‘White River’s Sorrow’ only managed to step up to Shaman King because you didn’t care for the post, yet why do you care so much about this sword?”

“What do you know!” Rugaard softly utters his words: “As the current head of the Northwest Army of the Roland Empire, I command over 200,000 soldiers and can loiter around in the Northwest. Who can control me? Compared to that ‘White River’s Sorrow’ sitting atop of that bitter cold mountain, my life here is way better. However, the many secrets hidden inside that place still tempt me..... Are you not tempted too after I told you about some of those treasures?”

Cybuster sighs: “It’s just so infuriating.... That old fart Gu Lanxiu favored Blue

Ocean and his brother so much, yet towards you.....”

“Quiet!!” Rugaard suddenly snapped. Growling at his son: “You better listen! I’ve warned you many-many times! I may insult Gu Lanxiu, but you cannot! No one is allowed to insult Gu Lanxiu while standing before me! I forbid it, you understand!”

Cybuster did not reply. Slowly stepping back a few paces, he lowers his head: “Yes.... Father!”

Only then did Rugaard nod in satisfaction. Slowly turning to look up at the sky, this midget lets out a long reminiscing sigh: “No matter what.... Gu Lanxiu is after all..... My Teacher.”

Unbeknownst to Rugaard, a hint of lethal sharpness crossed Cybusters eye while the kid pretended to look dejected.

After a long moment like this, Rugaard finally continues the subject: “What magic do you think that Du Wei just used? Doesn’t it look like.....”

Only then did Cybuster raise his head to looking at his father: “I was wondering that too. To be able to drive so many normal animals to his side..... If I remember correctly, father, you said Snowy Mountain have a shaman craft called ‘animal speech, capable of communicating with any living animal in this world. But because of the difficulty of that skill, there hasn’t been anyone capable of practicing that art for hundreds of years. This Du Wei.....”

“This is what I’m worried about!” Rugaard clenches his teeth: “This Du Wei’s talent is very high. At such a tender age he’s already earned quite the fame in the capital..... This alone is enough proof that he’s not weak! If he has ‘Beauty under the Moonlight’, then I’m wondering if he learned the stuff from Snowy Mountain.... If he did, then our problem is huge!”

“Then why don’t we make sure his life never leaves Watt City.....” Cybuster shows his murderous self.

“Cannot kill!” Rugaard suddenly reveals fear in his eyes: “You’re not a member of Snowy Mountain so you don’t know! Any member of Snowy Mountain can never kill their peers. If they do, they shall be cursed forever and live a life of misery!”

Cybuster apparently didn't believe it and wanted to shrug the superstition away: "Father, you really believe such stuff?"

"Quiet!" Rugaard speaks coldly: You of course wouldn't believe it! But look at that 'White River's Sorrow' for example. Although I'm conceited, but I have to admit that character is the greatest talent Snowy Mountain have ever come across in the past several hundred years. Regardless of Shamanism or Snowy Mountain's martial art, 'White River's Sorrow' supersedes all of us in terms of cultivation speed. Can you imagine? For someone capable of defeating Gu Lanxiu with ease to be trapped atop of the Snow Mountain, how terrifying that curse must be! If not for that incident where he went off on a killing spree, I can guarantee 'White River's Sorrow' will topple any Magister or Saint Knight across this continent.....You remember it well and remember it hard. I may not know if this Du Wei learned Snowy Mountain's Shamanism or not, but for the sacred sword, we must kill him! However, if we find out he did learn shamanism, then by all means, we cannot kill him!"

Cybuster grits his teeth, "If so..... Then that spell he used is clearly animal speech."

"Then.... We can only come up with another option." Rugaard thought for a moment: "If we must ... .. We can slightly give in to him. That is still within the acceptable level."

"Even If we can't kill him ... .. He is still within our territory. Father, we have hundreds of thousands of troops at our beck and call. I don't believe he can flee with so many enemies around him. Even if he is a Saint Knight, he can't possibly fend off the entire Northwest Army. As long as father doesn't personally kill him, then the curse wouldn't take effect."

"No is no!" Rugaard suddenly became anxious: "Cybuster! You just don't understand! There's some things I can't say to you right now! Anyways.. ... You listen to me! As long as we can't determine if he knows Shamanism, then we can't lay a single finger on him. From today onward, you are in charge of his safety!"

## Chapter 247 “Dark Magic”

“That just now isn’t magic right?”

Only when they were deep into the forest did Hussein ask: “Seems you’ve been quite diligent in your training.”

Du Wei “hmmm” in return. Looking around to make sure no one was eavesdropping, he finally felt comfortable speaking: “I’m starting to feel there’s never enough time on my hand..... Aigh, sometimes I wish I could just turn one day into two days..... No, turn it into ten days! From managing the Desa Province to feeding the soldiers, I even have to think of ways to improve their fighting capabilities in secret, really, my brains about to be burnt out. Then there’s my meditation period. That alone takes up half the day. After I’m through with all that, I have to then find time to practice my Star Dou Qi..... And I recently added archery to the list..... Now in my hand is that Shaman craft technique.” Sighing at this point, “More and more stuff just keep popping up.....”

“When did you learn that ‘Druid’ spell?” This one question from Hussein easily answered the question bothering Rugaard.

Du Wei was silent for a while. Looking around the surrounding forest, he quietly said: “Almost a year now..... But with so many distractions in front of me, I only managed to learn the basics. Unlike Gandalf who can call upon any magic beast in the vicinity, summoning some basic animals is all I can do.”

Hussein looks at Du Wei. From his usually determined face, a blip of warmth gave way: “Du Wei..... You’ve been thinking of the old man right? You may not show it while he was alive, but I know you respected him a lot.”

Eyeing Hussein, “When did you learn to speak like an old woman?” Du Wei asks this in an indifferent voice.

The two break out into laughter after exchanging a glance: “But this nature’s law cultivation technique really is hard.... Aigh, get close to nature with a pure heart.... How am I supposed to do that? Ever since I came to the Northwest, all I’ve been doing is scheme against others and slaughter my enemies. Under

these circumstances, where am I supposed to find my pure heart? At this rate, who knows how many years will it be before I get to the level where I can summon magic beasts to my side.”

Hussein was about to speak again but was cut off by a sudden howl.

Turning cold, Du Wei yells: “There’s disturbance ahead!”

Without delay, the two kicked their steeds and rode towards the commotion.

Riding a hundred meters into the distance, what welcomed them is a young panicking girl huddling inside a tree hole. Probably due to over exhausting her voice, even her screams were weak to the ear. Not trying to flee nor defend herself, this naked young girl simply curls herself into a ball as she stared intently at the outside.

Meanwhile, the area around the tree was guarded by several massive wolves growling constantly at something. Despite their efforts, these predatory animals were being pushed back by their foe.

Covered in rusted armor, a unworldly creature known as a skeleton soldier continues to wave its dark burning sword at the wolves. Though the flames extruding out of the weapon is weak, but the deathly scent it gave off is magnified by the animal instincts in the defending wolves. If the situation continues to go down this path, it won’t be long before this skeleton soldier reaches the terrified girl.

After all, these wolves are only ordinary beasts. How can they possibly resist an undead monster?

Imprinting this scene into his eye, Hussein was about to dismount when Du Wei grabbed him. Not pl

eased by this, Hussein quickly turns to search for the reason and found Du Wei pondering at the scene.

Subsequently, Du Wei himself dismounted and walked up to the fight. From his storage, he pulls out a black crystal ball.

This item is the dark crystal ball he purchased back in the magic union. Prior to this event, Du Wei only used it once when he accidentally absorbed the dead



spirits left behind by the previous Death Mage. Now that he has another chance to pull it out, Du Wei intends to use it against this skeleton soldier.

Following a series of incantation from Du Wei's mouth, Hussein only frowned and didn't step in to stop the whole thing.

Just when the skeleton soldier wanted to wave its sword again, Du Wei already had his wand out pointing at the undead creature. In mere seconds, a black stream of gas lashed out to coil around the skeleton soldier and pulled it into the black crystal ball.

"You really do practice everything don't you?" Hussein sighs in disbelief: "When did you start learning dark magic?"

Returning his crystal ball into the ring, Du Wei shows a greedy smile: "Right after I established the magic learning society. There were so many dark magic contributions, how can I not learn them? That would be a sin in itself!"

"It's just....." Hussein didn't look so well: "Dark magic is not something good to learn. The more you cultivate it, the more unnatural you will become. Also, if you step over bound, the magic union's enforcement team will come kill you."

Du Wei chuckled, his voice unnaturally devious: "The first commandment forbids me from killing the living, but that doesn't mean I can't take it from fellow Dark Mages!"

After a pause, he whispers: "Dark magic is not all about mass killing. Some spells are actually quite useful. It's just..... " Du Wei smiles wryly: "Though this black crystal ball is from the magic union, but its quality is only mediocre. If I were to continue using it, my achievement will not get far."

"I think it won't hurt to stop learning Dark Magic." Hussein continues in a persuading tone: "You are too distracted. Remember, a person only have so much energy. If you learn everything, there will never be an end to it....."

Du Wei smiles: "Don't worry! I don't have too much interest in Dark Magic either. The reason I'm collecting so much souls is because I want to test a dark spell I recently acquired. Without the souls, the spell won't work."

With that, Du Wei casually dispersed the wolves with a druid spell. Walking up to the naked girl, he laughs in a calming manner: "Games over, you are safe

now.”

Poor girl. Because of the shock, she only managed to look Du Wei in the eye before passing out.

Stepping forward, Hussein lifts the girl onto his horse.

At the same time, Du Wei’s ear picked up something again from the distance: “Quick, we found something again.”

Not waiting for Hussein to be ready, Du Wei already bolted towards the commotion. Watching Du Wei’s disappearing back, Hussein got the aching feeling something is not right about this.

But as to why it’s not right to learn Dark Magic, Hussein couldn’t put it into words.

Since an extra person is aboard with him, Hussein can only move at a cantering speed. Nevertheless, his pace wasn’t slow by any means with his horsemanship. The problem though is that by the time he caught up to Du Wei, the whole thing was over.

With the girl lying on the grass, Du Wei was busy sucking in the two skeleton soldiers with his crystal ball like last time.

“As expected of an eighth level Dark Mage.” Du Wei picks up the crystal ball and sighed: “His undead creatures are such high quality!”

Just like that with minimal work, Du Wei managed to save two “prey”.

Since there are only five preys remaining before the bet started, Du Wei only needs one more to win the contest.

Just as he was preparing to listen in for more disturbances, a distant chilly voice drifted over: “What a good Duke Tulip! I didn’t come making trouble yet and you’ve already ruined several of my undead creatures!!”

# Chapter 248 “It’s him it’s him it’s him!” (part one)

As soon as the voice died down, a black shadow appeared from out of nowhere. With eyes fuming in anger, this figure floating above a tree branch was none other than Tartaglia. Aside from himself, this dark mage also brought along two unconscious girls.

Although this bastard managed to catch two of the ‘preys’, Du Wei wasn’t disappointed. In fact he was relieved. Those two may have fallen into the foe’s hand, but at the very least their life remains intact.

Earlier when Tartaglia finished his deed of capturing the second ‘prey’, he already felt something was off when some of his undead creatures disappeared from his radar. At first he only thought they were destroyed by Du Wei, but never in his mind did he think the kid would suck out the spirits from within his pets.

Dark Mages are the type to treat life like nothing to begin with. Adding in the fact that Du Wei offended him in such an unbelievable manner, Tartaglia would of course lose it. Without care for the consequence, Tartaglia drew his bone wand and waved it against the air. As a result of this, a stream black flame gushed out of the wand and surrounded his body, almost like a rainbow, but much darker.

Then with another flick of his wand, a loud cracking sound filled the scene. Distorting the very fabric of reality in front of himself, a huge bone claw stretched out from the rift and aimed straight for Du Wei.

Hussein frowns at the sight. With one arm, Hussein pulls Du Wei with him as they retreated to the back. Though the two may be safe from the sudden attack, but Du Wei’s horse wasn’t so lucky. Under the crushing pressure of the bone claw, the once living animal immediately became a mangled blob of flesh.

After a booming dragon roar, the small crack suddenly stretched apart and from within the void came a massive skull!

Bone Dragon! As expected, this dark mage also owns a dragon!

While Du Wei was retreating, he really wanted to sigh and slap himself for his own miserable luck. Why is it that every encounter he has with a Dark Mage ends up with his foe summoning a super rare bone dragon? Did dragons suddenly become a commodity that anyone can just pick up?

It's very obvious this bone dragon belonging to Tartaglia was far superior to the last one he encountered back in the capital. Whether it's the size or temperament coming out of that dragon skull, it's far bigger and way more oppressive!

When the giant skull finally finished emerging from the rift, the first thing this undead creature did was spew a mouthful of black flames at the pair.

Snorting at the laughable attempt, Hussein takes a step forward and raises a hand to create a golden barrier around himself and Du Wei. When the black flames made contact, the deadly breath was easily deflected, but as a consequence, the surrounding greenery's was turned to cinder!

Meanwhile, the great bone dragon took the window of opportunity to fully emerge from the rift. Standing at seven to eight meters tall, this creature only needs one howling roar to send all of the nearby trees flying across the landscape like a meteor just landed on the spot.

Watching this enormous bone dragon, Du Wei could not stop himself from frowning.

He may not be very fluent in dark magic, but he at least knows creating a bone dragon is one of the hardest and most powerful things to do in dark magic.

Whenever a dark mage wanted to create a bone dragon, they must first meet three conditions: first is of course finding a complete skeleton! It's well known dragons have practically disappeared from the continent for millennia. To solve this issue, many dark mages would take on the role of a tomb raider and

scour the land. If not this, then a dark mage can also scrim through some old literature and attempt to unearth a dead dragon from those ancient battlefields.

One good thing out of all this was that a dragon comes equipped with extremely tough bones. After thousands of years, their bone structures will remain intact and not rot or decay, but damages on the other hand are unavoidable. If a dark mage was lucky, they might spend a few decades to gather enough bones to complete an entire set. However, many might spend their entire life and never even come close!

And let's say the dark mage in question do get lucky and complete a set, that doesn't mean the refining process for a massive creature like a dragon was easy because the amount of souls and spirits required was astronomical!

If a dark mage's cultivation was not up to par, then they can forget about even attempting the feat. But then if they are powerful enough, it's likely the person in question was a death mage! At that time, the magic enforcement team would recognize that person as an evil entity and hunt him down. Under such circumstances, the opportunity to create a bone dragon becomes miniscule, if not impossible for most.

Alright, let's assume the dark mage in question meets the first two conditions.... Then the last condition is definitely the hardest!

They need a Dragon Soul!

To make a dragon – a behemoth of a creature – revive and listen to its creator, then the only way to achieve this is to utilize a dragon's soul!

But then where was one going to find a dragon's soul? Everyone in this world knows there was only one resting place for the dragon race – the 'dragon cemetery' – but that place was impossible for a measly death mage to reach.

Therefore, in order to locate the smallest trace of a dragon's soul, even if incomplete..... Many Dark Mages and Death Mages will rummage through the ancient battlefields where a dragon was unable to meet its end in the 'Dragon Cemetery' ..... Even so, a wondering remnant of a dragon's soul is enough!

However, whether the end product is powerful or not will depend entirely on the soul used.

Looking at it from these three points, this bone dragon belonging to Tartaglia was without a doubt at the top of the top.

After the first blast of flame was deflected by Hussein, this bone dragon promptly followed up with a whip of that long bone tail.

Snorting again at the attack, Hussein grabbed Du Wei and flew into the air. Before they can do anything else, a quick succession of snapping sounds came from below, clearly the trees in their previous spot was snapped and knocked to the ground.

Seeing the failure of his tail whip, the bone dragon follows up with a howling roar and shot another breath into the air.

Annoyed by this, Hussein did not dodge anymore. Hussein was the arrogant and prideful type to begin with, so why should he keep dodging? Even when facing the dragon chief, he wasn't afraid, let alone a knock off bone dragon!

Releasing Du Wei, Hussein quickly pulls out his sword and turns to face the oncoming attack. Pointing his blade at the black flame, numerous shining stars shot out from the tip and resolved the attack and continued to hammer down at the bone dragon's body!

Howling in pain, several of the rib cages on the bone dragon began to crack under the hailing assault.

Feeling his heart ache, Tartaglia watched on with great pain at the scene. This bone dragon forced him to spend a great portion of his life to create, how can he not shed tears over how easily his pet was harmed by a mere bodyguard?"

For three master class people like them, the space in this small forest was simply too cramped. Jumping down to his pet dragon's back, Tartaglia ordered the dragon to stretch out its wings and head for the the sky.

"You don't have to protect me." Du Wei whispers to Hussein: "You go find the last girl. I can deal with this Tartaglia fella."

While Hussein was hesitating at the command, Du Wei was already shouting "go!" Next second, Hussein was flying through the sky in the opposite direction.

Sneering at Tartaglia for charging at him with the dragon in toe, Du Wei immediately showered the entire air space with gunpowder.

What? Du Wei's fighting style is like this and his greatest trump card is this

fireball shower!

Adding in his nearly limitless supplier known as Anglia City's factory base, Du Wei was even more unreserved in his powder tossing. In a blink of an eye, hundreds of fireballs were roaring down at his foe.

Blinded by his anger at first, Tartaglia was scared out of his wits when Du Wei's attack appeared so suddenly.

This Duke Tulip ... .. Can use forbidden magic?!

This move by Du Wei really did share some similarity to the forbidden spell known as "Inferno City" at first glance. Although the destructive power is far inferior to the real thing, but as a bluff it's perfect.

Tartaglia may have already made a good estimation of Du Wei's power, but never in his wildest dream did he expect the kid to be fluent in forbidden magic. Even for a eighth level grand mage like himself, his only option is to flee in front of a forbidden spell!

Losing his boldness right off the bat, Tartaglia hastily raises his bone wand to create a black barrier in front of himself. Under the onslaught of fireballs, half the sky looked like it was stained red during the explosion.

Under the thundering boom, even Rugaard that was miles away in the base camp could hear it clearly ringing against his ear.

The son and father duo was in the middle of discussion when the earth shattering explosion occurred. When Rugaard reflexively looked up at the sky, the only thing welcoming his sight was a searing red sky and the mushroom like dust cloud hovering above the forest. Turning to Cybuster, Rugaard cries out: "Fast! Go see what's going on!!"

## Chapter 248 “It’s him it’s him it’s him!” (part two)

In the face of Du Wei’s sudden attack, Tartaglia can only feel a heat wave sweeping through his face and knocking him all over the place. Although minimal in terms of power, but together, the destructive force of hundreds of fireballs was still staggering. As a desperate countermeasure, he could only forcefully shield his body at the expense of depleting a good portion of his dark spirit fog.

While Tartaglia was busy fending for his life, Du Wei took advantage of the window of opportunity he created to sneak behind this dragon. Similar to the battle with the prairie army, Du Wei speedily began to summon a series of thunder strikes.

Almost instantaneously, the pressure in the sky became heavy as electrical sparks flowed through the clouds.....

By the time most of the flames were dispersed, Tartaglia already knew he was tricked! If it was really a forbidden spell, how can he still be alive? The spell may appear flashy, but the damage could hardly be called severe. Just when he wanted to summon forth a “Devouring Darkness” spell to counter – his heart only wants to turn this kid into an undead puppet at this point – his ears suddenly picked up a rumbling sound from above. Next thing he knew, a thundering bolt of lightning was already striking down at him from the sky.

Upon impact, this strike nearly sent the bone dragon crashing to the ground!

Enraged by this, Tartaglia forcefully holds on by pumping out all of his dark energy fog into the air for protection. Under normal circumstances, Tartaglia would have been able to take on ten Du Wei’s at once. However, he doesn’t have a rainbow energy ring to replenish his magic continuously.

After three loud bangs, although his anger was stronger than ever, Tartaglia had to face reality: his energy was slowly being worn away.

Yelling out in anger at Du Wei: “Let’s see how many more thunder strikes you



can summon!”

In Tartaglia’s view, even an eighth level grand mage would be heavily sapped by the enormous magic consumption from three lightning strikes and a gigantic fire blast.

Different from his foe’s expectation, Du Wei instead laughs ha-haly and turns to distance himself from Tartaglia. Taking his Nirvana’s bow out in the process, Du Wei then intentionally slowed his pace and took a shot at the source of the dragon roar in the background.

How powerful is the Nirvana’s bow? To put it into perspective, the meteoric arrow was already in front of Tartaglia before he could even hear Du Wei drawing his bow!

Horried by the sight, Tartaglia could only order his pet dragon to shield him out of reflex. Upon impact, one of the bone dragon’s claws exploded like fireworks and scattered across the forest. Seeing his pet howling out in pain, Tartaglia can only puke blood!

His precious bone dragon!

How can he not bleed inside? Through sweat and blood, every single bone on this dragon was painstakingly gathered by him personally.

Unwilling to let this slide, Tartaglia hurries his dragon to pick up speed. At the same time, a series of weird incantations began spouting out of the dragon’s jaw.....

Draconian magic?

Du Wei got a bad feeling about this.

As soon as the spell finished casting, a blast of dark energy violently charged towards Du Wei. Next thing he knew, Du Wei found himself fixed in mid-air, unable to move an inch from the spot!

This was not some typical “Cobweb” binding magic, it’s the genuine deal: Draconian Magic! Unless the victim was vastly superior to the caster in terms of strength, they can otherwise forget about breaking free.

Instead of panicking like

he should, Du Wei showed a face of I don't care: "You think this is enough to stop me?"

Feeling the veins pop on his forehead, Tartaglia and his pet dragon were of the same mind at this point. With one swift charge to get behind Du Wei, the dragon promptly loosed a mouthful of black flames at the kid.

But even after burning the sky black, no evidence of Du Wei could be found in the aftermath. Noticing this wasn't right; Tartaglia immediately activated his immense spiritual senses to scour the surrounding terrain. Surprising himself, Tartaglia managed to locate Du Wei's figure dropping nonstop towards the ground. How can he move when hit with Draconian Magic? But it didn't take long for Tartaglia to recompose himself for another attack. With one loud roar, his wand began to actively move again to summon a series of black whirlpools along Du Wei's drop path.

"Why is it every time you get into trouble that I have to save you in the end?! Semel sighs at her own situation. The one currently dragging Du Wei through the sky and dodging the black swirling pools was none other than Semel. Of course, all of this was invisible to Tartaglia.

"Because my death means your death. If you save me then it means saving yourself." Du Wei answers like it's only proper.

Completely lost for words, Semel coldly smiles: "What are you going to do about that big dragon?"

Du Wei laughs aloud, his finger pointing to the front: "What do you see over there?"

Not far away was Watt City!!

Semel's face turned gloomy: "Could it be you want to hide inside the city? That will drag the civilians into this!"

Du Wei lets out a cold laugh: "I'm not that despicable... .. Besides, do I need to flee? He's only a eighth level mage. Even if I can't beat him alone, but with you, I highly doubt we will lose. It's just that I'm too lazy to do it myself. Don't worry. Once we are close enough to the city, someone will be there to help!"

"Help?"

Although Watt City was already in sight, but the anger blind Tartaglia could care less at this moment! His precious bone dragon just suffered a crippling injury to one claw, how can he just let it slide? Also, who knows how long will it be before he can find a replacement claw for his pet. His only wish right now was to shred this Duke Tulip into smithereens!

The only problem was that this kid is full of too many trickery. In their exchanges earlier, the one to suffer the most was always himself. How can someone run after every blow, does this kid have no shame? Seriously, who ever heard of a magician running in a duel? A magician's dignity will be destroyed at this rate!!”

Hurrying his dragon to accelerate, another deep and draconian chant swept across the landscape.....

“Perfect!” Du Wei suddenly smiles at Semel. Hovering above the city sky, Du Wei sighed: “And here I was worrying about the guy not making a ruckus. Since he's making such a loud commotion with his bone dragon.... Then he can only blame himself!”

Sure enough ... ..

The moment the bone dragon's roar ended, a monstrous roar that shook the very earth itself answered from within Watt City!

Given the devastating boom in the air, the sound wave was at least three to two times bigger than the bone dragon's in terms of strength! And that's based on Du Wei's assessment while in the sky. Imagine what it must be like for those on the ground!

Suddenly, a golden figure flew out of Watt City and into the sky! Though covered in golden flames, but the draconic might this being gave off cannot be imitated!

Semel was shocked by the sight: “Dragon?!”

Du Wei sighs again: “Counting the days, this dragon prince should've long been here, yet he's never shown himself up till now. I'm guessing it's because I was hiding inside Watt City. Not bad, he's not a fool like the last one. At least he's smart enough to wait till I leave the Northwest Army's stronghold before

making an attempt at my life..... I really have to thank that Tartaglia for luring this lizard out; otherwise, I might have resorted to my alternative plan!”

The golden flamed figure turns to face Du Wei, although hidden behind that light, the sharp scrutinizing stare coming off from the dragon prince was unmistakable.

“Ha-ha, and here I was wondering who it might be! How kind of the dragon race to grace us with their presence!” Du Wei showed no fear in his words.

Horried, Tartaglia also sensed the overwhelming pressure! As someone that spent most of his life studying the dragon race, it didn’t take much for him to identify the other party was not an ordinary dragon..... Such a strong presence, the being was definitely a member of the dragon tribe, and very high up in the chain too!

Following the arrival of Tartaglia not far into the distance, the golden figure turns to assess the Dark Mage. When this dragon prince first laid eyes upon the bone dragon beneath the human’s feet, a towering roar erupted to fill the heavens and earth itself!

“Who!! Who is it!!! Who dare use the sacred remains of a dragon warrior to create this vile creature!! This is a blatant insult to the dragon race!!!!” Under his enormous roar, the dragon prince’s body transformed into a humongous dragon that was comparable to a small mountain!!

“Who! Which of you lowly humans here is responsible for this vile deed!” Gold Dragon continues to howl in rage.

Standing in an obedient fashion not too far away, Du Wei waited till the dragon prince finishes his rant before pointing to the horrified Tartaglia: “Him! It’s him! He did it! He’s the one who insulted the dragon race!”

Upon being pinned by the dragon prince’s eye that was engulfed in golden flames, Tartaglia felt like his world is about to end. Losing all shades of color from his already pale face, this once arrogant Dark Mage didn’t know how to react except muffling out these few words.....

Gold ... .. Gold Dragon?!

Towards any Dark Mage that was brave enough to create an undead dragon,

the worst thing to happen to them was undoubtedly encountering a truly powerful dragon! For any member of the dragon tribe, they are inherently hostile towards any creature that defiles their fallen comrades remain. To them, this was an insult not only to the dragon tribe, but to their predecessors as well.

As such, for any member of the dragon tribe, they will without restraint kill the person in question using the most ruthless and cruel method they can muster.

And ... .. Tartaglia himself understands. No matter how high his ability gets, he's no match for an adult sized Gold Dragon!!

Da-Damn it! Why is there a dragon here? And not just any dragon, a legendary gold dragon!

Despite being in the face of the monstrous dragon prince, Du Wei had the relaxed look of someone going on a picnic. Firmly pointing his fingers at the shadowy figure known as Tartaglia: "It's him it's him it's him!" Du Wei cries out like a little kid in a playground.

## Chapter 249 “It’s shameful to waste”

According to the legends of old, it was said that the ones to stand at the very top of the biological food chain are the Dragons.

Whether it was speed, power, reflexes, or combat capabilities, they are supposedly close to what the world called perfection.

Spanning a whopping thirty meters in length and eight meters in height, one adult gold dragon can not only ram through a city wall with ease, they also had absolute superiority in the air.

But that’s not the most troubling. Because of the natural hierarchy in the animal kingdom, draconian magic takes precedence over any other type of magic. Whether it was the humans or magic beasts, it means nothing in front of a Gold Dragon.

Ever since Du Wei returned from the Frozen Forest and created the blood feud with that old chief, he’s been spending a lot of time researching the dragon race, both their weaknesses and advantages.

In the end, Du Wei finally had to admit the dragon race was naturally blessed by the all mighty creator. Unrivaled combat capabilities and an intellect no lower than the human race.... If not for their weak reproductive rate, it’s likely this race would have conquered the entire world.

According to some of the ancient documents read by Du Wei inside the magic union, he came to one single conclusion after analyzing the data collected by the dragon slayers of old: a dragon could almost completely ignore all offensive spells inferior to their own rank! This advantage only gets more ridiculous as you move up the ladder in the dragon specie, especially for the gold variant.

For example: a gold dragon will reach its prime after living fifteen hundred years. At its peak, the dragon in question will reach a state where some have dubbed “Immunity to all inferiority”, meaning they will truly be immune to all magic unless it was greatly superior to themselves.

To put it bluntly, anyone unlucky enough to face off against an adult gold

dragon was better off committing suicide than to fight.

Du Wei wasn't sure if this Dragon Prince was in its prime or not, but simply based on that monstrous roar and enormous body frame, this dragon was most certainly a force to be reckoned with!

Tartaglia on the other hand could only feel his mage robe drenched in his own sweat because the pressure coming off from his foe had completely overwhelmed his pet.

Although this bone dragon was also a high quality product he so painstakingly scavenged from the ancient battlefields, but no matter what, it's still only an undead being. Compared to a real dragon, to be more precise, the king of all dragons, his pet could hardly be called magnificent.

The ginormous entity further away had already turned its sight to fixate its sharp reptilian eyes against Tartaglia and his pet dragon. In a loud roar, nearly all of the surrounding clouds were blown away.

“All those whom insult the Dragons dignity shall DIE!”

With a growl, Second Dragon Prince opens his huge jaw and spews a mouthful of golden fury at Tartaglia. Aside from the burning characteristic of the dragon breath, it also carried a deadly corrosive effect against any defensive magic.

Crying out in shock, Tartaglia quickly waves his wand like his life depended on it to drive his pet away.

When the golden flames came into contact with the dark fog he released earlier, a very thick burst of vapor immediately came up like how a bowl of hot soup would look when splashed onto a pile of snow. Seeing his life's work being destroyed in mass, Tartaglia could only suppress the aching pain while hurrying his pet to flee. However, there's no way the Gold Dragon was going to let him slip away.

Under the monstrous roar of the Gold Dra

gon, it didn't take long for the Second Prince to catch up to the Bone Dragon. With one swipe of his golden claw, the first thing to be grabbed was the Bone Dragon's tail.

Horried by the situation, Tartaglia quickly fled from his pet's back. Shooting himself further up into the sky, the only thing he could do was have his pet resist by releasing even more dark energy into it.

But under the might of the Gold Dragon, how can a mere bone dragon resist? Though already dead, but the inherent characteristics of a real dragon still lingers within the soul used in its creation. With every roar it gave out, the whimpering and merciful cry became ever so obvious.

After a few snapping sound, a good portion of the Bone Dragon was torn away. Then with another golden breath, the entire bone tail was painfully reduced to ashes.

Bleeding inside, Tartaglia desperately tried to command his pet to run. However, he quickly came to the realization his greatest creation was starting to disobey him. No matter what order he gave or what amount of energy he used, his pet dragon would timidly cower below its foe.

Finally, after another snapping sound when the Gold Dragon bites down on its neck, a spark of ferocity was sparked inside the bone dragon. Retaliating with its remaining claw by smacking down at the Gold Dragon's head, this not only didn't diffuse the disadvantage it had, it only angered the Second Dragon Prince even more.

Brawling on the ground, this was truly a contest of strength at this point. But then how can the skeletal structure of the bone dragon compete with the hulking body of the Gold Dragon?

Fearing for what was to come, Tartaglia continues to do his utmost to drive his pet to fight back. Just then, Du Wei's mocking voice drifted over from the distance: "Oh honorable master Taraglia..... It's no use. No matter what spell you use now, your bone dragon will not call upon its draconian magic!"

"Wh-why." Under intense fear, Tartaglia asks this like a reflex reaction.

With complex emotions running through his eyes, Du Wei slowly answers: "Because..... Of the dragon's golden rule: Whenever a dragon encounters another dragon, the two can only rely on their physical bodies during the duel. This rule is set by the dragon god himself and no dragon can ever violate this decree. Even if your bone dragon is an undead creature, but in the end, it's still



a dragon.”

While Du Wei explained this, the unforgettable memories of his venture into frozen forest surfaced once again. In order to cover their escape, White Robed Gandalf sacrificed himself by transforming into a red dragon using druid magic. Taking advantage of the golden rule, the old fool was able to force the dragon chief into a physical brawl and stalled enough time for the party to escape successfully.

Now, watching the giant beings tearing at each other from afar, a sudden burst of emotions he couldn't explain was building up inside.

The truth was Tartaglia also knew of this golden rule, after all, he spent his entire life studying how to create a bone dragon. Now that he was reminded by Du Wei, Tartaglia felt like he suddenly awoke from a daze. Stopping his futile attempt at driving the bone dragon, a sense of conviction filled Tartaglia's eyes as he grits his teeth back and forth.

It's not hard for him to escape alone, but a majority of his life was spent on this bone dragon. For a Dark Mage, losing their most powerful undead creature equates to losing a large portion of their power, and if that happens today, he might really have the heart to kill himself right here and then!

Irrational as it was, but as a man, there comes a time in life where one must abandon all reason and risk it all.

Thinking up to here, Tartaglia bites down on his lip and began to wave his wand at the sky. Following a series of incantations, the sky overhead began to turn dark and before long, flickers of light flew out.

Watching this, Du Wei gasped: “What a guy.... He's really going all in!”

Casting a “Life Drain” darkness spell at the wrestling behemoths down below, Second Dragon Prince suddenly found himself wrapped in a fog of darkness. What Tartaglia used just now was the most common darkness spell used by Dark Mages where it will suck out the life force of its living prey.

In a loud roar, Gold Dragon uses one claw to subdue its prey down below and growls at the interloper: “Despicable human, how dare you attack me!”

Then in a maniacal laugh, Gold Dragon spews another golden breath at the

“Life Drain” fog and immediately destroyed Tartaglia’s effort.

Not willing to give up, Tartaglia musters up all of the surrounding dark energy and calls forth another spell. Forcing open several tears in the air, a series of dark scythes suddenly lunged out from the void and mercilessly cuts down at the Second Dragon Prince.

As a Gold Dragon, the Second Prince naturally has an enormous body, adding in the fact that he was in a middle of a brawl with the bone dragon, the first scythe managed to land onto his back quite easily. Unfortunately for Tartaglia, the attack may have landed, but it did no damage other than to infuriate the lizard even more. With one bite from his massive jaw, Second Dragon Prince shattered the remaining dark scythes still in the air.

Feeling the recoil coming back at him, Tartaglia immediately coughed up a mouthful of blood from his now sickly green face. Seeing how useless his dark scythes were, Tartaglia only had this in mind: is this dragon at its prime already?

At this shocking revelation, his hands moved even faster to gather up more dark energy. With the tightening of his grip, the dark fog under his palm hardened to form a giant black spear before lunging down towards the Gold Dragon.

At the same time, the bone dragon on the ground was already paralyzed after having its wing ripped apart by the Second Dragon Prince. Still basking in his own victory, Second Dragon Prince’s attention was pulled away by the commotion behind him. When he turned to see what the sound was, the first image to come into sight was a large spear flying at him from the back. Roaring out in anger, he immediately incinerated the attack with another breath.

Not missing the chance while Tartaglia was lost in his own madness, Du Wei quietly descended towards the Bone Dragon lying there on the ground outside Watt City. Just minutes ago this thing was still chasing him across the forest, but now, it could barely cling onto life with a wing torn and its neck twisted to one side.

By the time Du Wei came up to its side, the Bone Dragon obviously sensed his hostility, but all it could do now was utter a low growl.

Laughing in an extremely sinister fashion: “Call all you like, no one is going to

come save you even if you lose your voice.”

With that, Du Wei already pulled out his black crystal ball: “Your dark energy is so pure.... Rather than letting that Gold Dragon tear you into pieces, why not benefit me.....”

Bone Dragon’s roar went from a weak growl and into a weak sigh. Not being polite, Du Wei immediately began to work his own dark crystal to suck out the dead spirits from within the Bone Dragon like small little streams running down a hill. Before long, the last brink of flame was blown out from the Bone Dragon’s eye socket.

From what was once a dull black ball, the crystal ball in Du Wei’s hand now was a pearly black. Pleased by this, he smiled in a very satisfied fashion: “As expected.” With that, he pulls up his robe and stores the crystal ball away.

For a person like Du Wei that never likes to waste stuff, he only needed to give the remaining dragon bones a glance to decide what to do with them. In one sweep of his hand, the remaining damaged bones were sucked into his storage ring for future use. Top grade bones are still top grade, even if they are damaged!

“It’s shameful to be wasteful.” Du Wei nods his head like he was doing a great deed for the world.

As soon as he finished his thievery deed, a loud and blood roar came from above.

# Chapter 250 “Du Wei’s lifesaving technique”

Left with nothing but a shambling mess of rags, Tartaglia had long lost his notable image of an eighth level mage. If not for his narrow escape by shielding himself with the dark fog, his body might have been turned to ashes by now.

His intentions were simple: use the dark lances to overcome his opponent. But apart from angering the dragon even more, it didn’t have any effect. In desperation, he mustered up his remaining undead creatures to swarm in to no avail. With only a glimpse, all of the undead soldiers and death knights were wiped from existence. Fruitless as it may be, Tartaglia’s suicidal charge did raise a certain amount of fatigue for the Second Prince after forcing him to continuously spew out his dragon breath.

Feeling some of his rage subside, the Dark Mage was nothing but a clown in the serpent’s eye. Nevertheless, Gold Dragon still retains some wariness towards the undead creatures summoned by this feeble human..... This was especially true for that scythe attack. Though the spell didn’t cause any real bodily harm, his body still aches with discomfort after being struck.

It was at this moment Tartaglia sensed the sudden change from his bone dragon. Knowing his greatest creation had likely faced misfortune, the first person to come to mind was Du Wei. Coughing up a mouthful of blood from anger and resentment, he completely ignores the Gold Dragon on his tail and charges for Du Wei in a maddening fashion.

Just as he was finishing up his thievery deed, Tartaglia smashes down from the sky: “Thank you for the huge profit.” Du Wei chuckles with great pleasure at the fool.

At the end of his mockery, Du Wei disappears into the shadow.

Tartaglia may be a mad tiger at this point, but apart from madness, he should never have forgotten about the terrifying enemy at his back. After all, there’s no way Second Dragon Prince was going to let him off after insulting the dragon race. Next thing Tartaglia knew, a burst of blood was spraying out from his chest where his heart should be.

“Lowly human, this is your fate for your blasphemy!”

Coming down with one claw, Second Prince firmly grips onto Tartaglia and causes the Dark Mage to cough up even more blood.

Knowing his death was inevitable, Tartaglia cries out: “Then let’s die together!”

Using his last ounce of strength, Tartaglia shatters the dark crystal ball in his hand and releases every soul within his possession!

Who knows how many lives were lost in the cultivation process for this crystal ball. Gushing out uncontrollably, not even the Second Dragon prince could withstand the deadly corruption.

Letting out a painful cry, Second Dragon Prince felt like every scales across his body was burning in pain! This gush of darkness not only hurts the physical body; it also burns the victim’s very soul!

It’s not like he didn’t know the danger involved with dark magic, but he didn’t expect a suicidal attack like this. Without delay, he lets Tartaglia’s body go and harshly flaps his wing to distance himself from the source. In the end, it was too late. From a brilliant glow to a dimly lit shine, the sheen from his scales were no longer the same after leaving behind the lifeless scene in the background.

It was then Du Wei emerged from the shadows again. Covered in a layer of creamy white light, this spell he used just so happens to be a light spell he recently learned. Though light affinity spells are the natural enemy of darkness, but won’t last long in this area contaminated with dark energy.

Calmly taking out his crystal ball, Du Wei began to ravenously absorb the deceased souls in the air. In this venture, about fo

rty to fifty percent of Tartaglia’s dark energy ended up in Du Wei’s hand.

Watching the ball of darkness in his hand, Du Wei sighed at how glossily dark it was: “It’s a shame Tartaglia shattered his crystal ball, otherwise, I could have swapped this one with his.”

“Didn’t you earn enough today?” Semel’s mocking laugh came from his side.

Du Wei puts on an absolute serious face: “You see the vast tracts of dead

souls here? By taking them in, I'm doing the innocent civilians a favor."

Semel sneered: "Whatever, just worry about dealing with that dragon."

Though there are still souls in the vicinity, Du Wei decided it was time to put his crystal ball away because the damage the remaining souls could do to the area was minimal at best.

While Du Wei was doing all this, Watt City was already sent into high alert. Closing their gates and manning the wall with every solider and weapon they had in possession, there was no question the populace was scared of the massive Dragon outside their gates.

Dragon! A real dragon!

Thousands of soldiers atop of the city rampart were watching the behemoth with both fear and awe! After all, the Roland Continent hasn't seen a real dragon for a very long time. For many, probably all of them, the only information they had were from legends passed down through the ages.

But now, a real dragon was just standing there in front of their eyes!

Many officers tried to put up a front but the truth was, they were scared out of their wits. It's only natural. Smaller creatures are inherently afraid of anything bigger than themselves, human or no exception.

While the officers struggled to order their subordinates to take up arms and take aim at the Gold Dragon, but based on the strained expression of their faces, these people probably didn't have much desire to fight.

Landing down on the ground outside the city, Second Dragon Prince raises his head high above the city wall like all shall kneel before him. Contrary to how everyone was reacting, Second Dragon Prince completely disregarded the soldiers atop of the rampart like they didn't even exist.

"Former Du Wei Rowling, the one to humiliate the dragon race, you are now called Du Wei Rudolph, am I right?"

Du Wei shrugged. Even when facing off against this terrifying creature, he did not falter: "You got one point wrong. I did not bring any humiliation to the dragon race. When your father made the bet with me and lost, he deserves it."

“Sharp tongue eh?!” Roaring out in disdain: “Father said you are cunning, but in front of me, it’s useless. No matter what type of lies and smooth words you use, I will have your head by the time I leave!”

“Oh, is that so?” Du Wei mockingly laughs: “Then why did you wait until today to appear?”

“Because courage doesn’t mean recklessness.” The Dragon seems be very good at finding excuses: “You are very successful tonight. Taking advantage of my anger, you lured me out..... But don’t think just because of that I won’t be able to kill you.” Second Prince slowly lowers his head and eyes down at Du Wei: “You better listen ... .. My father instructed me not to make a ruckus in the human word! If not for that, I can kill you even if you hide inside your capital. Like right now, I can squash you like a bug in front of all these troops.”

Du Wei continues to smile: “I heard that dragons are very proud creatures. Surely you’re above something like assassination.”

“Of course!” Gold Dragon proudly answers: “I can give you a fair chance to fight. But the opportunity only applies once ... .. I heard you are a good magician. But you know, human mages are unable to compete against dragons! That Dark mage is a good example.”

Du Wei looks at himself and chuckles in surprise: “Who said I’m going to personally fight with you? My God ... .. Although I’m a magician ... .. But I’m mainly fluent in magic pharmacy. My grade is far lower than that guy!”

Just as his voice died down, Hussein was already rushing over from one of the roads. He may not be riding a horse, but that didn’t hinder his pace whatsoever. Like a meteor, it only took a few jumps for him to reach Du Wei’s side.

“Is everything in place?” Du Wei looks at Hussein.

“All of the ‘preys’ have been dealt with in the camp.” Hussein replied calmly, but his words exposed the Knight’s dissatisfaction: “You are too rash.”

“The greater the risk, the higher the profit.” Quietly tapping his robe, Du Wei smiles satisfyingly. “The reward today is very good. My only concern now is whether or not our plan will go according to plan.”

Hussein turns his attention to the Gold Dragon: “Let me take care of him

then... ... While I keep him busy, you move further away and summon that red monster.....”

“No, no, no.” Du Wei immediately shook his head: “Listen to what I say, brother, the one to lead today will not be you.”

Gold Dragon finally became impatient after arrogantly watching Du Wei and Hussein’s discussion: “Are you two done with your chitchat? Who will fight me? Du Wei, no matter what, you only have one chance. In the end, I will certainly take your head back with me!”

“Ah ... .. Oh honorable Gold Dragon, we have come to a decision.” Du Wei’s voice sounded nothing like how one should speak in a life or death situation, more like a friend toasting in a banquet: “The result from our discussion.... It’s regrettable, both I and my friend here are not your opponent....”

Gold Dragon was stunned: “Oh, could it be you decided to give up? Then offer up your life.”

“No, no, no ... .. I think you must be mistaken.” Du Wei repeatedly shook his head, his eyes full of disdain towards the Gold Dragon: “The way of the humans is to never give up, especially when a chance for survival is in front of them..... Majority wise, we would usually resort to one option.....”

“What?” As expected, Gold Dragon asked out of curiosity.

Du Wei’s face emerged a strange smile. Turning to the thousands of troops atop of the city wall, he takes in a deep breath and began to cry out in the loudest voice he can muster.

Upon hearing the words coming out of Du Wei’s mouth, Hussein felt like an anvil just dropped onto his head. Like a reflex reaction for this prideful knight, he almost wanted to choke Du Wei to death!

The following content was as followed:

“HELP ME!!!!!!!!!! HELP ME HELP ME HELP ME!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!”

“Stop!! You shan’t hurt the Duke!!” A sharp hollering voice came from the distance. Equipped with a set of black armor, this figure wearing a metal mask to cover the upper half of his face was unquestionably Cybuster.



Finally, this person had shown up according to Du Wei's plan.

Pointing his spear at the giant behemoth, the young general shouts: "No matter where you are from oh honorable dragon sir..... You must first answer to my blade before killing the Northwest Army's guest!"

With that, Cybuster shouts his command at the city wall: "General's command, all forces are to protect the Duke!!"

His mouth may be saying this, but inwardly, Cybuster was in great turmoil. The only driving force keeping him going was the absolute trust in his father's decision!

While Du Wei was leisurely smiling, he was suffering from an unimaginable amount of urge of not whistling at this critical moment.

Sure enough ... .. The show was finally about to start.